

**PRESIDENT'S SECRETARIAT**  
**(LIBRARY)**

**Accn. No.....**

The book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below.







INDIA'S SERVICES  
IN  
THE WAR.

---

VOLUME I.

---

GENERAL.

PRINTED BY K. D. SETH,  
AT THE  
NEWUL KISHORE PRESS, LUCKNOW.

---

1922.

# INDIA'S SERVICES IN THE WAR.

---

## VOLUME I.

---

### GENERAL.

---

### TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

|   | PAGE. |
|---|-------|
| Introductory ... ..                       | 1     |
| Expedition to the Persian Gulf ... ..     | 29    |
| India's Aid in supply of munitions ... .. | 34    |
| Supply of Raw Material by India ... ..    | 39    |
| The Delhi Conference ... ..               | 40    |
| India's contribution in money ... ..      | 41    |
| India's supply of men ... ..              | 43    |
| What Indian soldiers accomplished ... ..  | 46    |
| Effects of the War on India ... ..        | 48    |

#### CHAPTER II.

##### THE ROYAL FAMILY.

|                                      |    |
|--------------------------------------|----|
| His Majesty the King-Emperor ... ..  | 51 |
| Her Majesty the Queen-Empress ... .. | 65 |
| The Queen Mother ... ..              | 74 |

#### CHAPTER III.

##### BRITISH STATESMEN AT THE HELM DURING THE WAR.

|                                   |    |
|-----------------------------------|----|
| Mr. H. H. Asquith ... ..          | 91 |
| Mr. Lloyd George ... ..           | 93 |
| Members of the War Cabinet ... .. | 97 |
| Lord Milner ... ..                | 97 |

|                                    | PAGE. |
|------------------------------------|-------|
| Lord Curzon                        | 98    |
| Mr. Bonar Law                      | 99    |
| Mr. Arthur Henderson               | 99    |
| Mr. George Barnes                  | 99    |
| General Smuts                      | 100   |
| Sir Edward Carson                  | 100   |
| The British Cabinet during the War | 101   |

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE ALLIES.

|                     |     |
|---------------------|-----|
| Belgium             | 112 |
| France              | 115 |
| Italy               | 116 |
| Serbia              | 117 |
| Russia and Roumania | 117 |
| Japan               | 118 |
| The United States   | 119 |

## CHAPTER V.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| The King's Appeal to his People  | 120 |
| The King's message to the Princes and Peoples of India   | 121 |
| The King's Touching Message to the Indian Army Corps on the latter's leaving France  | 123 |
| Lord Hardinge's speech   | 124 |
| Lord Sinha and the War...  | 130 |
| Lieutenant-General Sir James Willcock's message to the Indian Army Corps at the Front                                      | 132 |
| India's Loyalty  | 133 |
| Extract from a speech of the Marquis of Crewe, Secretary of State for India, in the House of Lords, on September 9th, 1914 | 135 |
| An Impartial View of Indian Loyalty  | 139 |

## CHAPTER VI.

## THE EMPLOYMENT OF INDIAN TROOPS IN THE WAR.

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Lord Curzon's Tribute ... ..  | 141 |
| Sir Francis Younghusband on the service rendered<br>by Indian Troops ... .. | 143 |
| Speech by Lord Curzon ... ..  | 144 |
| Speech by Lord Crewe ... ..   | 149 |
| Indian Troops' Land in France ... ..  | 149 |
| The King and Wounded Indians ... ..   | 150 |
| The King's Visit to the Seat of War ... ..                                  | 152 |

## CHAPTER VII.

## GALLANTRY OF INDIAN TROOPS.

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| French Praise of British and Indian Troops .. | 153 |
| Lord French's Tribute to Indian Troops ...    | 154 |
| German Praise of Indian Troops ... ..         | 156 |
| Lord Roberts's Appreciation ... ..            | 157 |
| "These Grand Men" ... ..                      | 158 |
| "Seasoned and Disciplined" ... ..             | 158 |
| "A Personal Tribute to Indian Devotion" ...   | 159 |
| "A Historic Testimony" ... ..                 | 159 |

## CHAPTER VIII.

## INDIAN PRINCES AND CHIEFS ON ACTIVE SERVICE.

|                                     |               |
|-------------------------------------|---------------|
| Maharaja Sir Partab Singh ... ..    | 161, 162, 165 |
| Maharaja of Rewa ... ..             | 162           |
| Maharaja of Patiala ... ..          | 165, 166      |
| Maharaja Gaekwar of Baroda ..       | 162           |
| Maharaja of Bikaner ... ..          | 164, 165      |
| Maharaja of Marwar (Jodhpur) ... .. | 164           |
| Maharaja of Ratlam ..               | 164, 165      |
| Maharaja of Idar ... ..             | 164           |

|                                |     |
|--------------------------------|-----|
| Maharaja of Nawanagar ... ..   | 164 |
| Maharaja of Kishengarh ... ..  | 164 |
| Maharaja of Jamkhandi ... ..   | 164 |
| Raja of Akalkot ... ..         | 164 |
| Raja of Bariya ... ..          | 164 |
| Rana of Barwani ... ..         | 164 |
| Nawab of Loharu ... ..         | 164 |
| Chief of Mudhol ... ..         | 164 |
| Thakur Sahib of Rajkot ... ..  | 164 |
| Nawab of Sachin ... ..         | 164 |
| Nawab of Savanur ... ..        | 164 |
| Raja of Vankaner ... ..        | 164 |
| Sar Desai of Savantvadi ... .. | 164 |

## PERIODS OF SERVICE OF—

|                                  |     |
|----------------------------------|-----|
| Maharaja of Bikaner ... ..       | 166 |
| Raja of Ratlam ... ..            | 167 |
| Maharaja Sir Partab Singh ... .. | 167 |
| Maharaja of Marwar ... ..        | 167 |
| Maharaja of Kishengarh ... ..    | 167 |
| Jam of Nawanagar ... ..          | 167 |

## AGES, RELIGION, ETC., OF VARIOUS RULERS.

|                                  |     |
|----------------------------------|-----|
| Maharaja of Marwar ... ..        | 168 |
| Maharaja Sir Partab Singh ... .. | 168 |
| Nawab of Loharu ... ..           | 168 |
| Nawab of Sachin ... ..           | 168 |
| Nawab of Savanur ... ..          | 168 |
| Chief of Jamkhandi ... ..        | 168 |
| Raja of Akalkot ... ..           | 168 |

## INDIAN PRINCES, ETC., ON ACTIVE SERVICE.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| Lieut. Rao Raja Kanwar Sagat Singh ... | 169 |
| Rao Raja Kanwar Hanwat Singh ...       | 169 |
| Sher Singh Maharaj ... ..              | 169 |



|                                       | PAGE. |
|---------------------------------------|-------|
| Lieut. Daji Raj ... ..                | 169   |
| Prince Hitindra of Cooch Behar ... .. | 169   |
| Heir-Apparent of Bhopal ... ..        | 170   |
| Lieut. Sen of Cooch Behar ... ..      | 170   |

#### INDIAN RULERS, ETC., CONSPICUOUS FOR BRAVERY.

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Maharaja of Mysore ... ..               | 170 |
| Maharaja of Panna ... ..                | 170 |
| Rana Jodha Jang Bahadur of Nepal ... .. | 170 |

### CHAPTER IX.

#### EFFECT OF THE WAR ON INDIA.

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| An Indian Renaissance ... ..                  | 173 |
| The "Emden" ... ..                            | 173 |
| "Paradise Regained," lines from ... ..        | 175 |
| Mrs. Sarojini Naidu, lines by ... ..          | 175 |
| Maharaja of Bikaner .. ...                    | 175 |
| Lord Sinha ... ..                             | 175 |
| Mr. Montagu ... ..                            | 175 |
| Wordsworth on British Freedom ... ..          | 177 |
| A Democratic Upheaval ... ..                  | 178 |
| Montagu-Chelmsford Reforms ... ..             | 178 |
| Declaration of 20th August, 1917 ... ..       | 179 |
| Dean Swift's famous saying ... ..             | 180 |
| A new industrial era for India ... ..         | 180 |
| Chemicals and steel goods ... ..              | 180 |
| Tanning-ship building, etc. ... ..            | 181 |
| Indian Industrial Commission ... ..           | 181 |
| Lord Morley's deadening dictum .. ...         | 181 |
| Indian Munitions Board ... ..                 | 181 |
| Effect of the War on the Nation's Mind ... .. | 182 |
| Social service and Red Cross Work ... ..      | 183 |
| Buddhist Monk and Hindu King ... ..           | 183 |

|  | PAGE. |
|--|-------|
| The Indian Defence Force ... ..                | 183   |
| University Platoons and Bengal Light Horse ... | 184   |
| Tennyson's "Day Dream," lines from ...         | 184   |

## CHAPTER X.

## THE CONSTITUTIONAL ERA IN INDIA.

|                                    |     |
|------------------------------------|-----|
| The Dyarchy ... ..                 | 185 |
| Message from Lord Islington ... .. | 185 |

## INDIA'S ECONOMIC PROGRESS.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| Message from Sir William Meyer ... ..                              | 187 |
| Development of Indian Industry ... ..                              | 188 |
| Need of co-operation of all races in India ...                     | 189 |
| Manual Labour not derogatory ... ..                                | 189 |
| Need of Technical Training ... ..                                  | 189 |
| Indians must go to Europe for special study and<br>training ... .. | 189 |
| Good-will and co-operation all-important ...                       | 190 |

# INDIA'S SERVICES IN THE WAR.

## CHAPTER I.

### INTRODUCTORY.

“Is there aught you need that my hands withhold,  
Rich gifts of raiment or grain or gold ?  
Lo! I have flung to the East and West  
Priceless treasures torn from my breast,  
And yielded the sons of my stricken womb  
To the drum-beats of duty, the sabres of doom.  
Gathered like pearls in their alien graves,  
Silent they sleep by the Persian waves ;  
Scattered like shells on Egyptian sands  
They lie with pale brows and brave, broken hands ;  
They are strewn like blossoms mown down by chance  
On the blood-brown meadows of Flanders and France.  
Can ye measure the grief of the tears I weep  
Or compass the woe of the watch I keep ?  
Or the pride that thrills thro’ my heart’s despair  
And the hope that comforts the anguish of prayer ?  
And the far, sad, glorious vision I see  
Of the torn red banners of victory !  
When the terror and tumult of hate shall cease  
And life be refashioned on anvils of peace,  
And your love shall offer memorial thanks  
To the comrades who fought in your dauntless ranks,  
And you honour the deeds of the deathless ones,  
Remember the blood of my martyred sons.”

In this exquisite poem, redolent of poetic aroma, Sreemutty

Sarojini Naidu has described the gifts of India to the British Empire during the war with Germany—into which Great Britain was, by force of circumstances, obliged to enter when she was neither prepared nor willing to wage war. The reasons why Great Britain found it incumbent upon her to take part in the war and the gigantic nature of the undertaking were thus explained by the then Prime Minister of England in the House of Commons when, on 6th August, 1914, he spoke in support of the motion for a vote of credit of £100,000,000: "If I am asked what we are fighting for, I reply in two sentences. In the first place to fulfil a solemn international obligation, an obligation which, if it had been entered into between private persons in the ordinary concerns of life, would have been regarded as an obligation not only of law but of honour, which no self-respecting man could possibly have repudiated. I say, secondly, we are fighting to vindicate the principle which, in these days when force, material force, sometimes seems to be the dominant influence and factor in the development of mankind, we are fighting to vindicate the principle that small nationalities are not to be crushed, in defiance of international good faith, by the arbitrary will of a strong and overmastering Power. I do not believe any nation ever entered into a great controversy—and this is one of the greatest history will ever know—with a clearer conscience and stronger conviction that it is fighting, not for aggression, not for the maintenance of its own selfish interest, but that it is fighting in defence of principles, the maintenance of which is vital to the civilization of the world. With a full conviction, not only of the wisdom and justice of our cause, but of the obligations which lay upon us to challenge this great issue, we are entering into the struggle. Let us now make sure that all the resources, not only of this United Kingdom, but of the vast Empire of which it is the centre, shall be thrown into the scale, and it is that this object may be adequately secured, that I am now about to ask this Committee—to make the very unusual demand upon it—to give to the Government a Vote of Credit of £100,000,000."

But even at that time—when the Prime Minister spoke of throwing into the scale all the resources of the vast British Empire of which India is a part—he could not anticipate the response India would give to this call to arms from England. He referred to that response when less than two months later he spoke in Cardiff on the 2nd October. “In India,” he said, “where, whatever we won by the sword, we hold and we retain by the more splendid title of just and disinterested rule, by the authority, not of a despot, but of a trustee, the response to our common appeal has moved all our feelings to their profoundest depths, and has been such as to shiver and to shatter the vain and ignorant imaginings of our enemies. That is a remarkable and indeed a unique spectacle.”

A remarkable and unique spectacle it undoubtedly appears to be, especially when proper notice is taken of the dark clouds which had been gathering on the political horizon of India. The Kaiser, who was obsessed by the idea that he was an especial and chosen instrument of Heaven to speak to his people and to the world through his people, had counted upon the support of India. Educated India had outgrown the system of Government which had been adopted by the British when they had found the country in chaos and confusion during the protracted period of disruption of a decaying dynasty; but the bureaucracy was opposed to innovations. “South Africa and India were at loggerheads over the question of the British Indians; Lord Hardinge had made a speech in which he championed the cause of the Indians against the harsh action of the unfriendly legislation of another great country in the Empire; Canada and India were waxing warm over a similar controversy; while the Imperial Government was distraught by anxiety, apparently powerless to heal the quarrel.” Political agitation in India was gaining and gathering strength. Germany took note of this. Her agents tried to sow the black seeds of sedition and foment a rebellion perilous in its possibilities and proportions. She had counted upon the help of the Indians and had planned an attack from Mesopotamia, where she was pushing on the Berlin-Bagdad Railway.

After Bagdad had been occupied by the British, the writer of the present paper saw there a German Military Map of Asia on which the proposed route to India was marked. A straight line from Koweit to Karachi indicated the route the Germans had intended to take to India. And when this fact is considered, we can easily understand why the projectors of the Bagdad railway desired to have the terminus at Koweit and not at Basra, situated 67 miles from the sea, on the bank of the Shatt-al-Arab, which is formed by the confluence of the Tigris and the Euphrates near Kurnah and has a mud-bar at the point where it enters the Persian Gulf.

But the projects of the Germans were shattered as much by the loyalty of India to the Empire as by the Indian soldiers in the different theatres of war. The expedition to Mesopotamia was a later phase of the Great War.

When the war broke out the first shots were fired in the West and the first blow was aimed at Belgium. France and England were scarcely prepared to check the rush of German soldiers who thundered at the gates of Belgium and devastated her fair fields and churned towns and villages into the soil, as though some "hundred-headed Gyas" had been mixing and kneading them into a devil's dough. Fortunately for the Empire at that time there was at the helm of affairs in India a statesman who could calculate the forces at war. Lord Hardinge saw from a distance the peril of the Empire and arranged that India should be ready to assist the Empire by giving with an open hand all she had. Her military resources and resources of equipment and stores of all kinds were almost exhausted before even the inception of the idea of a campaign in Mesopotamia. In his statements on the report of the Mesopotamia Commission, made in the House of Lords, Lord Hardinge said that for some weeks before the arrival of the Territorials the British garrison in India had been reduced to a perilous extent in the interests of the Empire. He had taken the risk confidently because he trusted the people of India. He emphasized that from the moment of the outbreak of war it had been the steady policy of the Government of India to give



GENERAL VOLUME.



READY :  
MARTIAL INDIA IN DEFENCE OF RIGHT AND PEACE.  
[p. 5]



readily to the Imperial Government of everything it possessed, both in troops and in war materials. India was *bled absolutely white* during the first weeks of the war, the Government of India's sole pre-occupation being to make every possible sacrifice in order to secure a successful prosecution of the war in France, where the British Expeditionary Force was the hinge of the battle-line and that hinge not sufficiently strong. For, at the outbreak England had some 500,000 men, all told, of whom not half were fully trained. Before this war it had been the custom not to employ coloured soldiers against white men, heathens against Christians. But necessity has no law; and that custom was abandoned. Lord Hardinge said that was a proud day for India and for England when the Indian soldiers landed in France and proceeded to the front, there to cement with their blood a brotherhood in arms with the Allied nations of Europe. And how did they fight in those foreign fields under alien stars and adverse climatic conditions? General Sir James Willecocks, the distinguished soldier who commanded the Indian contingent in 1914-1915, said to an Indian journalist :—

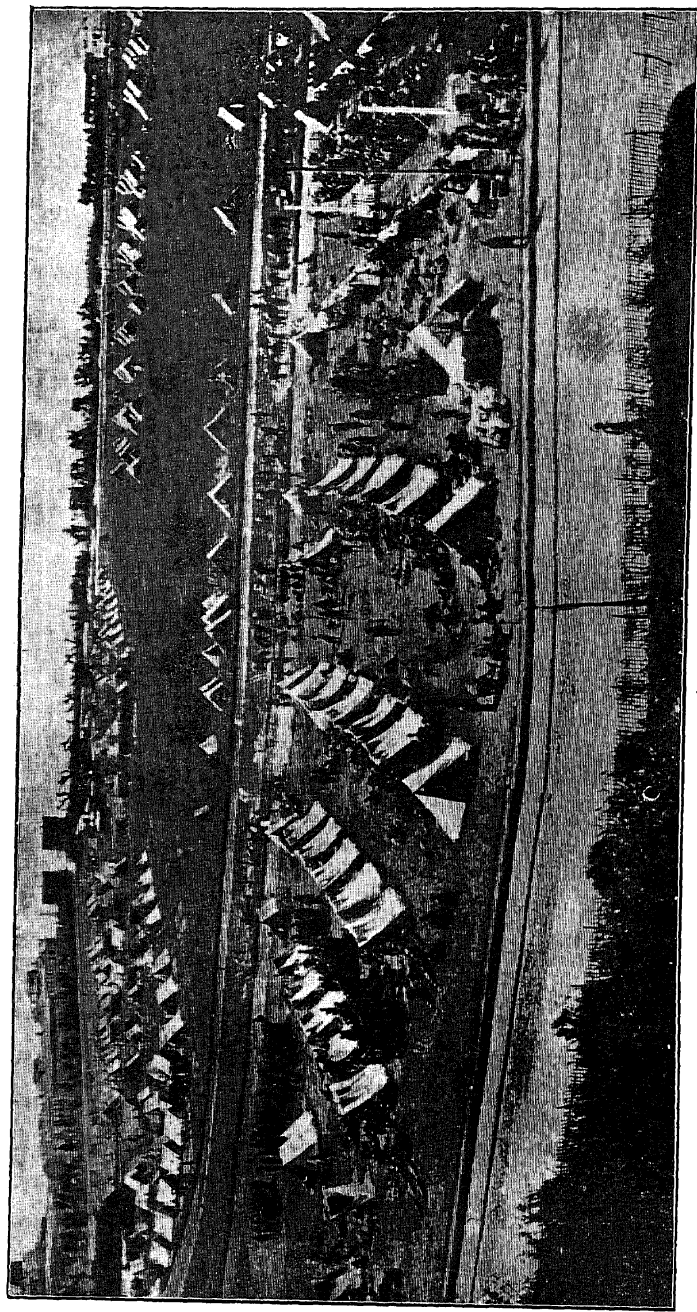
“ It is no exaggeration to say that the divisions from India which I had the honour to lead saved the situation at the time. When we arrived the Germans had been foiled in their attempt to take Paris, but they had not been beaten. The ranks of the French and of the British had been thinned, and they were opposing heavy odds. Every soldier and every gun that India sent to the firing line rendered yeoman service to the Allied cause. I have no hesitation in saying that the safety of Calais is in no small measure due to the effective work done by my men and the arms that they brought with them.”

This enthusiastic tribute paid to the courage and endurance of Indian soldiers has been fully borne out by Major-General Sir Alfred Turner, K.C.B., in his short notice of a record of India's achievements, “ The Indian Corps in France,” by Lieutenant-Colonel G. W. B. Merewether, C.L.E., and the Right Honourable Sir Frederick Smith. After a short account of the Expeditionary Force, of which Lord Ernest Hamilton wrote, “ the first Expeditionary Force is no

more, and of the bronzed, cheery men who sailed in August, 1914, one-third lie under the sod of France and Flanders." Sir Alfred went on to say, "Terribly weakened and shaken as the British force was, it was called upon to do further deeds of heroism side by side with our glorious French Allies against the ever-increasing hordes, whose efforts were now directed to Calais, since they had failed to rush Paris. Reinforcements were unavoidably long in coming to their relief; the Territorial force, the conception and organization of which was due to Lord Haldane and his Army Council, to whom the deepest gratitude of the Empire is due, had to be mobilized, and Lord Kitchener's new army was in embryo. Then came the time when the Indian Force played its heroic part in the salvation of the Empire, and in thwarting the base and treacherous projects of Germany, who has accomplished nothing of that which she set out to gain by going to war. \* \* \*

"The Indian Corps, under the command of that most distinguished soldier, General Sir James Willcocks, consisted of two divisions, the Lahore and the Meerut, under Generals H. B. Watkin and C. A. Anderson, which embarked at Karachi and Bombay, respectively, on August 24th and September 21st, 1914. The first troops landed on September 26th at Marseilles, where everything had been provided and made ready for them by the advanced party under Colonel F. Fraser, which had worked with the greatest skill and energy, were the Lahore Division and the Indian Cavalry Corps. They were greeted with wild enthusiasm by the French people, and remained at Marseilles till September 30th, when they were entrained, and arrived at the place of concentration, Orleans, on October 3rd. Leaving Orleans on October 18th, they arrived at the Front on October 20th and immediately after took their share in the first battle of Ypres, where the Germans time after time attacked in huge masses, with partial and temporary success here and there. The Indians, who lost heavily, especially in officers, vied with their European brothers in gallantry, and caused terrible losses to the foe, showing that man for man they were superior. The Lahore Division further





THE CAMP AT MARSEILLES.

took a substantial part in the bloody battles of Givenchy, Neuve Chapelle, Festubert, and Loos, in all of which it gained fresh laurels, and added to its noble work in the service of the King-Emperor.

"The Meerut Division disembarked at Marseilles on October 11th, and finished its concentration at Orleans on October 22nd, arriving at the Front on October 29th. With it were the Indian Princes, the Maharajas Sir Partab Singh. Jodhpur, Bikaner, some of those distinguished Chiefs who one and all gave proof of their great loyalty to the Empire in the hour of her danger. Germany had, in her arrogance and ignorance, long looked for a wholesale mutiny and rising in India, believing that Great Britain was involved in serious difficulties, and to this end she had long worked with her usual treachery, spending money broadcast in bribery.\* Her pains and her money were expended in vain, for, with the exception of a battalion at Singapore, which was heavily bribed by German agents there and assured that Admiral Von Spec's squadron, afterwards destroyed by Admiral Sturdee in the Falkland Islands, was at hand, and also a large number of transports with German Troops, no Indian Troops proved false to their salt. The Mutiny at Singapore was serious enough, many Europeans were murdered but it was quickly suppressed, most valuable aid being given by the marines and blue jackets from the warships of our gallant Ally Japan, whose services in this war have been invaluable in the Far East and in escorting our Troops, Indian and Colonial, to Marseilles, and in holding the Eastern seas.

"The Meerut Division arrived at the front on October 26th and took over a portion of the line: an attack was made on them by the enemy the same night. The Division took a great part in the battles of Neuve Chapelle, Festubert, and Loos, and everywhere won honour and renown. The number of decorations bestowed on the Corps gives an idea of what their services were. The Victoria Cross was awarded

---

\* In his 'Germany and the next War' Barnhardi expressed the German hope that the Hindu population of Bengal, in which a Nationalist tendency showed itself, might unite with the Mahomedans in India and thus create a grave danger capable of shaking the foundations of England's high position in the world.

to Naik (Corporal) Darwan Singh Negi, to Rifleman Gobar Singh Negi, Sepoy Khudadad Khan, Rifleman Kulbir Thapa, Subedar Mir Dast, and to the British Officers Lieutenants DePass (killed) and J. G. Smyth. A very large number of other decorations, from the Bath to the Order of British India, were worthily bestowed, to give a list of which space fails us; but I have said enough to show the valour of our Indian Troops. The first of them landed on September 30th, 1914, and the last embarked at Marseilles for other theatres of war on December 26th, 1915.

“It was felt that they could not be called upon to go through another terrible winter in France; many had doubted the wisdom of bringing, at the beginning of winter, Oriental Troops into such a climate, under circumstances quite new to them, to undergo such terrible hardships as were inevitable in fighting so far away from home, against the most bloodthirsty, savage, and treacherous soldiers, of the strongest, best prepared, best organized army that the world ever saw”.

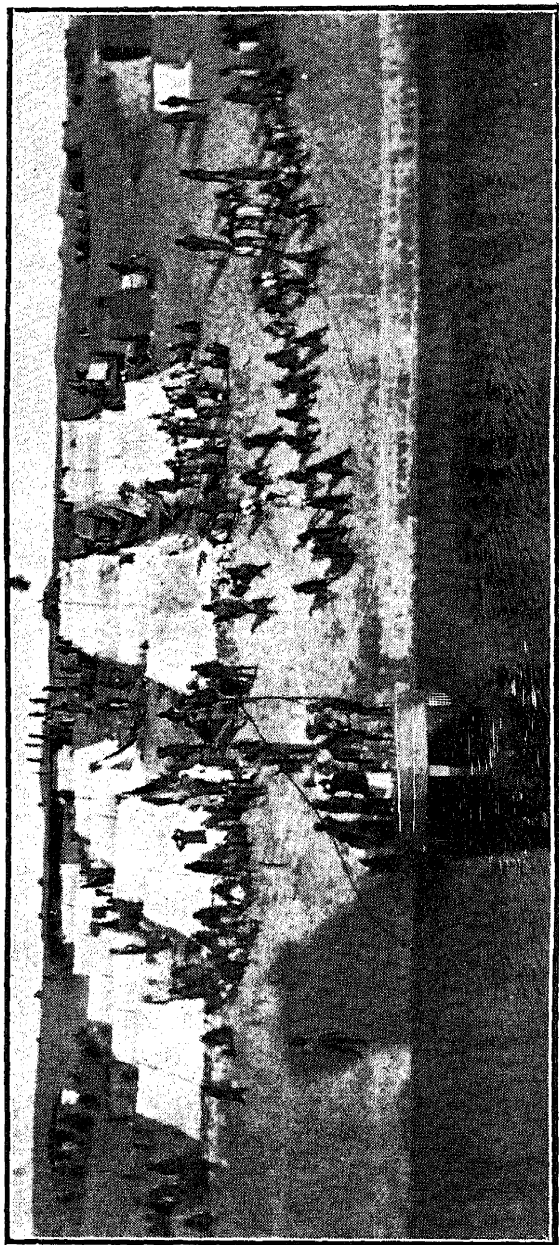
The casualties among the Indian Troops were enormous. The Two Indian Divisions which landed at Marseilles in September and October, 1914, numbered about 24,000 men. The casualties of the Indian units were:—

|                     | <i>Killed.</i> | <i>Wounded.</i> | <i>Missing.</i> | <i>Other deaths.</i> | <i>Total.</i> |
|---------------------|----------------|-----------------|-----------------|----------------------|---------------|
| British Officers... | 150            | 249             | 49              | 3                    | 496           |
| „ other ranks       | 4              | 34              | ...             | 9                    | 47            |
| Indian Officers...  | 103            | 336             | 50              | 6                    | 495           |
| „ other ranks       | 2,345          | 14,221          | 3,148           | 661                  | 20,375        |
| <hr/>               |                |                 |                 |                      |               |
| TOTAL ...           | 2,602          | 14,885          | 3,247           | 679                  | 21,413        |

In reply to a question asked by the late Rai Sita Nath Roy Bahadur in the Legislative Council, His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief said that the number of combatants sent from India to France was 86,332, of whom 4,944 were killed, 16,297 were wounded, 1,127 were reported to be missing and 538 were made prisoners by the Germans. Those who have heard from people in France how the Germans treated their prisoners must shudder to think how terrible



GENERAL VOLUME.



GURKHA AND EGYPTIAN ENCAMPMENTS.



must have been the sufferings of these Indian prisoners in the hands of the Huns.

After referring to the enormous casualties among the Indian troops in France, Major-General Sir Alfred Turner concluded his paper, "How India helped to stem the tide," in the *Asiatic Review*, with the following words, which reveal the feelings of an Englishman towards Indians who had "fought for a King, they had never seen":—

"Such losses have the Indian troops suffered in the service of the King-Emperor and the Empire, for the honour and integrity of that Empire, and for the preservation of those that dwell in these Islands from the horrors of a German invasion. We all know now what that means; we know of the unspeakable crimes of cruelty and bestiality committed in Belgium, France, and wherever their trail can be followed; we know that they have promised that when they invade us the crimes they have committed in other countries will be nothing to what they will perpetrate on our people. Let us ever bear this in mind, and offer our grateful thanks to those who have preserved our people from these brutal Huns, and let us pray that the union of West and East may be firmly and for ever cemented by the blood that both have shed so freely by side by side fighting for a glorious cause."

Want of space precludes the possibility of our quoting at length from official despatches and non-official descriptions to show how the Indian soldiers fought for the Empire in France, in Egypt, at Aden, on the Suez Canal, in the terrible and ill-judged Gallipoli exploit, in East and West Africa, and in Mesopotamia, utterly unprepared in every sense for such a war, the Empire has been saved by the devotion of her sons, coloured as well as white, who with their blood have redeemed the errors, neglect, and blindness of politicians. We have reluctantly to content ourselves with giving a few instances of the work of these men as narrated by the historians of the "Indian Corps in France."

The Indian troops, after their arrival in France, took part in the famous first Battle of Ypres. Both the regiments engaged

possessed previous experience of fighting in parts beyond the confines of the Indian Empire, for the 57th saw service in China in 1900, while the 129th bear on their Colours "Tel-el-Kebir" and "Egypt 1882." During the long-drawn-out and fiercely contested battle of Ypres they fully sustained their own reputation and the honour of the Indian Army.

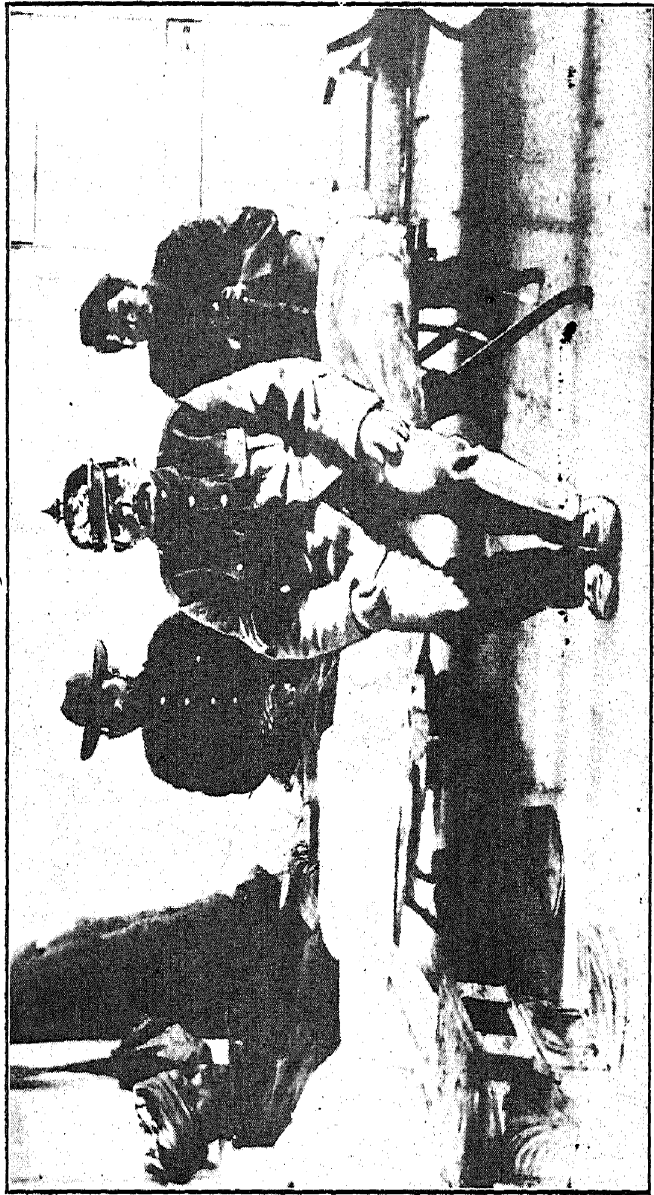
"At the time when the Indians landed, the resistant power of the British Army, cruelly outnumbered, and exhausted by constant fighting against superior artillery and a more numerous equipment of machine guns, was almost overcome. And except the Indian Army there were no other trained regular soldiers in the Empire available at that moment for service."

The temper of the men was strikingly illustrated during the first battle of Ypres. "Sepoy Usman Khan (55th Rifles, attached) was hit by rifle fire but refused to leave; he was again hit, and again declined to give way. Finally a large piece of flesh was blown away from both legs by a shell splinter, and he was carried back. For his grand example he was awarded the Indian Distinguished Service Medal."

Another instance of the mettle of the men is recorded:—

"Lieutenant Molony, Company Officer of No. 2, heard the Germans charging on his right and suddenly saw three distinct masses of the enemy at a distance of about seventy-five yards. They had apparently just taken the trench on his right. Lieutenant Molony had no thought of retreat, and opened rapid fire, which soon put an end to the German cheering, and the enemy began digging himself in. Our trench was to some extent protected by a thick hedge and trees, which made it difficult for the enemy to see exactly where they were shooting. The duel went on for almost two hours, when suddenly a sweeping enfilade fire was opened from the right on the devoted little party by this time very gravely reduced in numbers. Lieutenant Molony got his men out of the trench, and they lay down in the open about 20 yards behind, in prolongation of a cavalry trench keeping up rapid fire as long as the ammunition lasted. At

GENERAL VOLUME.



WOUNDED INDIAN WEARING A GERMAN HELMET. HE IS GOING TO TAKE HIS  
TROPHY HOME. [p. 10]



this moment Lieutenant Molony was badly hit in the arm, but before he became unconscious he ordered Jamadar Ram Singh to hold on, only retiring should the cavalry do so. The wounded officer eventually managed to crawl back to a trench in rear, whence he was taken to an aid post established in a cellar.

"Jamadar Ram Singh was about the only survivor of this party, the remainder being wiped out by the frightful fire which the enemy brought to bear on them as they were lying in the open.

"Jamadar Kapur Singh also fought it out until all but one wounded man had been put out of action, and then, rather than surrender, shot himself with his last cartridge.

"Even this war can present few more devoted pictures than the death of these noble-hearted Dogras and the heroic Indian officer who chose rather to follow his men than to surrender.

"The 57th on this part of the field were now left without a single British Officer.

"Subadar Arsla Khan, the senior Indian officer remaining, seeing that No. 4 Company was being overwhelmed, made a counter-attack with the bayonet in a gallant but vain attempt to succour it. He was, however, quite outnumbered, and was pushed back to the support trench by sheer weight, losing heavily in the process. Recognizing the hopelessness of the position, he succeeded, with the greatest coolness, in retiring the remnant of his men to Messines. His gallantry was recognized by the award of the Order of British India, 2nd Class, with the title of Bahadur.

"While this was going on, a determined attack had been made on No. 3 Company north of Wytschaete, under Captain Forbes, who held on until the enemy's numbers again told, and enabled them to force their way through, Captain Forbes being badly wounded in the shoulder.

"Havildar Ganga was holding a portion of this trench with a few men. When the Germans burst upon him, sanguinary hand-to-hand fighting took place in which most of the 57th were put out of action. The Havildar fought it out and killed five Germans before his

bayonet broke. With a sword which he picked up, he continued the unequal combat until, after receiving six wounds, he collapsed. Happily, when the trench was retaken, he was found still alive and was afterwards rewarded with the 2nd Class Indian Order of Merit."

It was in this first battle of Ypres that Sepoy Khudadad Khan was awarded the Victoria Cross for his very conspicuous bravery, being the first Indian soldier to receive this great honour. The Indians remained in action after Captain Dill who was in command of the machine guns was severely wounded in the head by a shell until they were rushed by the enemy in overpowering numbers and all died fighting to the last, except Sepoy Khudadad Khan, who, although grievously wounded and left by the enemy for dead, managed to crawl away and escaped with his life. Lord Curzon spoke of this award as follows: "When the first V. C. was pinned on to the breast of an Indian soldier, not only was the promise given by the King-Emperor at the Imperial Darbar of 1911 redeemed, but the valour of Hindustan received at last the full recognition of its supreme merit."

It is with reluctance that we pass over the account of the relief of the French Cavalry under General Canneau by the Jullunder Brigade in which, among others, Subadar Sher Singh and Natha Singh ably carried on the defence and the memorable attack of the Indians on Neuve Chapelle. In the latter when Lieutenant Rait-Kerr was hit, Sapper Dalip Singh ran to his officer's assistance and helped him under cover. On one occasion—a feat almost incredible though well established—he was attacked by as many as twenty of the enemy, but beat them off, and got the Lieutenant away.

The Corps took over the line held by the 3rd and 4th British Divisions, and the 2nd Corps—watering with blood and sweat every yard of the fields. The attack on trenches held by the 2nd Battalion, 2nd Gurkhas, revealed the reckless bravery of which the Gurkhas are capable. When Lieutenant Innes, the officer in charge of the machine guns which had been blown up, headed, with Lieutenant Walcott, a counter-attack on the German infantry, a party of ten or

GENERAL VOLUME.



SEPOY KHUDADAD KHAN, V. C., 129  
BALUCHIS.

[p. 12]





twelve men under Naik Rampershad Thapa went with them. "By sheer dint of reckless bravery, this little force drove back the enemy in ferocious tooth-and-nail fighting, but both the British officers were killed, as well as Subadars Tek Bahadur Gurung and Gopal Singh Rawat."

On the 12th November, Lord Roberts arrived at the Corps Head-quarters to inspect these Indians, whom, perhaps, of all troops of the world he loved best. In the closing words of his book he had written, "To the discipline, bravery, and devotion to duty of the Army in India, in peace and war, I felt that I owed whatever success it was my good fortune to achieve." He had spent forty-one years in India, and as the historians of the Corps have truly said :—

"To the Indian troops Lord Roberts stood as the link of sympathy between the exalted General and the humble soldier, as the Captain who carried with him everywhere the shining talisman of success; and, above all, as one who recalled, amid the mud and blood of Flanders the radiant sunshine, the spacious range, the dear and dusty atmosphere and aroma of the country which he loved almost as much as they did."

Lord Roberts made a brief address:—

"I am greatly moved to find myself again with the troops, by whose side I have fought in so many campaigns. Many persons feared that the strange surroundings in which it is now your duty to fight would be too hard and too severe for the Indian troops. I never shared that fear. I have fought with them too often in every kind of climate, and against every kind of enemy, not to be sure that there are no conditions so hard that they will not do their duty as soldiers. How well you are doing it I have heard from your Commanding Officer, General Sir James Willcocks, and the account he has given me has filled me with emotion. You are suffering much, but you are fighting in loyalty to your Empire and King. You are fighting far from your homes. Yet that for which you fight is as important to those whom you have left at home as it is important to those who live in the shattered villages around us.

For if public law and liberty be destroyed in Europe, they can not long survive in India. You will then fight on as long as may be necessary. And it may be long. Do not think that the enemy is already defeated. He is strong: he is still very strong: and his organization is very great. But the Empire and the Allies of the Empire are strong too, and they will become stronger. And they are even now only beginning to organize for war, for they greatly desired peace. Let every man then do his utmost until the enemy is defeated. In this way you will do your duty to the Empire to which you belong, and the glory of your deedswill live for ever in India."

Three days later, within the sound of the great guns, Lord Roberts lay dead. He had visited the Indian Corps on one of the bitterest and coldest days of all the cold and bitter autumn of 1914 and exposure to the cruel east wind was too much for the old man.

In the action of Festubert the Indian Corps were heavily handicapped, but their line was never broken. The position was extremely hazardous. The resources of the Germans in guns, trench mortars, and grenades were vastly superior to anything which the English could oppose to them. For a month past, the Indian Corps, numbering only some 14,000 rifles and 1,700 sabres, with the usual proportion of artillery had been holding the line previously occupied by the 2nd Corps strengthened by an extra Brigade, its total numbers amounting roughly to 32,000 men. Yet, as we have already said, they held their own and the enemy, whose numbers greatly exceeded theirs, failed to break their line. During the night of the 23rd November, the enemy pushed up his sap to within five yards of the trenches of the 34th, and as dawn broke, he commenced a storm of hand grenades from the nearest sapheads. Subadar Natha Singh was near the machine gun, round which bombs fell fast, killing a number of men. "He at once took charge and held his position against the enemy, who had broken in, until he was eventually forced to retire." Havildar Nikka Singh, when all the men of the machine gun team had been killed or wounded, carried the gun by himself under withering fire back to the support trenches.



GENERAL VOLUME.



NAIK DARWAN SINGH NEGI, V. C., 1ST BN. 39TH GARHWAL  
RIFLES. [p. 15]

"Foremost among many heroes was Naik Darwan Singh Negi who, from the beginning to the end, was either the first or among the first, to force his way round each successive traverse, facing a hail of bombs and grenades. Although twice wounded in the head and once in the arm, he refused to give in and continued fighting without even reporting that he was wounded. When the struggle was over and the Company fell in, his Company Commander saw that he was streaming with blood from head to foot. For his most conspicuous valour Naik Darwan Singh was awarded the Victoria Cross, being the second Indian soldier to receive this honour." He was ably seconded by Lance-Naik Sankaru Gusain and Rifleman Ghantu Rawat, who from start to finish were in the first rush at each traverse, and continually climbed into such exposed positions as the top of parapets or traverses in order to get a better chance at the enemy. Rifleman Dhan Singh Negi, although wounded in the face, also fought throughout the action with complete disregard of danger. Havildar Alan Singh Negi led three successive bayonet charges of his Company.

On the 1st December, the Corps had the honour of receiving the King-Emperor, H. R. H. the Prince of Wales was also present. In his message to the troops His Majesty told them that he was extremely pleased with all that he had seen and heard, that they were always in his thoughts and those of the Queen, and that he intended to visit them again.

In the battle of Givenchy the Indians gave a very good account of themselves. Havildar Dost Mohamed took command after Lieutenant Bruce's death, chased the enemy out and held on all day, a large number of dead Germans being eventually found in front of his position. The rifles jammed, and finally the enemy brought up a trench mortar. After a number of his men had been killed, Dost Mohamed ordered the survivors to retire. This they absolutely refused to do, for their Sahib, Lieutenant Bruce, they said, had ordered them to hold out to the end. Faithful to their dead British Officer, "the proudest tribute any man could wish, they fought

on until all but Dost Mohamed and a wounded man had been killed."

After this battle, Sir John French, in his despatch, dated the 2nd February, 1915, summed up his opinion of the work of the Corps during the very trying period in the following words:—

"The Indian troops have fought with the utmost steadfastness and gallantry whenever they have been called upon."

In what is known as the second battle of Ypres, Jamadar Mir Dost earned his V. C., and Captain Banks's orderly, a Sikh named Bhan Singh, showed a devotion to duty and attachment to his officer which should be recorded. He was following his officer, although himself severely wounded in the face early in the action. "On seeing Captain Banks fall, Bhan Singh's one thought was to bring him back, alive or dead. Weak as he was from his wound, he staggered along under an appalling fire, carrying the body, until he fell from exhaustion and was forced to give up the attempt, contriving, however, to bring in the dead officer's accoutrements."

In June the total strength of the Corps, including artillery, amounted to 59,903, a striking contrast to the 15,700, all told, with which it held the front taken over from the 2nd Corps in 1914.

Here it may not be out of place to record the story of Naik Ayub Khan's adventures unique in the history of the war. On the night of the 21st June (1915) Ayub Khan, 129th Baluchis, was ordered to go out with a patrol between the lines. When the patrol returned he was missing; the 22nd passed and on the night of the 23rd, at 11-30 P. M., he stalked the Naik, bringing with him his rifle and ammunition. It appeared that on nearing the German line the Naik, with a sang-froid in the face of concentrated danger which could hardly be surpassed, made up his mind to visit the enemy in his trench and to pick up whatever useful information he could obtain. He concealed his rifle and ammunition and then, taking his life in both hands, boldly

GENERAL VOLUME.



FIELD MARSHAL EARL KITCHENER AND SUBEDAR  
MIR DOST, V. C., 55TH COKE'S RIFLES. [p. 16]





walked up to the wire, where he stood calling out 'Musalman.' German heads appeared over the parapet and for a moment his life hung in the balance. An officer came up, however, and called to him to come in, which he did. At first the occupants of the trench, fearing a ruse, were all for shooting Ayub Khan offhand, but milder counsels prevailed, and he was conducted along the trench to the Bois du Biez, through which he was taken behind the lines and eventually found himself at the headquarters, presumably of the 13th Division, VII Corps, at Marquillies. All this time he was keeping his eyes and ears very wide open, and making mental notes of everything of value.

"At Marquillies he was taken before the General, and was closely interrogated by the staff through the medium of an officer who spoke extremely bad Hindustani, learned doubtless during a tour in India with a view to the future discomfiture of his hosts. This interrogation was a very trying ordeal, for on the nature of his answers the Naik's life hung. He was anxious, of course, not to give any information of value to the enemy, but had at the same time to avoid arousing suspicion. He was asked, amongst other matters, many questions about our troops in this portion of the line and particularly about the 69th and 89th Punjabis which had recently arrived. To unimportant questions he sometimes replied correctly; in other cases, while giving a general appearance of truth to his answers, he nullified their value by supplying incorrect details.

"The Germans talked about the supposed disaffection in India, and impressed on Ayub Khan that it was very wrong of Musalmans to fight against the friends of Turkey, dexterously ignoring the fact that the policy of these friends of Islam has been to undermine the Mahomedan religion in their colonies by every possible means, as has been proved by secret documents captured in Africa. Ayub Khan was asked whether there was not considerable disaffection in his regiment, and whether a large number of men were willing to desert as he had done. To these questions he returned a vigorous affirmative, and offered to bring back with him at least 20

men. This offer was greedily accepted, and he was promised 400 marks (Rs. 300) if he brought over 20 men, *i.e.*, at the rate of 20 marks per man.

“ He remained at the headquarters throughout the 22nd, and was well fed and looked after, evidently with a view to impressing on him the kindly nature of the Germans. Many men came to see him and he kept a careful note in his mind of the numbers on shoulder-straps, the various uniforms, etc., details which were subsequently fully confirmed by the statements of prisoners and deserters and were of considerable value to our Intelligence Branch.

“ On the night of the 23rd he was taken by a Staff Officer and the interpreter in a motor-car to the Bois du Biez and thence through the trenches to the spot at which he had entered them. There he bade an affectionate farewell, and with one eye over his shoulder in case the Germans might at the last moment change their minds and put a bullet through the departing guest, he returned to our trench, retrieving on the way his rifle and ammunition.

“ Naik Ayub Khan was able to describe the paths through the Bois du Biez, and to give a good idea of the strength and the units by which the enemy's line was held. Further, he was able to report that there was no installation of asphyxiating gas in the trenches through which he had passed, a detail of no small importance to us at the time.”

His story was surely an extraordinary one, but any lingering doubt of its veracity was removed by corroborative evidence obtained from other sources.

In the Battle of Loos the Gurkhas showed exceptional courage and disregard of danger. The 2/3rd Gurkhas suffered heavy losses. Thirty-five dead Gurkhas were found lying on the front of the German parapet and it was believed that a small party of men fought their way into the trench, where, as far as is known, they were, with one exception, killed. The exception noted above was Rifleman Kulbir Thapa. He performed deeds which could hardly be surpassed for sheer bravery and self-sacrifice. Kulbir succeeded, after being

GENERAL VOLUME.



RIFLEMAN KULBIR THAPA, V. C., 2ND BN. 3RD GURKHA  
RIFLES. [p. 18]



wounded, in penetrating the wire and charged straight through the German trench. In the rear of it he found a badly injured British soldier who begged him to leave him and save himself. The Gurkha refused to do so, and remained by the side of the wounded man throughout the day and the following night. Luckily there was a heavy mist on the morning of the 26th September, of which Kulbir took advantage to bring the man out through the German wire. He succeeded, after hairbreadth escapes, in doing this and put the wounded man in a shell-hole. Not content with this he returned, and rescued one after the other, two Gurkhas. Then going back again he brought in the wounded British soldier in broad daylight, carrying him most of the way under fire. For these acts of valour Rifleman Kulbir Thapa received the Victoria Cross, and seldom if ever, had this supreme reward been more splendidly won.

At the commencement of October, 1915, the Indian Corps front extended for a distance of 10,825 yards. On the 31st October information was received that the Indian Corps would be required to embark at Marseilles in the near future. By the nightfall of the 10th November the Indians had been completely relieved from the line. They had maintained the honour and reputation of the Indian Army throughout long months of strenuous fighting under trying conditions.

On the 22nd November the following special order of the day was issued by Field-Marshal Sir John French :—

“ On the departure of the Indian Corps from my command, under which you have fought for more than a year, I wish to send a message of thanks to all officers, non-commissioned officers, and men for the work you have done for the Empire. From the time you reached France you were constantly engaged with the enemy until the end of last year. After a few weeks' rest you returned to the trenches, and since then you have continually held some portion of the front line, taking part in the important and successful engagements of Neuve Chapelle and of Richebourg, and in the heavy fighting at the end of September. The Lahore Division was also

engaged in the severe actions near Ypres in April and May. That your work has been hard is proved by the number of your casualties. The British troops of the Corps have borne themselves in a manner worthy of the best traditions of the army.

"The Indian Corps have also shown most praiseworthy courage under novel and trying conditions, both of climate and of fighting, and have not only upheld, but added to, the good name of the army which they represent. This is all the more praiseworthy in view of the heavy losses amongst British Officers having deprived the Indian ranks of many trusted leaders whom they knew well and of the fact that the drafts necessary to maintain your strength have frequently had to be drawn from regiments quite unconnected with the units they were sent to reinforce. You have done your work here well, and are now being sent to another place where an unscrupulous enemy has stirred up strife against the King-Emperor. I send you all my good wishes for success in the part you will now be called on to play in this Great War. I thank you for the services you have rendered while under my command, and trust that the united efforts of the Allies may soon bring the enemy to his knees and restore peace to the world."

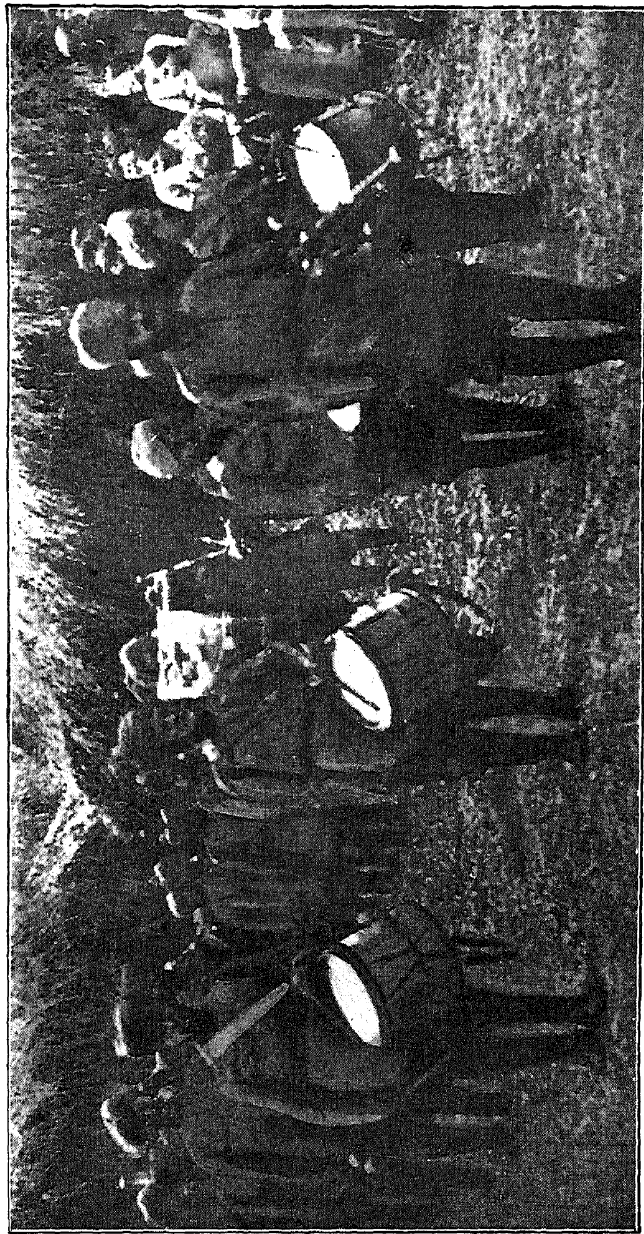
On the 25th November a parade of representatives of the Indian Corps was held at Chateau Mazinghem, at which the following message of His Majesty the King-Emperor to the troops of the Indian Army Corps in France was read by the Prince of Wales :—

"Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers, and men of the Indian Army Corps. .

"More than a year ago I summoned you from India to fight for the safety of my Empire and the honour of my pledged word on the battlefields of Belgium and France. The confidence which I then expressed in your sense of duty, your courage and your chivalry, you have since then nobly justified.

"I now require your services in another field of action, but before you leave France I send my dear and gallant son, the Prince of Wales, who has shared with my armies the dangers and hardships

GENERAL VOLUME.



PLAYING THE MARSEILLAISE TO A FRENCH AUDIENCE ON A FARM AT THE FRONT. [p. 20]





of the campaign, to thank you in my name for your services and to express to you my satisfaction.

"British and Indian comrades-in-arms, yours has been a fellowship in toils and hardships, in courage and endurance, often against great odds, in deeds nobly done and days of memorable conflict. In a warfare waged under new conditions and in particularly trying circumstances, you have worthily upheld the honour of the Empire and the great traditions of my Army in India.

"I have followed your fortunes with the deepest interest and watched your gallant actions with pride and satisfaction. I mourn with you the loss of my gallant officers and men. Let it be your consolation, as it was their pride, that they freely gave their lives in a just cause for the honour of their Sovereign and the safety of my Empire. They died as gallant soldiers, and I shall ever hold their sacrifice in grateful remembrance. You leave France with a just pride in honourable deeds already achieved and with my assured confidence that your proved valour and experience will contribute to further victories in the new fields of action to which you go.

"I pray God to bless and guard you, and to bring you back safely, when the final victory is won, each to his own home—there to be welcomed with honour among his own people."

With these words of appreciation from the King-Emperor, the Indian Corps left France, where they had been among the prominent figures of a great design—woven into the terrible tapestry of war—and where they had consummated a sacrifice that history will be proud to record. And yet, as Sir James Willcocks has declared, on several occasions they were not given any share of the credit earned for hard fought actions.

About twenty-four thousand men formed the two divisions which landed at Marseilles. In less than a year more than thirty thousand drafts were sent from India to replace casualties. In other words, "in about eight months six thousand more troops were despatched for the single purpose of replacing the killed, the wounded, and the sick, than the force contained when it landed." "And the

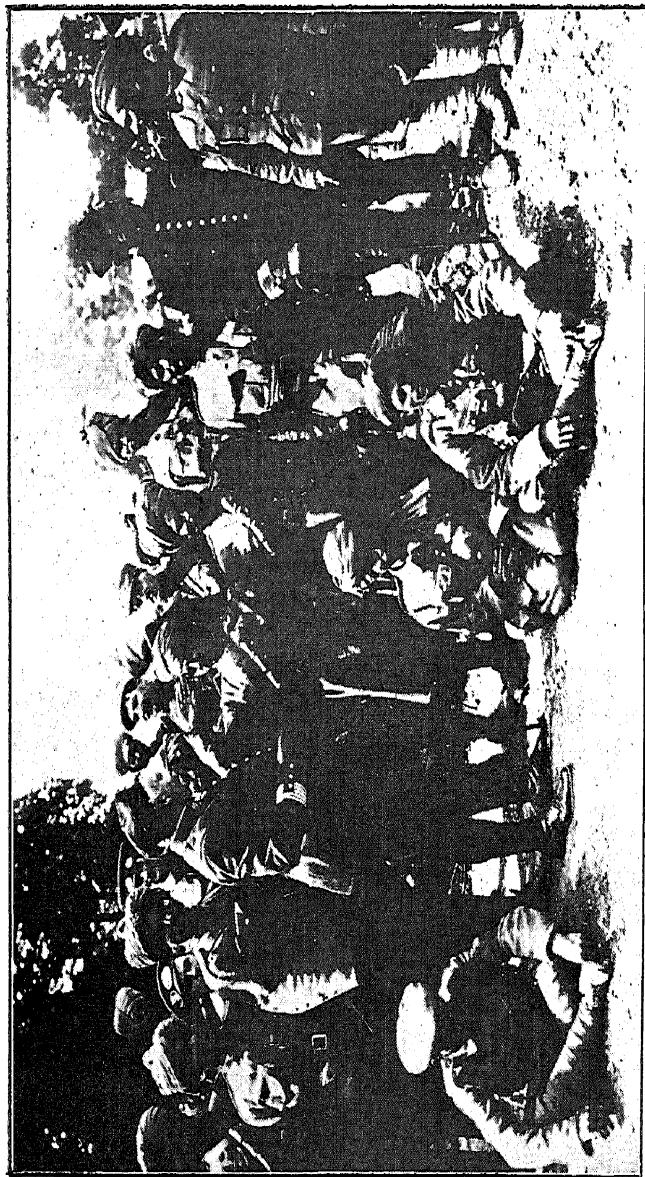
corps, the original personnel of which had been so completely wiped out, was afterwards sent to Mesopotamia, where it added, if possible, to its glory, and made further and bitter sacrifices in health and life." In France they were destined to a fate as devastating as that which overtook the first British Expeditionary Force. And the historians of the Corps in France confidently express the belief that "every future military historian will do justice to the sufferings and to the stamina of those who took part in the Great Flanders Campaign."

We cannot do better than conclude the description of the deeds of the Indian corps in France with the words of Lord Curzon:—

"That the Indian Expeditionary Force arrived in the nick of time, that it helped to save the cause, both of the Allies and of civilization, after the sanguinary tumult of the opening weeks of the war, has been openly acknowledged by the highest in the land, from the Sovereign downwards. I recall that it was emphatically stated to me by Lord French himself. The nature and value of that service can never be forgotten.

"Neither should we forget the conditions under which these Indian soldiers served. They came to a country where the climate, the language, the people, the customs, were entirely different from any of which they had knowledge. They were presently faced with the sharp severity of a Northern winter. They, who had never suffered heavy shell-fire, who had no experience of high explosives, who had never seen warfare in the air, who were totally ignorant of modern trench fighting, were exposed to all the latest and most scientific developments of the art of destruction. They were confronted with the most powerful and pitiless military machine that the world has ever seen. They were consoled by none of the amenities or alleviations, or even the associations of home. They were not fighting for their own country or people. They were not even engaged in a quarrel of their own making. They were plunged in surroundings which must have been intensely depressing to the spirit of man. Almost from the start they suffered shattering losses.

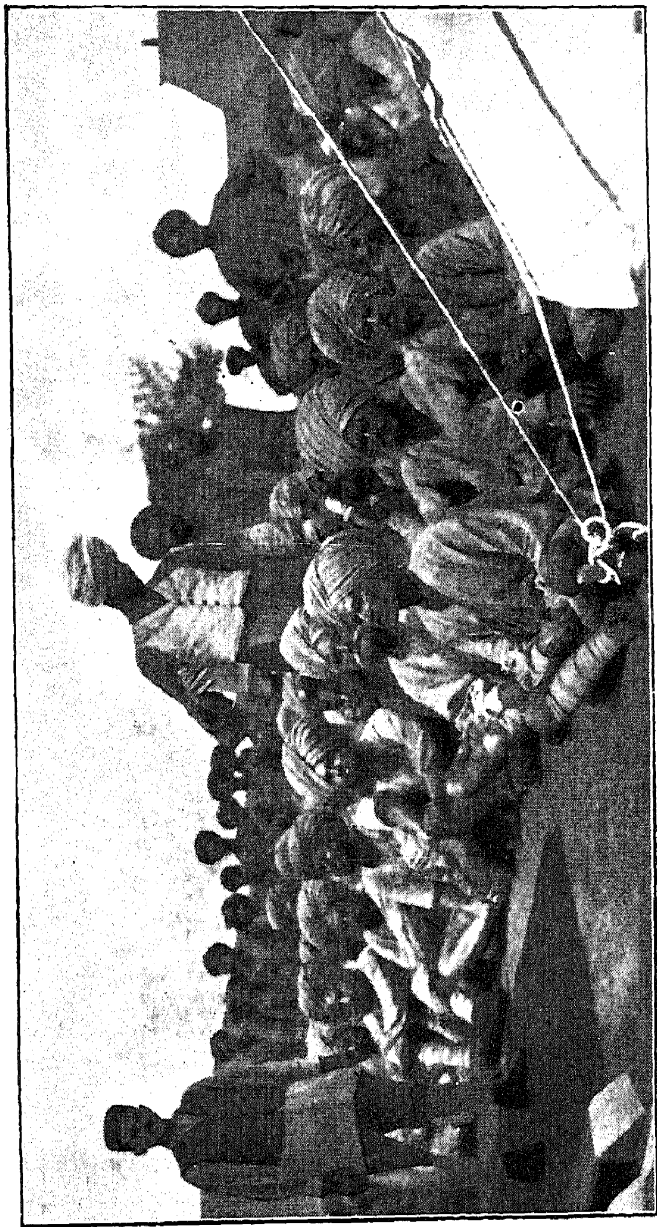
GENERAL VOLUME.



INDIAN TROOPERS TALKING TO FRENCH OFFICERS "SOMEWHERE IN FRANCE."



GENERAL VOLUME.



INDIAN SOLDIERS IN EAST AFRICA.



"In the face of these trials and difficulties, the cheerfulness, the loyalty, the good discipline, the intrepid courage of these denizens of another clime, cannot be too highly praised. If disappointment, and even failure, sometimes attended their efforts, their accomplishment was nevertheless solid and striking. The writer was at Neuve Chapelle just after that historic combat. No record in it excelled that of the Indian troops."

Doubts were expressed as to the judiciousness of the decision to employ Indian soldiers in France—in the midst of strange surroundings and in a war which could not make a strong moral appeal to their patriotism. But how they dispelled those doubts we have already seen.

Indian troops have fought with heroic endurance in France, in Egypt, at Aden, on the Suez Canal, in Gallipoli, in East Africa, in West Africa, and in Mesopotamia. "They were the first of the overseas troops to man with untried qualities the sodden trenches of Flanders. They furnished the first bulwork of British East Africa. They flung back the first Turkish attack on the Suez Canal." The army in Mesopotamia was in the main an Indian Army.

We give below a statement supplied in 1919 showing the number of Indian combatants sent from India to the various theatres of war and the casualties amongst Indian combatants:—

| NUMBERS DESPATCHED.  |         |        | CASUALTIES. |         |          |            |                           |
|----------------------|---------|--------|-------------|---------|----------|------------|---------------------------|
|                      |         |        | Deaths.     | Wounded | Missing. | Prisoners. | Presumed to be prisoners. |
| France ..            | 86,382  | 4,944  | 16,297      | 1,127   | 538      |            |                           |
| Mesopotamia ..       | 302,199 | 15,652 | 31,187      | 1,444   | 5,512    |            | 1,223                     |
| Egypt ..             | 104,419 | 3,513  | 8,001       | 501     | 28       |            |                           |
| East Africa ..       | 34,511  | 2,460  | 1,986       | 43      | 21       |            |                           |
| Persian Gulf ..      | 24,451  | 368    | 210         | 3       | 28       |            |                           |
| Gallipoli & Salonika | 9,717   | 1,618  | 3,669       | 101     | 3        |            |                           |
| Aden ..              | 17,573  | 455    | 566         | 22      | 16       |            |                           |
| TOTAL ...            | 579,252 | 29,010 | 61,916      | 3,241   | 6,146    |            | 1,223                     |

The number of non-combatants sent from India to the various theatres of war is as follows:—

|                        |     |     |         |
|------------------------|-----|-----|---------|
| France                 | ... | ..  | 48,537  |
| Mesopotamia            |     | ... | 336,890 |
| Egypt                  | ... | ... | 25,512  |
| East Africa            |     | ... | 12,609  |
| Persian Gulf           | ... | ... | 25,301  |
| Gallipoli and Salonika | ..  | ... | 6,416   |
| Aden                   | ... | ..  | 5,050   |
| <hr/>                  |     |     |         |
| TOTAL                  | ... | ... | 460,315 |

We have no statement showing the casualties among these 460,315 non-combatants who left India for the different theatres of war, many of them never to return

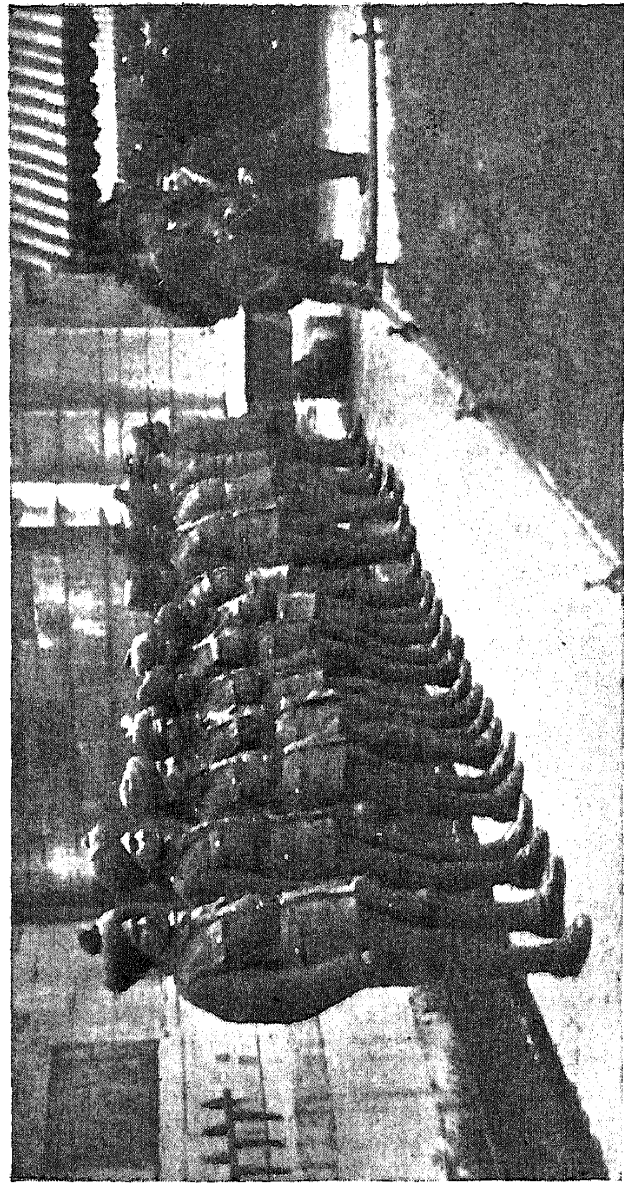
Dazzled by the glow of the glorious services of the soldiers from India, we should not overlook the humble but useful work done by the non-combatants from India in France. A question asked in the Indian Legislative Council elicited the information that no less than 48,537 non-combatants were sent from India to France. The Indian soldiers left the fateful fields of France in November, 1915, but many of these non-combatants remained behind and the present writer met some Indian team drivers in November, 1918, marching on to the firing line beyond Cambrai.

#### CAMPAIGN IN MESOPOTAMIA.

From the fields of France we turn to the deserts of Mesopotamia where the Army was in the main an Indian Army. And here, before we proceed to describe the achievements of the Indian Army in Mesopotamia, we should remember that this Army included a large proportion of Mahomedans who had to fight against a Moslem Power. To appreciate properly the difficulty of their position we must remember, says Sir Verney Lovett in his "History of the Indian Nationalist Movement"—"What religion is to the ordinary Indian Muslim, the depth of their innate fanaticism, and regard in which, at



GENERAL VOLUME.



INDIAN LABOUR CORPS MEN AT ST. MARGARETS.



times encouraged by us, they have been accustomed to hold the Sultan of Turkey," against whom they were ordered to fight. Islam is a power, and Baghdad the city of the great Caliphs, from whom the Ottoman claims descent, is still a name round which the glorious traditions of Islam tenderly entwine themselves. Yet the Mahomedans of India were called upon to fight against the Empire of Islam ruled over by their religious head and to conquer the city of the Caliphs. True, immediately after the entry of Turkey into the war a declaration was made that the Holy Places of Arabia and the sacred shrines of Mesopotamia would be immune from attack by Britain and her Allies so long as Indian pilgrims remained unmolested, but it must have been cold comfort to Moslem soldiers to know this. The Germans and the Turks attempted to utilize this feeling, but failed.

Captain Reynardson in his 'Mesopotamia' refers to the difficult position in which the Mahomedan troops from India found themselves when sent to fight the Turk. Says the Captain: "To estimate the effect these considerations had upon the Indian Mahomedan troops is a difficult and intricate problem, with many cross-currents to consider—religion and sect, race and loyalty. At least their position must have been made very difficult and their loyalty hardly tried: certainly they cannot have been encouraged by the prospect of the task in front of them. Islam commands a very real feeling of religious fervour in the East.

\*            \*            \*            \*

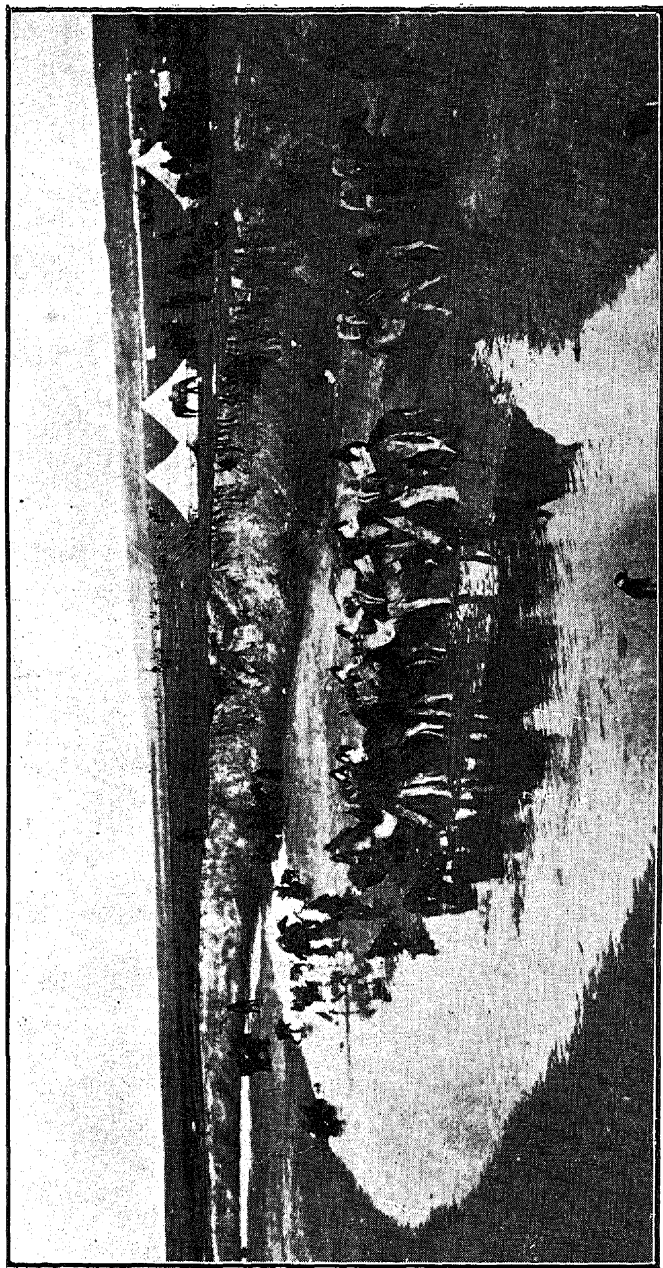
And yet, all honour to these men, there were wonderfully few 'conscientious objectors' among them."

Candler sums up the whole position thus: "The most unfruitful branch of the Hun's propaganda was the department which aimed at the seduction of the Indian Sepoy. With the one exception of the trans-frontier Pathan, who is not a subject of the King, his missionary efforts met with poor response. The notorious Wassmuss travelled with bales of inflammatory leaflets, exhausting the eloquence of five languages in his appeal to the Indian Army to rise and kill their British Officers."

The Mesopotamian Expeditionary Force left India on October

16th and 18th, 1914. On the morning of November 6th the first transports of the Force crossed the mudbar at the mouth of Shat-el-Arab and a naval and military party landed and occupied Fao fort and town. On November 21st the English Army reached Basra. The Turks, headed by the Wali or Governor of Basra, had left, and the place was given over to loot. The Turk is a tough fighter and, as the late General Maude told the writer of the present paper at Baghdad, a clean fighter too. But the Arab is not so, and the Turk lacked organization. So the march from Fao to Baghdad and Sumara was a victorious march save for a reverse which resulted in the fall of Kut and the surrender of General Townsend, who afterwards was entrusted by the Turks to carry their unconditional surrender to the Admiral of the British fleet at Mudros. The expedition was undertaken in a state of unpreparedness—in a country devoid of the necessities of life—and consequently the sufferings of the Army were indescribable. In summer the record temperature in the shade under board and thatch was 125 degrees, which meant 130 degrees in the tents. "In heat like this there was nothing to do but to lie down and pant and pour water over one's head. A sun-helmet, of course, was necessary under canvas, and it was often the only article of clothing one retained." The dust of the desert combined with the sand-flies to make life intolerable and the privations were trying. As Lord Chelmsford has said: "The forces in Mesopotamia were fighting in a country utterly deficient of the ordinary requirements of a modern army; there were no roads, railways or mechanical transport facilities on the rivers. The country over which the troops had to move was devoid of timber, of fuel and even of ordinary stone; everything, even firewood for cooking and fodder for the horses, had consequently to be imported." The expedition had been undertaken without due precautions, and the result was that, after the Battle of Ctesiphon on the 22nd November, 1915, in which Major-General Townsend captured 1,300 prisoners, he suffered heavy casualties in attacking superior forces very strongly entrenched and was compelled to fall back on Kut-el-Amara. On the 7th December, Kut was invested by the Turks,





TURKS WATERING THEIR CAMELS.

On January 26th, 1916, Townsend issued an address to the garrison:—

“The relieving force under General Aylmer has been unsuccessful in its efforts to dislodge the Turks entrenched on the left bank of the river some fourteen miles below the position at Sinn, where we defeated them in September last.

“Our relieving force suffered severe loss and had very bad weather to contend against; they were entrenched close by the Turkish position. More reinforcements are on their way up-river, and I confidently expect to be relieved some day during the first half of the month of February.”

Then he explained why he had decided to make a stand at Kut and went on to say: “I have ample food for eighty-four days, and that is not counting the 3,000 animals which can be eaten. When I defended Chitral some twenty years ago, we lived well on *atta* and horse-flesh; but, as I repeat, I expect confidently to be relieved in the first half of the month of February\* \* \*

“I have done my duty. You know the result, and whether I was right or not, and your name will go down to history as the heroes of Ctesiphon, for heroes you proved yourselves in the battle. I, perhaps, by right, should not have told you of the above; but I feel I owe it to you all to speak straight and openly and to take you into my confidence.\* \* \*

“These words are long, I am afraid, but I speak straight from the heart, and you will see that I have thrown all officialdom overboard. We will succeed, mark my words, but save your ammunition as if it were gold.”

But this time the stench in Kut was becoming intolerable, and before February 6th scurvy had set in. “The real privations of the garrison began in the middle of February, especially in hospital. When the milk gave out (February 17th) the patients’ diet was confined to cornflour or rice water for the sick, and ordinary rations for the wounded. The dysenteric or enteric convalescent was put straight on to a diet of mule. On February 5th British soldiers were receiving a 12 oz. loaf of mixed barley, *attu*, and wheat flour,

1 lb. of horse-meat, a few groceries, and a small supply of dates. Indian rations were 1 lb. of flour, half-rations of tea, turmeric, chillies, ginger, etc., and a small supply of dates." The scurvy trouble among the Indians became more and more aggravated. As many as 1,050 cases were admitted to hospital during the siege, besides those treated regimentally. On the 8th March the British attacked the Dujailah redoubt but were driven back. On the 10th Major-General Townsend issued another *communiqué*, in which he said: "I am determined to hold out, and I know you are with me heart and soul."

On March 31st rations were further reduced. On April 16th "*small opium pills were distributed among the sepoy by the medical staff to stay the pangs of hunger.*" On April 28th—the day before General Townsend, after a siege of 143 days, was compelled by starvation to surrender to the Turks—the General issued yet another *communiqué* in which he said: "We have done our duty to King and Empire; the whole world knows that we have done our duty."

To give the readers some idea of the condition of the troops when they had, at last, to surrender, we quote the following from Candler's "Long Road to Baghdad":—

"During the last week of the siege the daily death rate averaged eight British and twenty-one Indians. The troops were so exhausted that the regiments who were holding the front lines remained there a fortnight without being relieved. They were too weak to dig. Men on sentry-go would drop at their posts. Colonel Hehir, the senior Medical Officer, has recorded cases of Indians returning from the trenches in the evening, seemingly with nothing the matter, who lay down and were found dead in the morning, dead of exhaustion; they simply had not strength for the effort of life. He doubted whether the strongest man in the garrison was equal to a five-mile march carrying his equipment.\* \* \* On the day of surrender the men in the trenches were too weak to carry back their kit."

After surrender came captivity with all its hardships and humiliations. When the Armistice was concluded it was found





GENERAL VOLUME.



THE 1914-15 STAR.

that of 10,486 Indians, combatants and followers, 1,290 had died and 1,773 remained untraced. The road to Baghdad was long indeed.

A statement supplied by the Government of India in 1919 showed that up to the end of 1918, the number of combatants sent from India to Mesopotamia was 302,199, and 15,652 of them had died, 31,187 had been wounded and 5,512 had been made prisoners. The number of non-combatants from India to Mesopotamia was 336,890.

Those who had been to Mesopotamia during the war felt as if they were in some cosmopolitan Indian town, for every Province had contributed her quota of men. The camps of Basra, the hospitals at Amara, the depôts of Baghdad were full of Indians and Mesopotamia was conquered for the British largely by Indians.

---

#### EXPEDITION TO THE PERSIAN GULF.

To the Persian Gulf had been sent 24,451 combatants and 25,301 non-combatants from India.

On 4th August, 1915, the Government of India published particulars of the brave deeds of Indian soldiers in the Persian Gulf for which admission was gazetted to the Military Division of the Indian Order of Merit. The list contained the names of Jamadar Sidhar Singh (7th Hariana Lancers), No. 318 Sepoy Yarak 24th Punjabis), No. 1498 Lance-Naik Sakaram More (110th Mahratta Light Infantry), No. 2050 Private Hari Sawant (110th Mahratta Light Infantry), No. 2437 Private Jairam Delbi (117th Mahrattas), No. 2474 Private Vithu Kadam (117th Mahrattas), No. 3887 Naik Natha Singh (119th Infantry, The Mooltan Regiment), No. 3639 Havildar Ima Rawat (119th Infantry, The Mooltan Regiment), No. 3846 Private Ramlal Singh (119th Infantry, The Mooltan Regiment), No. 873 Colour Havildar Ganesh Ram (120th Rajputana Infantry), No. 1712 Sepoy Lochman Singh and No. 1531 Sepoy Kenu Singh (120th Rajputana Infantry), No. 30 Havildar Latif (23rd Peshawar Mountain Battery), No. 4943 Lance-Naik Lal Singh (24th Punjabis), Jamadar Ramswami Naidu (No. 22 Company, 3rd Sappers and Miners), Jamadar Muhammad Din (No. 17 Company, 3rd Sappers and Miners), No. 190 Lance-Naik

Allah Dad, No. 722 Driver Rhoda, No. 796 Driver Suchet, No. 632 Driver Kwaja, No. 176 Lance-Naik Sher Bag (1st Mule Corps). This list shows that from the highest to the humblest all Indian soldiers fought the battles of the Empire with conspicuous bravery.

The present writer has been to several theatres of war, and he remembers with pride the accounts of the bravery of Indians, both combatants and non-combatants, he heard from European Officers at Basra, at Baghdad, at Cairo, at Port Said, in England, in France, and in Belgium.

Needless to say that the end of the war could not mean the end of the employment of Indian soldiers outside India. Here are some figures tabulated from a reply given in the House of Commons by Mr. Churchill in October, 1920, with reference to the strength of British and Indian troops (and the approximate monthly cost) in Mesopotamia and other areas:—

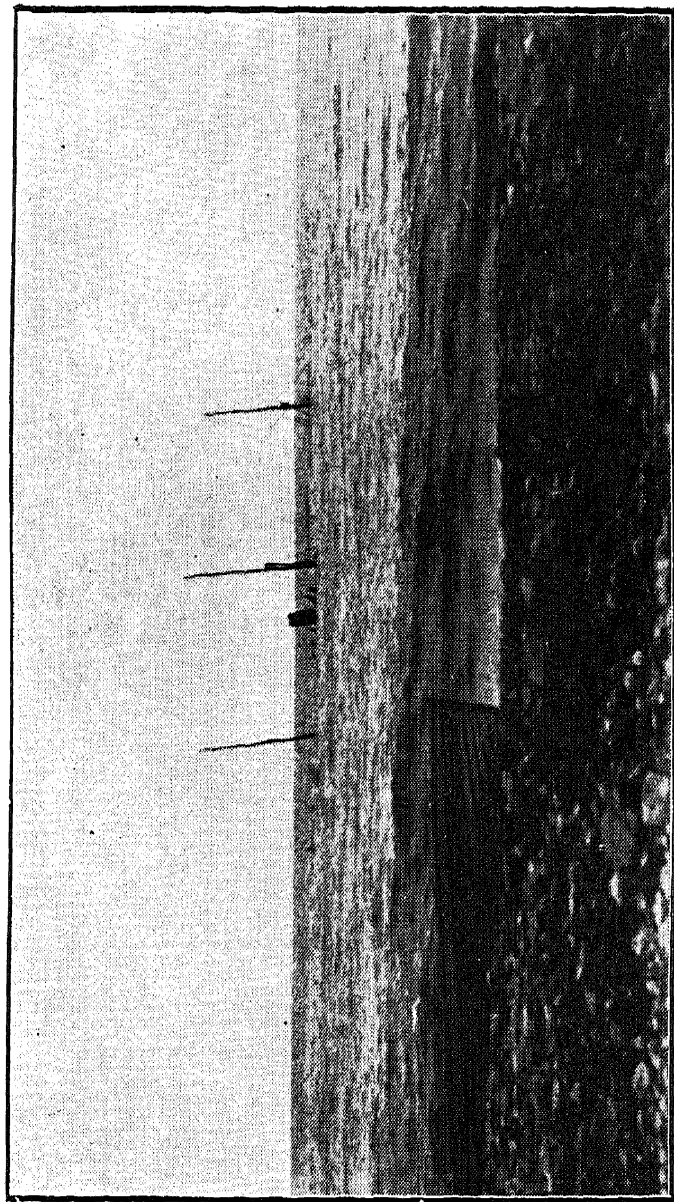
| <i>Areas.</i>              | <i>British<br/>Troops.</i> | <i>Indian<br/>Troops.</i> | <i>Total monthly<br/>Cost.</i> |
|----------------------------|----------------------------|---------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Mesopotamia and North-West |                            |                           |                                |
| Persia ... ..              | 17,500                     | 83,500                    | £ 2,500,000                    |
| Constantinople ... ..      | 11,000                     | 8,000                     | „ 495,000                      |
| Egypt ... ..               | 12,000                     | 14,000                    | „ 625,000                      |
| Palestine ... ..           | 6,500                      | 18,000                    | „ 510,000                      |
|                            | <hr/>                      | <hr/>                     | <hr/>                          |
| TOTAL ... ..               | 47,000                     | 123,500                   | £ 4,130,000                    |

In 1919 Lord Chelmsford summed up India's contributions to the war as follows:—

“There are certain points connected with India's war effort which I feel it right to touch on. Taking the material side first, I think it is still not fully appreciated how effectively India contributed to meet war requirements. To form a correct estimate, it is necessary to picture the especial difficulties which arose, particularly during the later phases of the great conflict. The forces in Mesopotamia, for which we were largely responsible, were fighting in a country utterly



GENERAL VOLUME.



AFTER THE U BOATS' VISIT TO MADEIRA.

deficient of the ordinary requirements of a modern army; there were no roads, railways or transport facilities on the rivers. The country over which the troops had to move was devoid of timber, of fuel or even of ordinary stone; everything, even firewood for cooking and fodder for the horses, had consequently to be imported.

“While endeavouring to meet the wants of the armies in the field, our supplying officers in India were daily confronted with the competing wants of the civil population in India, and at the same time we had to restrict to the barest necessities the import into India of manufactured goods, in order to free the energies of war workers in Allied countries. The maintenance of this delicate balance between conflicting demands imposed a heavy burden of great complexity on the responsible departments of Government.

“The necessity of supplying the coal required by transports east of Suez introduced an additional complication, by leaving us with insufficient fuel to meet the requirements of essential industries and transport within India itself. The general shortage of sea freight introduced further difficulties.

“The depletion of our supplies of manufactured goods, partly through unusual military consumption and partly by the cutting off of imports, to which I have already alluded, was naturally attended by disturbances of prices and withholding of stocks which made it difficult to obtain at short notice the necessary equipment and stores for the army.

“The complex and rapidly changing conditions that followed the depredations of enemy submarines, especially during the last two years of the war, in these ways thrust a burden on India that cannot be appreciated fully in those countries where all ordinary munitions of war can be manufactured in the country itself. Habits and administrative methods which had rested on a basis of uninterrupted import had rapidly to be recast; the manufacture of substitutes had to be devised without the usual facilities of suitable machinery; iron, steel, coke, and various other necessities had to be rationed, expert labour trained, and undeveloped resources turned to account.

"The lessons learnt and the new industries inaugurated must now be developed and converted into permanent acquisitions. To this question Government is devoting its earnest attention.

"Whilst making especial endeavours to be herself less dependent on outside sources of supply, India has contributed raw materials and food-stuffs to meet the needs of the Allies generally. To England we sent over 100,000 tons of hides and to Italy about 44,000 tons with a total value of some 21 millions sterling. As a result of especial efforts, a considerable fraction of these were tanned before export, and in order to assist in turning this new development to permanent account, we engaged experts in tanning, in leather goods manufacture and tan-stuff research.

"Timber for structural works, exclusive of fuel and railway sleepers, to the extent of 200,000 tons were sent to the armies in the Near East. Railway materials of local manufacture sufficient to construct over 1,800 miles of track and 13,000 feet of bridging were despatched, while from our own stock we spared 229 locomotives and 5,900 vehicles.

"The usual military demands for cotton clothing were entirely met by Indian Mills, whilst a large fraction of the woollen goods required were also manufactured locally from indigenous and imported Tibetan wool. Altogether 42 million articles of troops' clothing were manufactured.

"On the man-power side I can also give some interesting details covering the closing stages of the war. As a result of the Delhi Conference, India undertook in response to the Prime Minister's appeal to contribute 500,000 combatant recruits during the 12 months commencing on June 1st last.

"Doubts were expressed in some quarters regarding the prospects of fulfilling the pledge, and, as the previous year had yielded only 266,000 combatants, it was clear that the most strenuous efforts would be necessary to secure the large quota promised. Although during June the number obtained was only 28,000 against 41,000 required, the succeeding months, when the full effect of the increased



effort was felt, showed such gratifying results that by the 11th November, the date of the Armistice, over 200,000 recruits had been obtained, and there is every reason to believe that the 300,000 required during the remaining seven months would have been forthcoming had recruiting continued.

"From the commencement of the war India had furnished 1½ million recruits, combatants and non-combatants, a most creditable achievement."

Immediately after the Armistice a well-informed article about war supplies from India was published in the Trade Supplement of the *Times* which show how India had been "a great factor in the Allied victory." We quote the article below :—

"The collapse of the resistance of the Central Powers obviates the need for reticence as to the enormous assistance of the material resources of India in securing the victory of the Allies. The record is not yet complete, but we are in a position to survey it broadly, more particularly in respect to the export trade, up to the fourth anniversary of the commencement of the mighty struggle.

"While the supplies of foodstuffs and raw materials required for the manufacture of munitions and military equipment have been continuous during the period, the stream has been growing all the time, and it has recently been calculated that the value of the war exports of the Dependency has exceeded £100,000,000 per annum, or fully two-thirds of the entire average export trade for the five pre-war years. It is indisputable that if the resources of India had not been placed at the disposal of the Empire the difficulties of the Allies would have been enormously increased, and the prosecution of their campaign on the great scale ultimately reached would not have been possible. Whatever objections may be raised to measures of State control and State purchase in normal times, the necessity for them in respect to many Indian commodities in the last four years cannot be denied. Mistakes were no doubt made, but the general effect has been to secure very substantial savings in the war bill of the Allied purchasing countries, for in most cases commodities have

been supplied at rates considerably less than those that would have ruled in the abnormal conditions if there had not been State regulation.

---

#### INDIA'S AID IN SUPPLY OF MUNITIONS.

“Reference may first be made to India's part in providing munitions or the materials for their manufacture. In the first half of 1915 her railway workshops, as well as those of the principal Engineering Firms in Calcutta and Rangoon, undertook to supply shell cases to supplement the inadequate output in the United Kingdom. This assistance continued until Mr. Lloyd George had so developed the organization of the Ministry of Munitions as to make it independent of such provision. From the first India has had a great task in the equipment of her own expanding armies. To organize her material resources, not only for fully supplying Indian troops in Mesopotamia, Egypt, and elsewhere, but also to provide the Allies with many essential requisites for the prosecution of the war, a Munitions Board was set up early in 1917, under the vigorous and far-sighted chairmanship of Sir Thomas Holland. Very much more has been accomplished, alike in quantity, quality, and variety, in spite of the manifold difficulties of war conditions than seemed possible when the Board was created. Sir Thomas continued and has developed activities both of production and manufacture which the war rendered necessary. Remarkable success has been achieved in manufacturing in the country supplies that formerly could be obtained only from abroad. Sir Thomas Holland's organization was controlling expenditure on war material a few weeks ago amounting to £2,000,000 per month. The utilization of local resources to the fullest possible extent went far to make India a complete base of supply to Mesopotamia and other theatres of war. In combination with a rigid scrutiny of demands for manufactured goods, this form of assistance lessened the strain on the manufacturing resources of this country and America. The equipment and stores directly supplied by India, for the troops she

provided for the various theatres of war to the 30th September, reached a total value of close upon £80,000,000, excluding the value of such equipment and stores in possession of individual units and drafts.

"While providing so much equipment on her own account, India did inestimable service in supplying raw materials and partly manufactured articles for the making of munitions of war in other Allied lands. The yield of the Burma wolfram mines, almost negligible when war broke out, is now approximately one-third of the world output, and it has been reserved entirely for our own Ministry of Munitions. About 15,000 tons, valued at £2,150,000, have been sent here at fixed prices much below those ruling in other countries. India has been practically the only source of supply to the European Allies of manganese ores, since they could not be obtained from Russia or Brazil. The exports have amounted to over 1,800,000 tons, valued at £2,250,000. Of chrome ore 38,000 tons have been supplied.

"Again, India has been the main source of supply of mica and shellac, both of which are widely used in munition factories. Under special arrangements the shellac requirements of Great Britain and France—about 50,000 cwt. annually—have been provided at a price approximately half that ruling in the ordinary market. The mica trade has been strictly controlled, all shipments coming to this country for selection. Some 126,000 cwt. have been supplied to our manufacturers and 29,000 cwt. to the Allies, the aggregate value being over £1,100,000. On the basis of prices ruling in neutral countries, from three to five times as much as this would have had to be paid. Indian saltpetre has been reserved for the Allies, who have been almost entirely dependent thereon for the manufacture of gunpowder. About 90,000 tons valued at £2,200,000 have been supplied at fixed and moderate prices.

"Sandbags have been as essential as actual munitions in a war which has seen such great development of trench fighting and aerial activity. The importance in the last four years of India's monopoly

of jute can scarcely be exaggerated, not only on account of this use, but also for the provision of coverings for the transport of Army and civil supplies. The Indian export, valued during the period at no less than £137,000,000, has comprised, in addition to nearly two million tons of raw jute, 2,823,000,000 bags and 4,693,000,000 yards of cloth. The contract prices entered into between the Calcutta Mills and the War Office here in 1915 for the supply of bags for the Allied armies have remained unchanged in the intervening three years, although the commercial prices have greatly increased. The contract price is now, however, being increased to meet the sharp rise in the price of raw jute following a poor crop, but is being calculated to provide no more than a reasonable profit on the cost of production. A similar contract, though not on so vast a scale, was entered into with the Dundee Mills, and raw jute to the value of £16,000,000 has been shipped to this country, chiefly for the manufacture of government goods.

“Though India has been using ever-growing quantities of local leather for the manufacture of army boots and accoutrements, this country has relied very largely on Indian supplies of tanned hides, which have provided leather for nearly two-thirds of the army boots manufactured. The value of these hides received since the outbreak of war has been over £10,000,000. Since 1916 the whole exportable surplus has been purchased for the War Office by the Government of India at controlled prices, which are considerably less than those for similar hides obtained from other sources. In order to encourage hide tanning, which has greatly increased in volume, the Munitions Board have prohibited the tanning of skins. Large quantities of tanning materials have been supplied to this country, myrabolams alone having been shipped during the war period to the extent of 4,000,000 cwt. valued at £1,400,000. Since 1917 the exportable surplus of Indian raw hides has been acquired for the British and Italian Governments, the value of purchases amounting to some £2,500,000 sterling.

“In another leading trade there is the concurrence of growing

local consumption and of a great exportable surplus. Both in point of quantity and variety of vegetable oils and oilseeds India has been the most important source of supply in the war of oleaginous produce required for the manufacture of food and munitions, as lubricants, and for industrial purposes. Since August, 1914, the Empire and our Allies have received from India the vast quantity of 2,500,000 tons of oils and oilseeds, notably linseed, ground-nuts, rape, sesamum, copra, castor, and cotton; to a total value of £31,000,000. She enjoys a practical monopoly of castorseed, the oil of which is of vital importance as a lubricant for aeroplane engines. Owing to the rapid increase of aircraft construction, the demand has exceeded the supply; hence steps have been taken to stimulate production, and where possible to find substitutes for local consumption. Throughout the oleaginous products of India have been available at prices corresponding roughly to pre-war rates; but had the war been continued State purchase on behalf of the Allies, at first in the case of castorseed and linseed, with a view to avoid competitive buying, would have been organized.

“As the Prime Minister said some months ago, we in this country may have suffered some deprivation, but we have not known as our enemies have, the pangs of real privation. This immunity has been due in part at least to the value of Indian shipments of foodstuffs in supplementing the home production in this and other Allied countries. Of wheat more than 3,000,000 tons have been shipped to the Allies, largely to Mediterranean countries, an arrangement designed to assist in economizing tonnage. Wheat purchases came under Government control early in 1915, a step originally designed to protect the Indian consumer from high prices. Since October, 1916, the Royal Commission on Wheat Supplies has been responsible for Allied purchases, and at various dates last year the Commission assumed responsibility for the purchase of flour, pulses, forage, rice, and beans. All these had previously been supplied through the ordinary trade channels, but during the period of their operations the authority named have purchased in India

some 4,750,000 tons of various foodstuffs of a total value of nearly £43,000,000. The shipments have been made available at prices substantially less than those ruling in other markets of the world. Large indents of gram, maize, and barley as fodder for army horses have been provided.

"To the medicinal needs of war India has substantially contributed. The most serious results would have ensued on the exhaustion, early in the war, of stocks of Persian and Turkish opium for the making of morphia had not supplies from India been available. Although not previously used for the manufacture of morphia, the product of the Indian poppy was found suitable for that purpose. Since 1915 some 1,200,000 lb. have been supplied by the Indian Government to British manufacturers. About one-sixth of this has been re-exported to the United States for manufacture. One condition imposed on British manufacturers has been that of supplying morphia to the home market and Allied Governments at a fixed rate corresponding until recently to the pre-war price.

"Of the support the great cotton industry of India has been to the Allies Mr. Montagu spoke in some detail a few months back. He mentioned that the supply of British made goods having fallen off from well-known causes, recourse had to be made to the Indian Mills for army supplies, and the cotton textiles required for army purposes were now being manufactured entirely by them. To meet the requirements of a year 20,000,000 yards of khaki drill, 3,500,000 yards of khaki drill shirting, and 17,500,000 yards of khaki puggree cloth had to be made. It should also be mentioned that large quantities of army blankets have been manufactured, the exportable surplus of East Indies' wool being reserved for the War Office at controlled prices. In all 182,000,000 pounds of wool, valued at £8,800,000, have been shipped to this country.

"The Tata Iron and Steel Works, which turned out their first rails some 2½ years before the outbreak of war, have been the chief source of the supply of rails for Mesopotamia, East Africa, and Palestine. Some 1,800 miles of track, 200 engines, and more than

6,000 vehicles have been provided by India for the various theatres of war. The river flotillas on the Tigris and Euphrates are mainly composed of vessels drawn from Indian rivers or put together in Indian workshops and manned by Indians. She has provided 888 vessels to Mesopotamia, and also more than 500 anchor boats and dinghies. Similarly, the plant which now lights up Basra and Baghdad was nearly all drawn from India, and is worked by skilled Indian operatives. Since April 1, 1917, India has supplied nearly 10,000,000 cubic feet of timber for railway, shipbuilding, and other war purposes.

---

#### SUPPLY OF RAW MATERIAL BY INDIA.

"Yet another service should be mentioned in what is by no means an exhaustive catalogue, for nothing has been said of the large exports of raw silk, hemp, and coir, tea, rubber, skins, petroleum, and other secondary products. Ordinarily India imports large quantities of coal, mainly for the bunkering of steamers leaving Bombay. These imports having been greatly restricted, India has been called upon not only to make good the deficiency, but to supply neighbouring coaling stations.

"Our steadfastly progressive rule in India was described by John Stuart Mill 60 years ago as the most beneficent in design and execution known in the history of mankind. That beneficence has been blessed not only to the giver and the receiver, but to the world at large, by the great material contribution India has been enabled to make to the victory of justice and honour over brute force and fraud."

This shows how, over and above the direct contributions in money, India had indirectly suffered financial sacrifices for the Empire during the war.

"Enormous sums were raised for hospitals, and the philanthropic side of the war generally." One loan after another was raised, while in addition a free gift of a hundred millions sterling was made by the poorest to the richest country in the world. We remember how the

Finance Member, Sir William Meyer, announced in the Indian Legislative Council that in pursuance of two resolutions moved by Indian non-official members and carried in the Council on September 8th, 1914, and February 24th, 1915, the Government of India had informed the Home Government of their willingness to borrow the largest sum that could be raised as a War Loan, to make a special contribution of £100,000,000 to the war.

---

#### THE DELHI CONFERENCE.

Reference has already been made to the Delhi Conference. This Conference met on the 27th April, 1918, when Lord Chelmsford read the following message from the King-Emperor:—

“I learn with deep satisfaction that, in response to the invitation of my Viceroy, the Ruling Princes and Chiefs, representatives of the Provincial Governments, and leaders of all ranks and sections of the community, European and Indian, are meeting in conference at Delhi to reaffirm the abiding loyalty of the Indian people and their resolute will to prosecute to their utmost ability and to the full limit of their resources, in association with other members of the Empire, the war which our enemies have wantonly provoked and which they are ruthlessly waging against the freedom of the world. Great as has been India's contribution to the cause of the Allies, it is by no means the full measure of her resources and her strength. I rejoice to know that their development and the fuller utilization of her man-power will be the first care of the Conference.

“The need of the Empire is India's opportunity, and I am confident that under the sure guidance of my Viceroy her people will not fail in their endeavour. Recent events have made the struggle on the Western front more bitter and more intense. At the same time the position in the East is menaced by disturbances in Asia instigated by the enemy. It is of ever increasing importance that the operations of our armies in Egypt, Palestine, and Mesopotamia should be largely sustained from India.

“I look confidently to the deliberations of the Conference to





GENERAL VOLUME.



THE MAGIC FLOW.  
DROWNING THE HUN IN THE INDIAN  
(SILVER) OCEAN.

[p. 41]

promote a patriotic spirit of unity, a concentration of purpose and activity and a cheerful acceptance of sacrifices without which no high object, no lasting victory, can be achieved."

In opening this Conference Lord Chelmsford said:—

"If the war were to stop to-morrow the tale of India's share in the Great War would form no unworthy page in her glorious annals. Her sons have fought not without glory in every front. In East Africa, in Palestine, in Mesopotamia they have borne away victorious laurels. They still flock to the colours, but until victory is achieved we cannot relax our efforts. I have summoned you to Delhi, not simply that you may listen to me, move resolutions and then disperse, but I have asked you to come and help with your counsel and advice now, and with your personal endeavour when you return to your homes."

"The eyes of the world," he said, "are upon you. I am sure you will quit yourselves like men."

It may not be out of place to mention here that Mr. M. K. Gandhi was one of the Indian leaders invited to the Conference. After the Conference he wrote a letter to the Viceroy on 4th May in which he said: "I recognize that in the hour of its danger we must give, as we have decided to give, ungrudging and unequivocal support to the Empire of which we aspire in the near future to be partners in the same sense as the Dominions overseas."

#### INDIA'S CONTRIBUTION IN MONEY.

How fully and faithfully India discharged her obligations will be evident from a statement of war expenditure in India and the Dominions supplied in the British House of Commons on May 13th, 1919. It shows the expenditure up to March 31st, 1919, (in the case of Newfoundland up to April 30th, 1919).

|                               | £           |
|-------------------------------|-------------|
| Canada ... ..                 | 255,454,000 |
| Commonwealth of Australia ... | 291,000,000 |
| New Zealand ... ..            | 75,750,000  |
| Union of South Africa ..      | 32,950,000  |
| Newfoundland ... ..           | 1,880,000   |

The capitalised cost of pensions due to the war is as follows:—

|                               | £           |
|-------------------------------|-------------|
| Canada ... ..                 | 88,000,000  |
| New Zealand ... ..            | 12,000,000  |
| Commonwealth of Australia ... | 100,000,000 |
| Union of South Africa ... ..  | 2,250,000   |
| Newfoundland ... ..           | 3,200,000   |

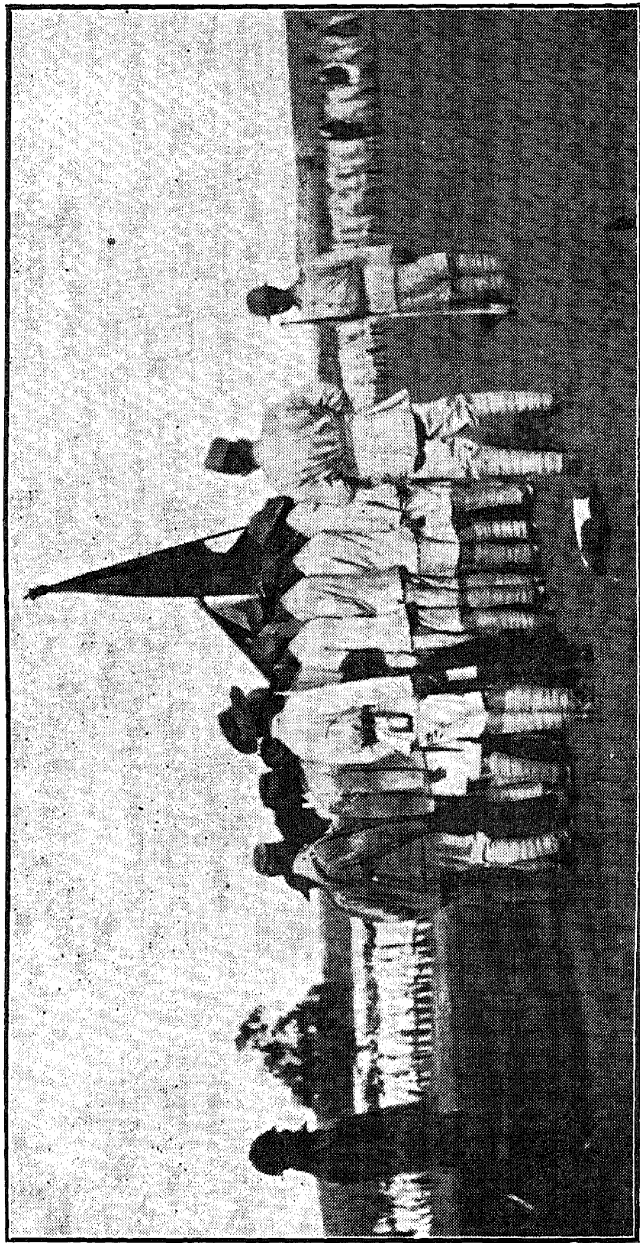
And what share did India bear in the cost of the war? "Including a contribution of £100,000,000 towards the outlay of His Majesty's Government, the war expenditure of the Government of India up to March 31st, 1919, may be taken at about £127,800,000. \* \* \* Indian Princes and others have contributed in cash sums amounting to £2,100,000, in addition to placing at the disposal of the Government of India considerable further sums for the purchase of horses, motor cars and vans, motor ambulances, comforts for the troops, etc."

A lengthy despatch by Sir Charles Monro, the Commander-in-Chief, as regards the part played by India in the war appeared in the *Extraordinary Gazette of India* of the 29th July, 1919. It dealt with many phases of the war and contained two appendices with many hundreds of names of those who have rendered assistance in the war. It concluded with the following remarks:—

"Concurrently with the increase of the army, the operations of the Indian Munitions Board continued to expand in all directions, the increasing output of its factories stimulating local manufacture and conserving to the best advantage the small residue of imported stocks which remained available in India after three and a half years of war, During the year the average monthly output of the Army Clothing factories rose to three times the normal yearly output before the war and in one month reached its maximum figure of two million garments. Over a million and a half pairs of boots were supplied against army demands in the 12 months preceding the Armistice. The output of Ordnance Factories also showed a steady increase. With the object of setting free the plant of government factories to meet the immediate and specialised demands as they arose, the outside manufacture of



GENERAL VOLUME.



SWEARING IN RECRUITS IN A GURKHA REGIMENT.

war stores was encouraged as much as possible by instruction in the methods of manufacture and by the provision of raw materials, patterns, and specifications. The inauguration of extensive schemes of irrigation and agricultural development in Mesopotamia made heavy additional demands on India during the year and the extensions of the railway system in the same theatre continued to make serious inroads on the available rolling-stock and material. During the war 1,855 miles of railway track, 229 locomotives, and 5,983 vehicles have been sent out of the country. The programme of rivercraft construction allotted to India was completed before the Armistice was signed, by which date 940 crafts of various descriptions had been purchased, constructed, or re-erected in India for service overseas, mostly in Mesopotamia. In this connection much assistance was rendered by the Indian River Craft Board, a voluntary organization developed under the direction of the Railway Board, and which consisted of representatives of the principal Engineering Firms at Calcutta with affiliated committees at Karachi, Bombay, and other ports. Improvements to the Port of Basra have continued uninterruptedly, and it has now been converted into a base capable of handling 180,000 tons of stores a month.

---

#### INDIA'S SUPPLY OF MEN.

"In the foregoing narrative I have endeavoured to convey some idea of the part played by India during the war, of the wide variety of obligations which were thrown upon her as the scope of the war developed and of her endeavour to meet those obligations, often in circumstances of extreme difficulty. It may perhaps serve to illustrate her effort more graphically if I append a few figures showing the extent of her contribution in terms of men. On the outbreak of the war the combatant strength of the Indian army including reservists, was 194,000 Indian ranks. Enlistments during the war for all branches of service amounted to 791,000, making a total combatant contribution of 985,000. Of this number 552,000 were sent overseas. As regards non-combatants, the pre-war strength was 45,000. An additional 427,000 were enrolled during the war and 391,000 were

sent overseas. The total contribution of the Indian personnel has thus been 1,457,000 of whom 943,000 have served overseas. Casualties amounted to 1,06,594, which include 36,695 deaths from all causes. The number of animals sent overseas was 175,000. No department has been more closely connected with the war or has rendered heartier co-operation than the Railway Department. The great increase of military traffic produced by the war synchronised with a serious shortage of shipping and this threw upon Indian railways a volume of traffic normally seaborne which they were never designed to carry. Nevertheless, by the exercise of the utmost resource, foresight, and initiative, serious dislocation to traffic has been successfully avoided, and even in circumstances of extreme difficulty the railway administrations have freely surrendered the personnel and material for service overseas. The resources of the Royal Indian Marine have similarly been taxed to the utmost. Not only has this service been responsible for transportation overseas of nearly 950,000 men and 175,000 animals, but it has also been charged with a variety of other duties. Throughout the war the work of the Royal Indian Marine has been accomplished with commendable efficiency and despatch.

“In the previous despatch I have expressed my gratitude in the name of the army in India to thousands of loyal and devoted workers who have contributed in various spheres of activity to the prosecution of the war, and now that the war has been brought to a successful conclusion I cannot do more than reiterate that expression of my thanks. The various departments of the Government of India, heads and members of provincial Governments, Ruling Chiefs, railway administrations, Chambers of Commerce, port trusts and municipalities, mercantile marine, numerous associations for the relief of distress and care of sick and wounded—work in which the ladies of India have played a leading part—the great, non-official and commercial communities, and a host of individual workers, one and all have laboured with conspicuous devotion. Last and, perhaps, most important of all, I desire to express the great debt which the Empire owes to the troops themselves, British and Indian, combatants and



non-combatants who have contributed so largely often with their lives to the attainment of the common end."

In this despatch the Commander-in-Chief who was at the helm of military affairs in India during the trying time of the war paid a well-deserved compliment to India for her help to the Empire in its hour of need.

From this despatch we find that the combatant strength, including reservists, at the outbreak of the war was 194,000 Indian ranks. Enlistments during the war for all branches of services amounted to 791,000, making a total combatant contribution of 985,000. Of this number 552,000 were sent overseas. As regards non-combatants, the pre-war strength was 45,000. An additional 427,000 were enrolled during the war, and 391,000 were sent overseas. Thus it will be seen that the total contribution of Indian personnel has been 1,457,000, of whom 943,000 have served overseas. Casualties amounted to 106,594, which include 36,696 deaths from all causes. Compare the above figures with the men which the United Kingdom and the self-governing Colonies furnished to prosecute the war. According to a writer in the "Round Table," we find that the armed forces supplied by the United Kingdom totalled 5,704,416. The self-governing Colonies, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, Newfoundland, and the smaller colonies all together supplied 1,425,894. India, on the other hand, contributed, according to the same authority, 1,401,450, or a strength almost equal to the combined total of the self-governing Dominions. It should be noted that the figures cited above for the self-governing Dominions represent only the white forces. The coloured forces of the Dominions (not including India, of course) totalled 122,837. Thus the non-white British forces stood at 1,524,187, which means an excess of over 100,000 over the total figures for the self-governing Dominions' white forces.

Such were India's contributions to the Empire during the war. They have been gratefully acknowledged by British Statesmen. As early as 1916 Mr. Churchill discussed the various sources or, as he

called them, reservoirs, from which the fighting line in France and Flanders might be lengthened and strengthened. He referred to Asia with its vast resources as the fifth reservoir and said :—

#### WHAT INDIAN SOLDIERS ACCOMPLISHED.

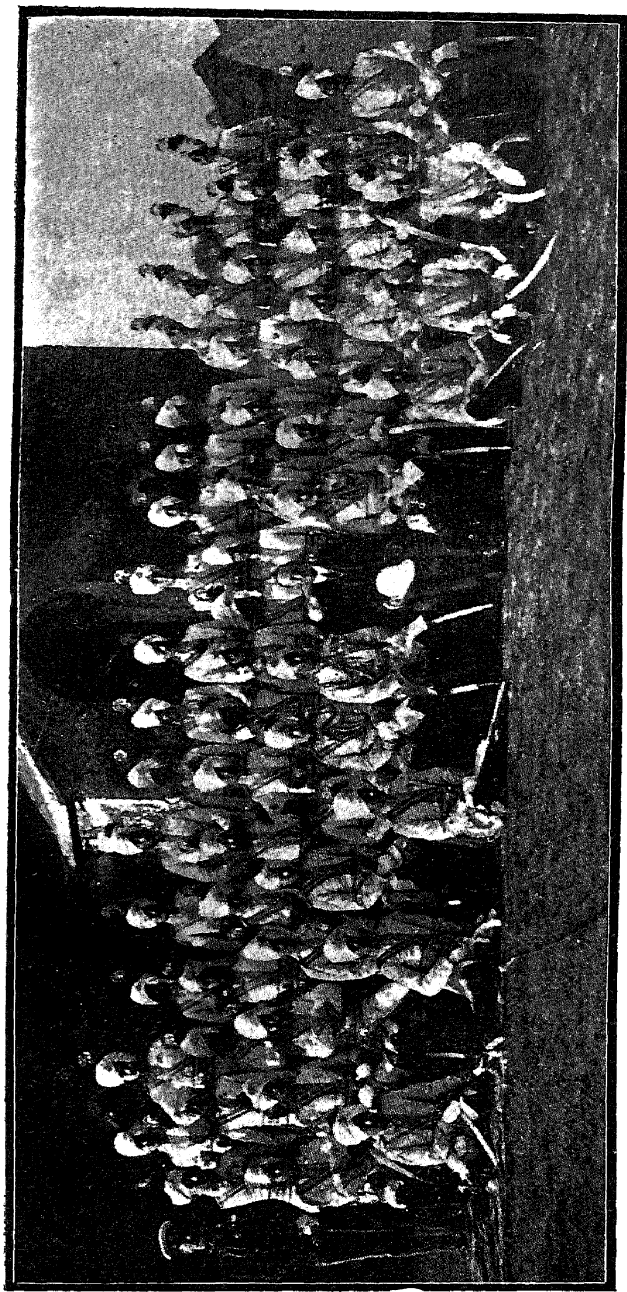
“ What part is India going to play in 1917, if the war should be continuing then ? We all read the moving account given by Lord Hardinge of the wonderful loyalty shown by India in the crisis of the early days of the war. \* \* \* The part played by the Indian troops in 1914 and 1915 in France was glorious. They held positions for the holding of which no other resources were at the time available in the Allied Armies in the West. They fought with the utmost heroism and effect. They acquitted themselves admirably both in defence and in attacks again and again, and yet again in the—for them—most depressing conditions of climate, and against a most terrible foe in the height of his military efficiency. There were Gurkhas at Gallipoli, storming the fort of Sari Behr side by side with their Australian comrades, thereby creating a reputation throughout Australia which will never be forgotten. The wet wintry weather in Flanders, the pouring rain and mist, the undrained trenches, deep in mud and water, were a heavy and cruel burden for the Indians.”

The present writer will always remember with pride how at a lunch given by the Lord Mayor of Manchester (October 28th, 1918), a British Officer came up to him and said, “ I come to congratulate you on the bravery of Indian soldiers. I have fought with your ‘boys’ in Gallipoli ; and I have never seen braver soldiers.”

Speaking in September, 1914, Mr. Asquith, the then Prime Minister of England, said :—

“ We welcome with appreciation and affection India’s proffered aid in the Empire which knows no distinction of race or class, where all alike are subjects of the King-Emperor and are joint and equal custodians of her common interest and fortunes. We hail with profound and heartfelt gratitude their association side by side and shoulder to shoulder with the Home and Dominion troops under a

GENERAL VOLUME.



THE IMPERIAL CADET CORPS WITH LORD HARDINGE.



flag which is a symbol to all of the unity that the world in arms cannot disserve or dissolve."

Mr. Bonar Law said:—

"I do not think we fully realize how much these Indians who have fought and died by the side of our soldiers have helped us through these long months."

Lord Haldane, then Lord Chancellor of England, said:—

"Indian soldiers are fighting for the liberty of humanity as much as ourselves. India has freely given her lives and treasure in humanity's great cause; hence things cannot be left as they are."

Speaking in the British House of Commons in February, 1917, Mr. Lloyd George admitted that the assistance India had given to the Empire "in the most trying hours of this campaign" had been "incalculable in its value."

The present writer was in the Royal Gallery of the British House of Lords on the 19th November, 1918, when, after the victorious termination of the war, after more than four years of sacrifice and suffering, His Majesty the King-Emperor spoke to his subjects about the achievement of the Empire. It was a pompous pageant worthy of the occasion and worthy of the Empire which had emerged victorious out of the greatest war the world has ever known. He will never forget the graceful and grateful reference that His Majesty made on that unique occasion to the loyal services of the Princes and soldiers of India.

We have spoken of the services of British India and of the Indian Princes. But we must not forget to refer to the services of the Indian citizens of the French Republic. On 7th February, 1916, the Governor of French Establishments in India addressed the Hindu citizens thus:—

"Engage yourselves in numbers in the valiant and glorious French army wherein now you have free access. There you will be welcomed as a true son of France. You will have also the glory of participating in the liberation of the world, and contributing to the

deliverance of those unfortunate people oppressed and suffering under the yoke of Germany, of avenging the innumerable innocent people—victims to this ferocious people that neither care for old men, nor for women, nor for children, nor for the sacred monuments of art. The conditions of your enlistment will be the same as those of the French born soldiers. \* \* \* France will not forget those that will serve her at this juncture.”

This call to arms was readily responded to by Indian citizens of the French Republic.

On one occasion Mr. Lloyd George, speaking in the House of Commons referred to India and said :—

“The memory of the powerful aid which she willingly accorded in the hour of our trouble will not be forgotten after the war is over, and when the affairs of India come up for examination and for action.”

Only three days before the Armistice Mr. Lloyd George said of “the Great Empire of India”: “We have had four years of great brotherhood. Let it not end there.”

---

#### EFFECTS OF THE WAR ON INDIA.

British statesmen recognized how the war had affected India. In the Report on Indian Constitutional Reforms issued by Mr. Montagu as Secretary of State for India and Lord Chelmsford as Viceroy and Governor-General it was stated: “The war has affected India in many ways, but above all it has become the predominant factor in the present political situation.” “The war,” said the authors of the Report, “has given to India a new sense of self-esteem \* \* She feels that she has been tried and not found wanting, that thereby her status should be recognized by Great Britain and the world at large.” It was to satisfy this “new sense of self-esteem” that the British Government had made the following announcement in the House of Commons on August 20th, 1917:—

“The policy of His Majesty’s Government, with which the Government of India are in complete accord, is that of the increasing

GENERAL VOLUME.



LORD CHELMSFORD.





association of Indians in every branch of the administration and the gradual development of self-governing institutions with a view to the progressive realization of responsible Government in India as an integral part of the British Empire. They have decided that substantial steps in this direction should be taken as soon as possible."

On the next day the following appeared in the *Gazette of India Extraordinary* :—

"The Secretary of State for India has announced in the House of Commons the decision of His Majesty's Government to remove the bar which has hitherto precluded the admission of Indians to commissioned ranks in His Majesty's Army, and steps are accordingly being taken respecting the grant of commissions to nine Indian Officers belonging to Native Indian land forces who have served in the field in the present war, and whom the Government of India recommended for this honour in recognition of their services."

The passing of the new Government of India Act inaugurated a new epoch in the history of India. In giving his Royal assent to the Act His Majesty the King-Emperor issued a Proclamation on the 23rd December, 1919, in which he said :—

"The Act which has now become law entrusts elected representatives of the people with a definite share in Government and points the way to full representative Government hereafter. \* \* \* We have endeavoured to give to her (India's) people the many blessings which Providence has bestowed upon ourselves. But there is one gift which yet remains and without which the progress of the country cannot be consummated: the right of her people to direct her affairs and safeguard her interests. \* \* \* I have watched with understanding and sympathy the growing desire of my Indian people for representative institutions. \* \* \* It has been stirred to more vigorous life by the ideals for which the British Commonwealth fought in the Great War and its claims are supported by the part which India has taken in our common struggles, anxieties, and victories,"

The Proclamation concluded with the following words :—

*“ With all my people I pray to Almighty God that, by His wisdom and under His guidance, India may be led to greater prosperity and contentment and may grow to the fullness of political freedom.”*

The new condition created by the Act has not satisfied all parties in India. But it has been universally acknowledged to be “a definite step on the road to responsible government.”

Let us hope a new epoch has been reached. Let us hope the future is flushed with the radiance of a new dawn beaconing us into a greater light than has ever yet illumined our political horizon. And, above all, let us hope the path of progress will be smooth and peaceful.

“Not in vain the distance beacons. Forward, forward let us range.

“Let the great world spin for ever down the ringing groves of change.”

---

•





H. I. M. THE KING-EMPEROR.

## CHAPTER II.

---

### THE ROYAL FAMILY.

---

#### HIS MAJESTY THE KING-EMPEROR.

HIS MAJESTY THE KING-EMPEROR GEORGE V owes much of his great popularity throughout the Empire to the democratic training which he received in his youth. Born at Marlborough House on June 3rd, 1863, the second son of the Prince of Wales, he had no immediate prospect of ascending the Throne. His training, therefore, followed a rather different course than it would have taken had he been Heir-Apparent, and he led a care-free life.

The late King Edward, brought up in the old-fashioned way, at which a man of his spirit could not but have chafed, gave his own children freedom to develop individuality and self-dependence. Thus it came to pass that the young Prince, who is now our King-Emperor, was brought up in a healthy and natural way, and was, as he grew older, given a naval training, deliberately chosen for him by his father, because he considered that naval discipline would not only prepare him for the exercise of authority but would also inspire in him respect for the authority of others. It is said that the late King Edward always regretted that he had not been sent to sea in his youth.

Prince George was not twelve years old when in January, 1877, he became a naval cadet on H. M. S. *Britannia* at Dartmouth. He had an inborn love for the sea, stimulated by reading Charles Kingsley's stories, and took to his work with avidity. It is related of him that he would, at this stage, beg the seamanship instructors not to bother about his elder brother, who would one day be King

and would, therefore, have no special need of intensive training, and concentrate upon him, whose career would lie in the navy.

The two young Princes were treated the same as their fellow-cadets, except that they were given separate and better sleeping quarters. Just as if they were the sons of commoners, they darned their own socks, mended their own clothes, scaled rigging, spliced ropes, took their place at the oars, saluted their seniors as "Sir" and observed all the naval rules of courtesy. They even were given nicknames, the Duke of Clarence being known as "Sprat" and Prince George as "Herring." They joined in the pranks of their fellow-cadets, and once "Herring" had all leave stopped for a week for a joke he had perpetrated on one of the officers. Prince George early developed into a skilled sailor and rower, and was in the rowing crew of several boats that carried off prizes.

The brothers, devoted to each other, spent two years on the *Britannia* and then were transferred to H. M. S. *Buccante*, which immediately went on a cruise calculated to give them a good glimpse of the great wide world. They sailed to the West Indies, Madeira, Simon's Bay, Australia, Fiji, Yokohama, and Singapore, making the return journey by way of the Suez Canal and the Holy Land. They were accompanied by Canon Dalton, their tutor, and, in addition to the lessons in seamanship, gunnery and mathematics, necessitated by the service examinations, kept up their academic studies. Upon their return home they were sent to Lausanne for the purpose of mastering French and German.

At this time it became necessary to separate the two brothers, who, up till then, had been inseparable, for the elder Prince, the Duke of Clarence, would some day be King of England, and must have special preparation for that high position. He was, therefore, sent to Cambridge, and later entered the Army.

Prince George, however, was allowed to remain at sea and to adopt the Navy as his profession. In 1880, he was promoted to senior midshipman, and was gazetted to the *Canard*, which was serving at the American station. He took a first-class in seamanship

from the *Canada* and then went to the Royal Naval College at Greenwich. On his nineteenth birthday, he was promoted to Sub-Lieutenant, and in October, 1885, was made a Lieutenant, and went aboard the *Excellent* at Portsmouth for a course of gunnery, torpedo practice, and pilotage.

Following this, Prince George served for three years on the Mediterranean service, and part of the time was on the *Alexandra*, the flagship of his uncle, the Duke of Edinburgh.

During the manœuvres of 1889 Prince George was given command of torpedo boat No. 79. Shortly afterwards he gave an exhibition of bravery that thrilled everyone who heard of it. A torpedo boat, sent out with a small squadron to reconnoitre at night, broke down in a nasty sea and had to anchor close to a dead sea shore. The boat, commanded by the Prince, immediately went to the rescue, but her only hawser was carried away and she was unable to tow the disabled boat out of danger. It was thereupon proposed to send out another boat.

Though the Commander of No. 79 had been up all night, he was determined to go out again.

He was, therefore, provided with a new hawser and went out and rescued the boat, towing it safely into harbour.

A story is related of Prince George at this period which shows how seriously he took his work. He was told that his father wished to see him at Goodwood. "But, Sir," he asked the Admiral who had brought the message, "What is to become of my torpedo boat?" The Admiral replied that he might be spared, but Prince George stoutly refused to leave his ship. "I have orders to take my torpedo boat to Spithead," he replied, "and go I must." And go he did.

In 1890 Prince George was appointed to the command of the first class gunboat *H. M. S. Thrush* on the North American and West Indies stations. He served for a year on this ship, and in the course of his cruise revisited Canada and Jamaica. He was promoted to Commander on August 24, 1891, but was not given a ship until 1893, when he was appointed to a command.

Prince George's sea-life came to an abrupt end early in 1892. The Duke of Clarence, while attending the funeral of Prince Victor Hohenlohe-Lagenburg, caught a severe chill and died after a brief illness on January 24th, and, as next in the line of succession, the erstwhile sailor-Prince automatically became Heir-Apparent to the Throne. His interest in the navy continued, however, and he was promoted to Captain in 1898, and during the manœuvres was in actual command of H. M. S. *Crescent* and rose to the rank of Admiral in 1907, hoisting his flag for the first time on the *Indomitable*, in 1908, when he visited Canada for the Tercentenary Festival. That ship, on its return voyage, made the fastest trip then on record across the Atlantic. His Royal Highness was so keen to make this record that he actually went into the stoke-hole and shovelled coal. The ship's company still consider the stoker's shovel he used on that occasion as their most precious treasure.

To return to 1892. After the death of his elder brother, Prince George had to bid farewell to the sea, which he loved so dearly, and prepare for the duties that awaited him as monarch. Queen Victoria created him Duke of York, and a year later (1893) he was married to his cousin, Princess Mary, who was betrothed to his brother, the Duke of Clarence, at the time of his death.

The Duke and Duchess of York made their home at York Cottage, Sandringham, and the Duke spent a great deal of time with his father. He took pains to study every aspect of governance, and was often to be seen in his seat in the House of Lords, or in the Gallery of the House of Commons, following the proceedings as closely as his Lordship on the Woolsack or the Speaker in the Chair.

Queen Victoria's death in 1901, and King Edward's elevation to the Throne, threw additional responsibilities upon the Duke of York who, as heir to the throne, became Duke of Cornwall. He assumed not only the ceremonial duties that devolved upon him as Prince of Wales, but also relieved King Edward of much of the drudgery of State, leaving his father free to follow his own bent, or



to carry on his diplomatic work, to which the nation and the Empire owe so much. Thus the Prince of Wales became thoroughly acquainted with all the questions of the hour in domestic and foreign affairs, and with the policy and views of the Crown in relation to them.

His Royal Highness undertook many important and delicate Imperial missions. Before Queen Victoria's death, arrangements had been made for him to go to Australia to usher in the new regime in the Commonwealth by opening the first Parliament. King Edward was insistent that no change should be made in the programme.

The Duke and Duchess of Cornwall and York set sail from Portsmouth on March 7th, 1901, on the S. S. "Ophir." They stopped *en route* at Gibraltar, Malta, Port Said, Aden, Colombo, Singapore. Everywhere they received the most enthusiastic welcome. They remained in Australia altogether about three months and visited every city of any importance. The Parliament was opened by His Royal Highness on May 9th.

Escorted by warships the Duke and Duchess visited each colony in turn, then proceeded to Mauritius and South Africa. They next crossed over to Canada, where they made a semi-Royal progress through the Dominion.

Upon returning to England early in November, and on King Edward's birthday (the 9th of that month) the title of Prince of Wales was conferred upon the Duke of Cornwall and York.

Four years later the Prince and Princess paid a visit to India, sailing from Genoa on October 21st, 1905, on H. M. S. *Renown*, and landing in India about three weeks later. That visit still remains a pleasant memory to Indians. The Royal visitors travelled by easy stages throughout India, going from Bombay to the north, thence to Calcutta, crossing to Rangoon, and then journeying to Madras. Passing through Southern and Central India to the extreme north-west, they finally embarked at Karachi for the journey homewards.

In 1908, once more the Prince and Princess of Wales crossed the seas on an Imperial mission to take part in the Tercentenary of the

foundation of Quebec. Had not fate decreed otherwise, they would have gone, in 1910, to open the first Union Parliament in South Africa. The sudden death of King Edward on May 6th, 1910, however, made it impossible for them to do so.

The trips overseas represented the least of His Royal Highness's public activities during the years intervening between the death of the Duke of Clarence and his own elevation to the Throne. He, usually accompanied by his consort, travelled to all parts of the United Kingdom, unveiling memorials, reviewing troops, formally opening institutions and functions, and visiting exhibitions and similar functions. At the same time he served upon Councils and Commissions and Boards of Trustees, and made several trips to the Continent to visit European Royalties and relatives.

Elevation to the Throne did not altogether put an end to travels overseas. Their Majesties went out to India in 1911 to attend the Coronation Durbar.

---

## II.

The war began not very long after their return from India, and since then His Majesty has left England only to visit the brave men at the front who were fighting and dying for the Empire, being the first British Monarch to visit the troops at the front since George II, who crossed over to Dettingen in 1743 for the same purpose. His Majesty crossed the Channel on a warship on Sunday, November 29th, 1914. Upon landing, he was met by His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales, who was on active service.

It is significant that one of the King-Emperor's first acts the day after he landed, was to visit a base hospital for Indian troops. He then went on to the British General Headquarters. During this visit to France he visited the various headquarters and met the generals and staffs, making himself acquainted with the various staff departments and auxiliary services, and inspecting all the troops not actually fighting in the trenches at the time. He went to the Headquarters of the Royal Flying Corps and familiarized himself, as much as he

could, with the technique of flying (without actually making a flight) and the construction of airships of all types. Everywhere the "Tommies" greeted him enthusiastically.

Not content with visiting the British Headquarters, King George went to the French Headquarters, where he met M. Poincare, President of France, M. Viviani, the French Premier, and General Joffre. He even obtained a view of a battle while visiting the battlefields at Lille, Roubaix, and Ypres. Just before leaving he met King Albert on the last bit of Belgium of which the German invaders had not yet possessed themselves.

His Majesty returned to England on December 5th. Throughout his visit the Royal Flying Corps maintained a "continuous aerial patrol" above him, wherever he went.

This was by no means the last visit that the King-Emperor paid to the Army in France. During the years of conflict that followed he went again and again to the field of action, and more than once witnessed a battle in actual operation, going so close to the firing line that the men who were responsible for his safe-keeping were extremely anxious about his safety.

On one occasion—in October, 1915—when His Majesty was in France, reviewing some British troops, his horse took fright at the cheers and reared and fell, severely bruising him. He was so shaken up that he was obliged to go to bed and abandon the remainder of his tour. Upon his return to England on November 1st, improvement quickly set in and he was soon able to be about again.

On his fourth visit to the British Armies in the field in 1917, the King was accompanied by Her Majesty the Queen. While he was visiting the battlefields of the Somme, the Ancre, Arras, Vimy, and Messina, she personally acquainted herself with the arrangements for the care of the wounded.

At the time when His Majesty was skirting the blackened remains of Wytschaete Wood he was actually under fire when the German guns, suddenly began to pound the ruins of Wytschaete. Perhaps they had got word from their spies that the Royal visitor was

there. At one time he went so far forward that he was able to obtain, from a concealed observation station, a wide view of the enemy's position and the country beyond. He was initiated into the mysteries of *camouflage*—of transforming men into bushes and bushes into men and rocks and buildings into grass and trees.

The Army did not by any means absorb all His Majesty's attention. He paid many visits to the Grand Fleet to keep in touch with the latest naval developments. Everywhere the "Sailor King" was greeted with the greatest enthusiasm. He would be piped over the side of the ship in traditional fashion. Then would follow a march past of all the men on board. Afterwards might come an open-air investiture.

His Majesty paid frequent visits to the hospitals where the wounded soldiers and sailors were being cared for. He and Queen Mary were particularly anxious about the welfare of the Indian victims of the enemy, and visited the hospitals at Netley, New Forest, Brighton and elsewhere specially set aside for them.

The non-combatants at home who were supplying the soldiers and sailors with war material of all sorts were not forgotten. His Majesty, often accompanied by his consort, paid frequent visits to factories of all kinds where *material* was being manufactured. Now he was in Birmingham, again in Lancashire, Chester and Flintshire. He went to the Clyde country. He inspected the Armstrong-Whitworth works on the Tyne and the small-arms works at Enfield Lock, nearer London. There were, indeed, few enterprises connected with the war, public or private, that were not honoured by a Royal visit, which was always made without undue pomp and ceremony.

Whereas, in peace-time, the coming of the King and Queen would have been marked by elaborate street decorations and cheering crowds, dressed in their Sunday best, during the war the crowds were absent because it was impracticable to give the workers in the factories a holiday to celebrate the occasion of a Royal visit. The only street decorations consisted of the national flag and the flags of the Allies. The few soldiers who figured in the processions were

dressed in war-worn khaki instead of the brilliant uniforms of other days.

His Majesty went about amongst people as one of them rather than as their over-lord. He chatted pleasantly with the work-people making textiles, pottery, machinery, and foodstuffs for the fighters in the field and the civilian population at home.

Not the least of King George's arduous work in connection with the war consisted of reviewing troops, presenting colours, holding investitures, and opening and attending matinees and functions organized to raise money for War Funds. He also entertained representatives of the Allies who visited London from time to time, including monarchs, heads of Governments, and Commanders-in-Chief of Armies.

In view of all these obligations faithfully fulfilled, it is no exaggeration to state that His Majesty King George was one of the busiest men in his whole Empire in the time intervening between August 4th, 1914, and November 11th, 1918. His war-services included even the gift of money to the cause, for, aside from numerous liberal subscriptions to charities, he presented the treasury with £100,000 as a personal contribution towards national expenditure.

Of the war-time functions, the most sentimental interest was the celebration of His Majesty's "silver wedding"—the 25th anniversary of his marriage to Queen Mary—on July 6th, 1918. Their Majesties went in ceremonious procession from Buckingham Palace to St. Paul's, where a special service was held in honour of the occasion, attended by many wounded sailors and soldiers. When the service was over, Their Majesties proceeded to the Guildhall, where they received the address of the City Corporation, and silver wedding gifts from loyal citizens which took the form of a cheque for £53,000, to be devoted to any charities that they might elect to assist. They were also presented with a silver tankard which had once belonged to Charles II, and had been given by him, in 1678, to a distinguished citizen. The ceremony took place in the

historic hall, and His Majesty, in reply to the address, did not forget to mention India.

On August 4th, 1918, His Majesty took part in another solemn ceremony, when, accompanied by Queen Mary, he attended an intercession service at St. Margaret's, Westminster, to invoke the Divine Blessing on the Country's Cause. The service was also formally attended by the Members of the House of Lords and the House of Commons. That day—the fourth anniversary of the outbreak of the war—was observed throughout the kingdom as a day of national intercession. It was taken most seriously and, even in the remotest villages, sincere prayers went up to the Almighty that right and justice might triumph, and that the German menace, which hung like a dark pall over the whole earth, might be destroyed.

A little more than three months later those prayers were answered. The Armistice was signed on November 11th, 1918. Within fifteen minutes of the time the glad tidings were announced by the firing of maroons and the ringing of bells, a crowd of 5,000 persons had massed itself in front of Buckingham Palace.

A living stream poured from every direction and emptied into the Mall, to congratulate their victorious Sovereign. All sorts and conditions of men, women, and children, "some in rags and some in tags, and some in velvet gowns," formed the drops in that ocean of humanity. They came on foot, in carriages, private motor cars and taxis, on bicycles and motor-cycles, on horseback and, later, even in motor-omnibuses commandeered by soldiers and civilians and made to drive out of their appointed routes. They filled the Mall, and even climbed telegraph poles, swarmed upon the Victoria Memorial statue facing the Palace, and found points of vantage on the roof tops and in the windows of near-by buildings.

Their Majesties and members of the Royal Family came out upon the balcony again and again—King George dressed in Admiral's uniform, Queen Mary bareheaded and wearing a fur-coat. They were all openly, unaffectedly excited by the good news.

The bands played "God Save the King", "Rule Britannia," and "God Bless the Prince of Wales," and the constantly increasing crowd took up the refrain and reverently sang the national songs. All day and far into the night they stood in front of the Royal Palace, new people ever taking the place of those who wormed their way out of the mass.

The following day, His Majesty and the Royal Family attended a thanksgiving service at St. Paul's.

On November 18th an impressive ceremony took place in the Royal Gallery in the Palace of Westminster, when both Houses of Parliament presented addresses to the King congratulating him on the conclusion of the Armistice. The Lords and Commons walked in procession from their respective Houses and sat side by side in the Royal Gallery, with distinguished representatives of the Dominions and India on either hand, to hear the King's message to the Empire. After the Lord Chancellor and the Speaker of the House of Commons had presented the address of their respective Houses, His Majesty replied, taking pains especially to mention the war-efforts of the overseas Dominions and Colonies and of India.

This was not the last spectacular function connected with the war. In December, President and Mrs. Wilson arrived in London and were entertained as the guests of His Majesty at Buckingham Palace. King George and Queen Mary went to the station to meet them, and conducted them to the Palace through streets packed with dense, wildly cheering crowds. Many grand functions were held in their honour.

July 17th, 1919, was Peace Day. The great Peace Pageant marched through streets led by General Pershing and the American contingent. After them the Belgians and one or two other Allies. They were followed by Marshal Foch and his staff and other French commanders and their staffs. The Greek contingent came next, then the Serbians and finally the British forces led by Admiral Sir David Beatty on foot preceded by his flag as Admiral of the Fleet. Last

of all came the British troops with Field Marshal Sir Douglas Haig at their head.

Seldom, throughout the terrible conflict, did His Majesty the King-Emperor lose an opportunity to refer, in his public speeches, to India's War Services, always in terms of highest praise and gratitude. His message to the Princes and peoples of India soon after the outbreak of war expressed his genuine feeling of indebtedness to India for her unswerving loyalty. It read:—

“Among the many incidents that have marked the unanimous uprising of the populations of my Empire in defence of its unity and integrity, nothing has moved me more than the passionate devotion to my Throne expressed both by my Indian subjects and by the Feudatory Princes and the Ruling Chiefs of India, and their prodigal offers of their lives and their resources in the cause of the Realm.

“Their one-voiced demand to be foremost in the conflict has touched my heart, and has inspired to the highest issues the love and devotion which, as I well know, has ever linked my Indian subjects and myself. I recall to mind India's gracious message to the British nation of goodwill and fellowship which greeted my return in February, 1912, after the solemn ceremony of my Coronation Durbar at Delhi, and I find in this hour of trial a full harvest and a noble fulfilment of the assurance given by you that the destinies of Great Britain and India are indissolubly linked.”

---

### III.

In peace as in war, His Majesty is one of the hardest worked men in the Empire. From early morning until late at night, every moment of his time is fully occupied with matters of State or personal or domestic affairs.

Were His Majesty not an early riser he would not be able to accomplish the great volume of work which he performs every day.



Nor could he do all that he does were he not extremely abstemious in his habits.

It may be recalled that early in the war he commanded that no wines, spirits, or beer should be consumed in any of his Palaces. The example that he set in that respect was worthy of him but, alas! it was not followed as it might have been.

An omnivorous reader of newspapers, His Majesty goes through a dozen or more papers daily. While reading, he makes voluminous notes and asks his secretaries to give him full information on subjects which appeal to him. He is specially interested in English history.

A born organizer, His Majesty does not dread details. When King Edward's sudden death left the Court in chaos, he placed himself at the helm of affairs and gave all the necessary orders in connection with his father's funeral, deciding all questions of precedence, tradition, etiquette, and usage.

A fluent speaker, King George always utters the right word at the right moment. He seldom reads set speeches painstakingly prepared for him. His famous "Wake up England" speech, delivered at the Guildhall soon after he became Prince of Wales, opened the eyes of the British people, to his talents as an orator.

A few years later, in the same great hall, upon his return from his Indian tour, he declared :—

"I cannot help thinking from all I have heard and seen, that the task of governing India will be made the easier if we on our part infuse into it a wider element of sympathy. I will venture to predict that to such sympathy there will be an ever abundant and genuine response."

His Majesty is in the habit of keeping his own counsel until he has made up his mind to a course of action. Thus every one was surprised when he suddenly announced his intention of renouncing all enemy titles and changing the name of his Dynasty from "Saxe-Coburg" to "Windsor."

Possessing great gifts of discretion and tact, the King shows no preference for any of the Parliamentary parties. He is equally

impartial, in his immediate entourage. His circle of friends, comparatively small, is composed pretty evenly of conspicuous figures of the Government and Opposition.

In private life, His Majesty is careful about expenditure, exceedingly simple in his tastes and habits, level-headed and judicial-minded. His work done, he likes to get away from the officials and strangers and lead a peaceful life in the bosom of his family, which is closely knit together.

His Majesty's ideal of contentment is to sit of an evening smoking a cigarette, book in hand, with his loved ones gathered around him, in front of a cheerful fire at home. He does not care for week-end visits, and gives a very limited portion of his time to society. He is not specially keen upon games, but is not averse from playing billiards or bridge or going to the theatre to while away a social evening.

The King-Emperor is devoted to out-of-door sports of every description. As a shot he has a world-wide reputation. He plays tennis with ability far above the average, enjoys yachting and horse racing, and is a good swimmer and angler. He is an enthusiastic motorist and prefers a motor to any other form of conveyance—except, perhaps, a battleship.

Philately is the King's chief hobby, and he has a very large collection of stamps which he has been acquiring since he was a cadet on the *Britannia*. One of the greatest living authorities on stamps, he was consulted by the Dominion authorities when he visited Canada about the change of stamps necessitated by Queen Victoria's death, and is the author of a treatise on the "Postal Adhesive Issues of the Reign of Edward VII." He rarely misses attending stamp exhibitions, and lent a portion of his own collection for an exhibition organized at Calcutta in 1908 by the Countess of Minto, the Vicereine. He also takes a keen interest in adding to his collection of comic pictures, posters, and mechanical toys.

Like the late King Edward, who was famed as "the best dressed gentleman in Europe," the King-Emperor is extremely careful about





H. I. M. THE QUEEN-EMPRESS.

being at all times and on all occasions strictly correct in every detail of dress. He is specially particular about his shoes.

The King's large wardrobe includes a variety of suits for town, country, and sporting wear, the last made of homespun tweeds in order to encourage home industries. He has a great many more naval uniforms than any other living person. Being Honorary Colonel in many foreign regiments in addition to holding rank in the British Army, he has many military uniforms. Then there are the robes of the British Orders of which he is the head, and of the Foreign Orders to which he belongs.

~~This, then, is~~ our Sovereign-Lord the King-Emperor—a man who has travelled more widely than most of his subjects—a man who possesses intimate, first-hand knowledge of the needs and aspirations of the farthestmost units of the Empire, and who is able to take a broad, humane view of Imperial affairs.

---

#### HER MAJESTY THE QUEEN-EMPRESS.

---

##### I.

Her Majesty Queen Mary has always been exceedingly popular. She is the first lady of British birth to be called to the Throne since Anne Hyde. Her mother, Princess Adelaide of Cambridge, a granddaughter of King George III and Queen Victoria's cousin, married the Duke of Teck. Princess Mary, born on May 26th, 1867, was their eldest child.

The "Princess Mary" spent her girlhood with her parents at White Lodge, Richmond Park, and was an assiduous student. She had a passion for history and the memoirs of great personages; and was keenly interested in architecture and historical monuments. Possessing a good soprano voice, she became an accomplished musician. She cultivated her talent for water-colour drawing while she was finishing her education in Florence from 1883 to 1885. She also, at that time, learned to speak Italian fluently—she already knew French and German, in addition to English.

Not content with giving her daughter "polish," the Duchess of Teck saw to it that the Princess gained a thorough knowledge of domestic science. "She will never need to do domestic work herself," she once explained, "but she must know how it should be done in order that she may be able to direct her household."

The Princess was fond of house parties, and was a great favourite with hostesses, because of her thoughtfulness and care to avoid, as much as she could, making trouble. It is said of her that she always went to the breakfast table instead of having her breakfast served in bed, was prompt at meals, and tried to set people at ease by making them forget that she was of a higher station than they. She was fond of dancing, but was not allowed to take part in sports, except to drive herself about behind a team of ponies, or to play bowls.

Princess Mary assisted her mother in her philanthropic work in the East End. Not hesitating to perform the humblest personal service, she would willingly go to sit beside a dying lad, or minister with her own hands to the need of any suffering person.

So much was the life of Princess Mary devoted to the service of others that it is related of her that once she and her mother, while walking in Richmond Park, came upon a poor, weak woman gathering firewood. Taking pity upon her because of her frail condition, the Duchess of Teck broke off dead branches from the trees and threw them on the ground, while Princess Mary gathered them together in a pile ready for the old woman to drag away.

Princess Mary spent a good deal of time with the children of the Prince of Wales (later our King-Emperor Edward VII), and no one was greatly surprised, therefore, when it was announced that she was betrothed to the Duke of Clarence, eldest son of the Heir-Appeant.

Almost immediately afterwards, His Royal Highness was stricken with influenza and died.

In May of the next year, upon the Princess's return to society, her engagement to the Duke of York, younger brother of the late Duke of Clarence, (now our King-Emperor), was announced. A couple of months later they were married in St. James's Chapel.

When the Duke and Duchess of York set sail for Australia on the *Ophir* in 1901, King Edward's parting words to them were: "Make your minds easy: we will look after the children." They had left four children behind them.

H. R. H. Prince Edward Albert Christian George Andrew Patrick David (now the Duke of Cornwall and Prince of Wales), named after his grandfather and great grandfather and the Patron Saints of England, Ireland, Scotland, and Wales; born June 23, 1894;

H. R. H. Prince Albert Frederick Arthur George, born December 14, 1895;

~~H. R. H.~~ Princess Victoria Alexandra Alice Mary, born April 25, 1897; and

H. R. H. Prince Henry William Frederick Albert, born March 3, 1900.

(H. R. H. Prince George Edward Alexander Edmund was born on December 20, 1902, more than a year after Their Royal Highnesses returned from the Australian tour; while H. R. H. Prince John Charles Francis was born on July 12, 1905, just three months before Her Royal Highness sailed for Bombay).

Every mother in India can imagine how the heart of their Sovereign lady must have been wrung at being parted from her little son so soon after his birth. Yet so desirous was she that the Indian tour should be a success that she never let anyone see her ever-present anxiety for the infant she had left behind.

During the Royal tour in India, at the time of the Coronation Darbar, the Prince and Princess Mary lived at Marlborough House with their grandmother, Queen Alexandra, who is deeply devoted to them.

---

## II.

There is no doubt that the Queen's graciousness has had much to do with the popularity of the Royal Family. She always speaks the right word and does the right thing. Thus, during the Royal visit to Edinburgh, she won the hearts of the Scottish people by a thoughtful action.

A woman who was carrying a few sprigs of white heather at the garden party at which she was a guest, in a moment of enthusiasm, let them fall at Queen Mary's feet, expecting that the Queen would step on them. Her Majesty saw the act, stopped instantly and stooped and picked up a sprig of the heather, while the Prince of Wales, who accompanied her, gathered up the rest and presented them to his mother. The Queen thanked the lady. "I saw you drop it. Good luck to you," she said. And she carried the white heather about with her during the rest of the afternoon.

The Queen-Empress is an omniverous reader. She does not care much for novels, but chooses, usually, books dealing with travel and history, and has built up an excellent library at Windsor Castle. By special arrangement a selection of new books is sent to her, every week, wherever the Court may happen to be in residence.

Much of the success that has attended the Royal tours has been due to the fact that she had read, in advance, everything she could get hold of relating to the countries, cities, and even remote villages that were in the itinerary. Time and again, in India and in the Colonies and Dominions, she astonished officials who had lived there for years by displaying, in conversing with them, knowledge of the people and of the country which even some of them did not possess. Needless to say, Her Majesty's knowledge of them and their ways greatly endeared her to the people of the lands she visited.

Her Majesty was so eager to come into personal contact with Indians when she went out to India that, as soon as she knew definitely that she was going, she began to study *Hindustani* and acquired enough of that language for occasional conversation. In that respect she followed the precedent set by Her Majesty Queen-Empress Victoria, who took the trouble to learn *Hindustani*, even though she could not visit India.

While in India Her Majesty took every opportunity to see the real India, and if the opportunity did not present itself, she manufactured it. Thus, at Delhi one morning, it is said that the Queen, on leaving camp, directed her chauffeur to keep on turning to



the right and left until he reached the bazar. Since neither the chauffeur nor the A.-D.-C., who accompanied her, knew the locality, the party soon lost its way. That was just what the Queen-Empress wished, and she would not allow them to turn back, but bade them drive on and on slowly, in and out of the narrow lanes of the bazar, and saw the people of our land living their own lives in their own surroundings, without any preparations having been made in anticipation of her visit.

The same thing happened in other places. At one village the Queen alighted from her car and entered a farm-house and watched the women grinding corn and baking *chapaties*.

The speech that Queen Mary made at Delhi, breathing of sympathy and affection for the people of India, came from Her Majesty's heart. I am told that had the officials had their way, the Queen-Empress's reply to the address of welcome would have been couched in stilted, official phraseology. Indeed, as is customary in such cases, a draft reply was sent together with the advance copy of the address. But when Her Majesty, on her way, read the words which officialdom would have put into her mouth, she promptly decided to prepare her own reply. And she did.

When at home the Queen-Empress takes a personal interest in the household arrangements of the Palace. Every morning Her Majesty has an interview with the house-keeper and is kept informed of all the details concerning the house-keeping arrangements at the various Royal residences. The menus of all the meals are brought to her, and if she considers a dish too expensive or not desirable for other reasons, she crosses it off. She will not permit any extravagance, especially at a time of crisis when the people are in want. As soon as the war began the meals at the Royal Palace were cut down to what was considered the very limit of simplicity, and the money saved was expended upon charity connected with carrying on the great conflict.

Her Majesty dresses simply, but in exquisite taste, and does not approve of extremes of fashion. She has scarcely altered her way of

dressing her fine, luxuriant hair since she first put it up. She loves diamonds, which are particularly becoming to her; and it may have been noticed that she seldom wears other gems. She has a beautiful high crown of alternate Maltese crosses and *fleur de lis*, and a lattice-work dog-collar of diamonds which she specially cherishes.

The Queen-Empress is very methodical, and never allows personal or formal correspondence to accumulate. Every letter is answered as far as possible, on the day it is received. All her letters are labelled, dated, and filed away the day they are answered, and a certain number of them are destroyed once a quarter, while the rest are sent to be stored at Windsor Castle.

---

### III.

Her Majesty's natural gifts as an organizer, developed under the affectionate care and guidance of her mother, the Duchess of Teck, found the fullest scope during the war. Another Queen may have contented herself with lending her name as patroness to the many enterprises connected with the conflict, and by so doing would no doubt have insured their prosperity. But she was too forceful, too practical, too eager to be of real use, to be contented with that. Not only did she act as patroness and attend charitable functions organized to raise funds for one purpose or another, but, as she went about unostentatiously, her quick eye saw needs and she suggested means to supply them, and after her own initiative started valuable enterprises and her enthusiasm kept them going.

One of the first things Queen Mary did was to organize relief work for the tens of thousands of women who had been engaged in luxury trades, and who were thrown out of work almost as soon as the war began. She organized the "Queen's Work for Women Fund," whose object, as described by her in her appeal to the women of Britain, was "to provide employment for as many as possible of the women of this country who have been thrown out of work by the war." A Committee was formed of well-known women:

Queen Mary kept in daily close touch with all its activities, inspecting its workrooms and training centres.

The women who were helped by the Fund were given relief in the form of work which would render them self-supporting. If they could not do the kind of work available for them, they were taught to do it, and paid while learning.

To show the far-reaching results of the Queen-Empress's activity, a single instance may be cited. Her Majesty commissioned the Committee to secure for her a great quantity of woollen belts which ~~she proposed to give to the soldiers~~. This order enabled the Committee to provide work for a large number of spinners who otherwise would have been idle, and other unemployed women in various cities were able to earn money making up the woollen belts, while firms that otherwise would have had to close their doors offered tenders for portions of the job, and were able to keep their heads above water. Thus, in executing this one commission given by the Queen, hundreds of women found profitable employment. Altogether over 300 branches of the Queen's Work for Women Fund were established in the United Kingdom.

Another organization started by Her Majesty early in the war was Queen Mary's Needlework Guild. Properly speaking, it was an extension of the London Needlework Guild, already in existence, of which the Queen was President, and in which she had for many years taken the keenest interest. She saw that there was great necessity to co-ordinate the individual efforts of the patriotic ladies who were knitting socks and sewing shirts and making other comforts for soldiers. She knew that these articles must be made, and made in great quantities and without loss of time. But she did not think it fair that the need should be supplied by ladies of high degree while the industrial women who depended upon such work for their living were idle.

It was Her Majesty's idea that the garments should be bought in the shops, and that voluntary workers should interfere with trade as little as possible. They were given lists of articles which could

not readily be had from the shops, and asked to contribute them as their voluntary offering. As the result of the Queen's efforts, a stream of parcels poured into the Guild centres. Over 1,100,000 articles were received in ten months and despatched to troops at the front and wounded heroes in hospitals.

The Queen-Empress personally inspected many of the articles that were sent in to be forwarded, to make sure that they were suitable, and would prove comfortable to the recipients. She was careful that thick garments were not sent to soldiers sweltering in the Arabian desert, and thin garments to men battling in snow and sleet on the Western front.

At Her Majesty's suggestion a surgical department was organized to make bandages of all kinds and other surgical requirements. As the war went on the Surgical Branch of Queen Mary's Needlework Guild proved indispensable, and its work widened and spread, depôts being opened at various places.

One of the charities with which Her Majesty was connected was the Officers' Families' Fund, to give financial help to the loved ones left behind by officers who had answered their country's call. In addition to money grants, hospitality was offered to officers' wives and children, with or without a nurse, and to boys and girls without their mothers.

It would require an encyclopædia to describe Her Majesty's manifold war-activities, so numerous and varied were they. She was unremitting in visiting the wounded and sick soldiers in hospitals. She was especially solicitous about the comfort and welfare of the wounded Indian soldiers.

I remember when I went to Netley Hospital for the first time, Her Majesty had just paid a surprise visit to our wounded countrymen lying there on beds of agony. She had walked through ward after ward, distributing gifts to our heroes. To one she had given a turban—to another a wool sleeping-hood—a Muslim was happy over a packet of cigarettes—a Gurkha over a fancy bag of spices—a Sikh over a comb or some cocoanut oil for his hair. The place was buzzing with

suppressed excitement, and in the heart of every man glowed a fire of love, not only for Queen Mary as the Consort of the Sovereign, but as an angel of mercy and benevolence. Not once had she said or done anything that injured religious or racial or caste prejudices of the hundreds of soldiers of all races, religions and castes, who lay helpless and suffering in that great hospital, more than 6,000 miles distant from home, family and friends.

The Queen Empress's sympathy extended across the seas to the families of our fallen men and found expression in the beautiful coloured print of *herself* which she sent to some thirty thousand Indian women who lost their husbands, sons, or other relatives in the war. Each print bore a personal message in her own handwriting, reading as follows:—

“In sorrow and sympathy my thoughts fly across the seas to my sisters in India, that beautiful land which I have twice visited and love so well. I send you this to do honour to a very brave soldier of the Empire who died for you and for us in the glorious fight for truth and freedom against tyranny and broken faith.

MARY, R. I.”

Her Majesty's faculty of putting herself in the other person's place made her discern many little ways of alleviating the misery of the wounded soldiers. For instance, she suggested that convalescent English soldiers and sailors should be sent to hospitals in the neighbourhood of their homes, so that their relatives and friends could readily visit them and, by their presence, cheer them up and thus hasten their recovery. This suggestion was followed. When Queen Mary and Princess Christian were offered a fully equipped base hospital, they presented it to the Navy to be used for wounded and sick officers and men.

Due to Queen Mary's personal efforts, countless parcels found their way to the front—parcels of newspapers, books, belts, socks, and food—indeed, of everything a soldier in the trenches could need. She scraped lint and rolled bandages and sewed and knit garments

indefatigably, earning for herself the affectionate name of "Knitting Mary" among the soldiers who benefited so much from her industry.

Early in the war Her Majesty's cousin, Prince Maurice of Battenberg, was killed in action, and before hostilities ended, many who were near and dear to her and to the King-Emperor perished—some most horribly.

Through all her personal sorrows, however, Her Majesty was first and foremost the mother of the sorrowing subjects. Never before had a Queen so identified herself with the weal and woe of the commoner.

---

### THE QUEEN MOTHER.

---

#### I.

The Queen Mother, Her Majesty Queen Alexandra, devoted her efforts in the war mainly to work connected in one way or another with the nursing service, though she was ever ready to aid a deserving war charity by personally attending and opening functions organized to raise money.

Queen Alexandra's Nursing Service—the senior service—consisting of about 280 members, was called up at the outbreak of hostilities. This service had been organized by Queen Alexandra after the Boer War out of the old Army nursing service, which had not proved adequate to the occasion during the fighting in South Africa.

As President of the British Red Cross Society, Queen Alexandra issued, two days after the war broke out, a public appeal which resulted in a golden harvest. Her Majesty was greatly aided, in this matter, by Lord Northcliffe, who placed his entire means of publicity at her disposal—a service which he continued throughout the war.

A little less than a year after the conflict began, the Queen Mother organized the Queen Alexandra Relief Fund for War Nurses, to assist the nurses employed by the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, the British Red Cross Society, or the Joint Committee of both those bodies, who had suffered in any way through attending the wounded.

GENERAL VOLUME.



QUEEN ALEXANDRA.





Queen Alexandra permitted the Eastern League to work under her patronage, and took a great personal interest in its work. Formed in the middle of October, 1914, by a number of Indian and English ladies in London, that League continued its work until after the war was over. It sent out parcels of comforts to Indian soldiers who were fighting in all the theatres of war, especially in France, and who were in hospitals or convalescent homes, or prisoners in the hands of the enemy.

The parcels contained garments of all kinds, knit or sewn by the members of the League, hair oil and combs for Sikh soldiers, cigarettes for those who cared to smoke, spices, and Indian sweets. Thousands of parcels were sent out, and certainly contributed to the comfort and welfare of our soldiers during those terrible four years of war.

Like Queen Mary, the Queen Mother visited many hospitals and sought by every means in her power to make life bearable to the wounded and maimed heroes. She was able to dispense considerable charity through the sale of roses on Alexandra Day in commemoration of her coming to Britain in 1863 to be the bride of the late King Edward VII, then Prince of Wales.

Queen Alexandra lives simply and unostentatiously. She has a number of interests in life that absorb her attention. For instance, she passes hours at her model dairy at Sandringham, which is built and conducted along lines most approved in Denmark; and all the butter for the various Royal Palaces is made there. Her Majesty has always made it a point to send hampers of cream, butter, new-laid eggs, and other dainties to the young Princes when they have been at school, or when the ships on which they passed their naval training have been in port.

Another of the Queen Mother's hobbies is the school of arts and crafts which she conducts for the sons and daughters of her servants at Sandringham. They learn to turn out lace, embroidery, and needlework, tapestry, cabinet work, and basket work, and the articles they make, all of the highest class, are stamped with Queen Alexandra's

monogram and sold. She is herself an enthusiastic photographer, as, indeed, are all the members of the Royal Family, all possessing large collections of snap-shots taken by themselves.

The Queen Mother is very fond of collecting mascots, which have included, from time to time, a stray black cat of plebeian origin, a solemn old owl, and a number of ornaments representing fowls.

Her Majesty Queen Alexandra loves pearls and coloured stones, particularly amethysts, of which she possesses a beautiful parure in her private collection.

---

## II.

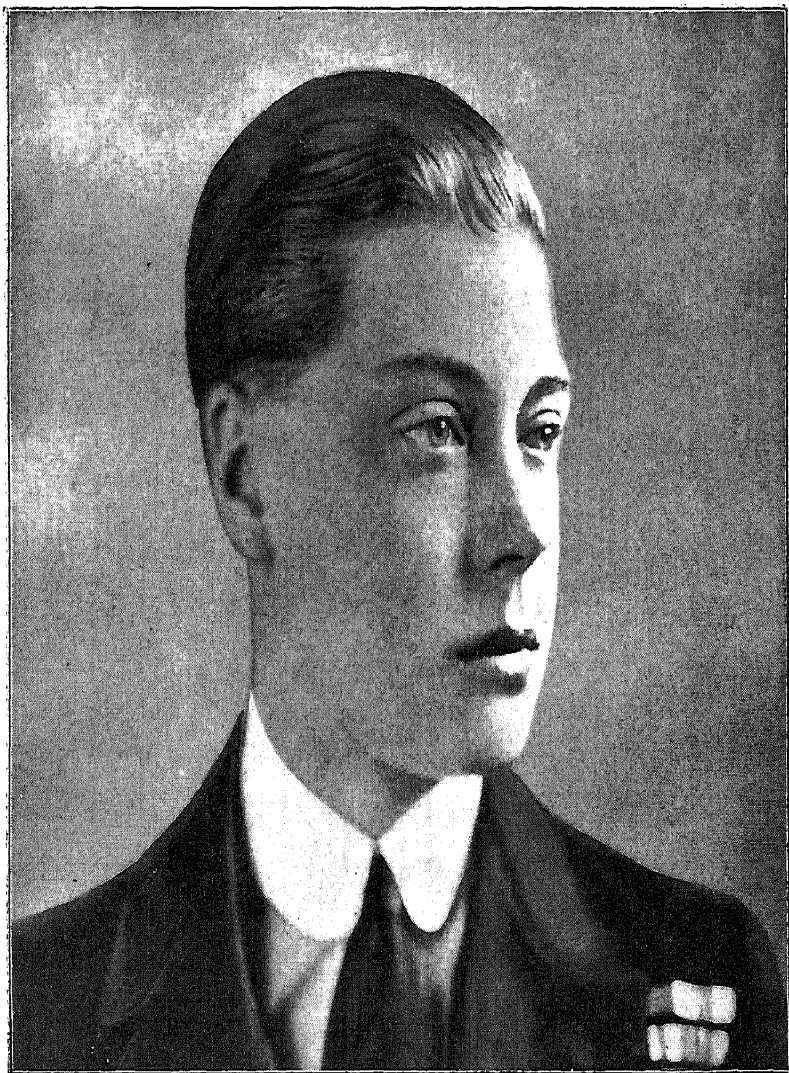
Their Royal Highnesses the Prince of Wales and Prince Albert were the only two of the King's sons who were old enough to take part in the war. They both joined the British forces when hostilities broke out, the Prince of Wales selecting to serve on land and Prince Albert on sea.

The conduct of H. R. H. the Prince of Wales throughout the war gave him a place in the hearts of the people he is destined to rule over which no other Heir-Apparent to the British Throne has ever before occupied. It gave him a reality—marked him out as one of the people, sharing their joys and sorrows.

His Royal Highness went to France almost immediately upon the outbreak of hostilities. He was, at the time, a student at Oxford where he had gone when he was a little over eighteen, fresh from his naval training, and was to have returned for another term at that University.

It might have been expected that, owing to his naval training, the Prince of Wales would have chosen to enter the Navy when the call of his country thrilled him, as it did so many of his fellow students. Instead, however, he was given the rank of Second Lieutenant in the Army, and was gazetted, on November 17, 1914, as aide-de-camp to General Sir John (now Lord) French's staff. Those who knew him as a child were not surprised, however, for they recollected that he

GENERAL VOLUME.



THE PRINCE OF WALES.



had, almost from birth, a predilection for the Army. He learned drill when he was a small boy, from an old piper who had served in the Scots Guards.

If anyone thought that His Royal Highness was to be kept far from the danger-zone, he was quickly disillusioned. For one thing, he absolutely refused to be coddled. He demanded that he should be allowed to share the dangers of the soldiers who were doing the actual fighting, and his will prevailed. Throughout the war he stood shoulder to shoulder with his comrades in arms, and by his simplicity of manner and unassuming spirit won the love and respect of all who came in contact with him.

Many interesting stories are told of His Royal Highness's army experience. For instance, it is related that when he first went out on a route march with the Grenadier Guards the other officers whispered among themselves that they would have to carry him back home. He started off with a swing at a quick pace, and kept it up throughout the march, and arrived back at the barracks as fresh as when he started, while the veteran officers who had doubted his ability had to fall out and give up long before the march was over.

A touching story about the Prince of Wales went the rounds during the war. It was said that a motor car driven by a young officer along a muddy French road came upon a weary British private carrying all his equipment upon his back and his rifle in his hands. The car stopped alongside him and the officer invited him to jump in and have a ride for a change. After a while the conversation became intimate and confidential, and the private drew a photograph out of the pocket just over his heart, showed it to the officer, and explained that it was his "girl." The two talked about the original of the photograph, and finally the "Tommy" asked if the officer had a sweetheart. "No," was the reply, "but I can show you my father's photograph." And from the pocket just over his heart he extracted a photograph of King George V. The officer was the Prince of Wales.

His Royal Highness's work in connection with the war did not cease when the hostilities were over. Since the Armistice he has, at various times and places, reviewed troops and unveiled war memorials. One such ceremony of particular interest to Indians was the unveiling at Brighton on February 2nd, 1921, of the memorial to Hindu and Sikh soldiers who died while being cared for in hospitals in that place. The memorial took the form of a *chuttri* erected on the downs about five miles from Brighton, on the spot where our soldiers who had made the supreme sacrifice had been cremated.

His Royal Highness was born on Saturday, June 23rd, 1894, at White Lodge, Richmond.

It is related that the Prince of Wales received his first deputation when he was seven years old. The occasion was the hundredth anniversary of the founding of the Duke of York's School. The boys attending that institution, dressed in red coats, called upon him and presented him with an album containing pictures illustrating the history of the school. He did not make a formal speech, but behaved as a boy among boys, and enjoyed the occasion quite as much as did the members of the deputation.

From his childhood the Prince of Wales has been a good public speaker. He inherited from his grandfather, King Edward VII, the faculty of saying the right word at the right time, and this has had much to do with making him the popular idol that he is. He also inherits the linguistic gifts of his family.

The Prince of Wales has, from the beginning of his studies, shown great mechanical genius. He was particularly keen upon studying elementary science and had a genuine talent for physics.

Their Majesties have always been insistent that their children should, from babyhood, have systematic physical culture. It was natural, therefore, that the Prince of Wales should grow up physically "fit" and with a love for athletics. At an early age he learned to ride on a little Shetland pony named "Midget." He learned to swim when he was quite young, at the Bath Club, in Berkeley Street, London. He is accustomed to taking violent exercise daily, and is

capable of making a good record against most amateurs in long-distance running and walking calling for great endurance. He did not let soldiering interfere with his exercise, but, almost every morning, took a few miles' run. Of course, when he was serving with his battalion in the Grenadier Guards, he found it difficult to do this, and it was entirely out of the question when he was in the trenches; but, except when he was actually in the front line, the Prince of Wales insisted upon taking his morning run, not without sometimes causing deep anxiety to those who were, to some extent at least, responsible for his safety. He is a fine shot, an enthusiastic cricketer, fond of golf, and a cyclist.

Enthusiastic, simple, and unspoilt, even now just a bit shy with strangers, quick at grasping the fundamentals of new subjects, "David," as he is addressed by his family, is not fond of pomp and ceremony.

As soon as he could manage to do so after being created a Knight of the Garter, he hurried into his flannels and rushed off to play cricket. He is a collector of postcards, and possesses one of the largest collections in the world, consisting of more than 10,000 cards.

The Prince of Wales has always expressed the highest ideals. When he was a little boy he declared to General Baden Powell that when he was King he would make three laws:—

"No one shall cut the tails of little dogs;

"There shall be no more fishing with hooks;

"No one shall use bearing reins to hurt the horses."

A Prince who would be so kind to dumb animals will surely be watchful of the welfare of his subjects when he is King. His Royal Highness does not lack power either in speech or writing. Like King George, he has gained his knowledge of men and life, has learned to judge character, individually and in the mass, by actual contact with people, by actual participation in events. This intimacy with the feelings of the people began when he was a boy. The Royal children had a cricket ground at Frogmore, and played matches with Eton and St. George's boys. There, too, a love for

seamanship was instilled in him. King Edward VII gave the Princes a brig named after himself, and they learned to navigate it on Virginian waters.

In his thirteenth year the Prince of Wales was entered as a Naval Cadet in the Royal Naval College at Osborne. About one-third of his time was devoted to seamanship, one-third to general educational subjects, and one-third to engineering. The engineering course especially appealed to him, since as has been mentioned, he had a leaning towards mechanics, and every day, clad in overalls, he spent happy hours in the shops. He learned the construction and management of marine engines, on a torpedo boat attached to the establishment. With his fellow-cadets he paid several visits to the Portsmouth dockyard and the fundamentals of ship-building were explained to him.

An anecdote that has been related on good authority shows how the Prince of Wales fell in with the plans that no favouritism should be shown him. While at the Naval College he fell ill, and a diet was ordered for him consisting of delicacies which were not given to other Cadets. His Royal Highness, however, stubbornly refused to eat them, though assured that the doctor had ordered them. The Commander intervened, but the Prince declared that his father had told him he must not have anything different from the other boys, and he would not disobey his instructions.

The Prince of Wales was at Osborne for two years, and then went to the Britannia Royal Naval College at Dartmouth. There he worked in the laboratories and workshops until he completed the full term of training and was pronounced fit for promotion to the rank of Midshipman, having learnt the rudiments of seamanship and engineering essential to every British Naval Officer.

It was fitting that the Heir to the British Throne should be appointed to join a ship named *Hindustan*. It was a battleship in the second division of the Home Fleet. As a Midshipman he received pay at the rate of 1s. and 9d. a day, less £5 a year for stoppages. It may be mentioned that King George deliberately selected a ship



for his eldest son on which he would be shown no more favour by the Captain than if he were the son of a tradesman. Royalty would avail him nothing. The only difference between his lot and that of his companions was that he had his meals with the Captain instead of in the ordinary mess, and slept in his own bed in a cabin instead of in a hammock. He submitted good-naturedly to being "hazed" on joining the ship. While visiting ports when on board the *Hindustan*, His Royal Highness was, on all occasions, considered as an officer of the Navy, and was allowed to accept only general invitations to officers. This did not alter the fact, however, that whenever H. M. S. *Hindustan* lay in harbour, she aroused a great deal of popular interest so long as she carried on board the Royal Midshipman. He concluded his cruise on the *Hindustan* shortly before Their Majesties went out to India, and spent a few days with his father and mother before they set sail. He continued his studies at York Cottage for several months, and then proceeded to Oxford, where he remained until the war broke out. He now holds the rank of Captain in the Royal Navy.

His Royal Highness had several red-letter days in his life during the routine of his naval training. One was on the occasion when he was invested with the insignia of a Knight of the Garter and another was when he was invested, at Carnarvon Castle, on July 13th, 1911, as Prince of Wales. The ceremonies incidental upon the latter function were beautiful and touching. Youth, parental tenderness, the symbols of chivalrous honour, grey castle walls, old in story and historical romance, all combined to impress the feelings of the people assembled. Every heart was touched when the boy Prince declared:—

"I am very young, but I have great examples before me. I have my dear father and my dear mother. I hope to do my duty."

Mr. Lloyd George had taught him to make that declaration in Welsh.

The Prince of Wales held his first inspection on June 27th, 1911,

when he paid a surprise visit to the Duke of York's School at Chelsea and reviewed the Colonial troops quartered there. He was cool and collected, and in one instance corrected a mistake on the part of an officer.

As soon as possible after the end of the war, His Royal Highness set off for a visit to Australia, returning by way of Canada. Since his return he has been King George's right hand, just as His Majesty had been his father's mainstay when he was Prince of Wales. The thoroughness with which the Heir to the Throne performs every task entrusted to him makes it possible to rely upon him implicitly to carry any undertaking to a successful conclusion.

Upon attaining his majority, which in the case of the Prince of Wales was on his eighteenth birthday, he came into possession of the large estate attaching to his possession as Duke of Cornwall.

Most of the estate is situated in London, and His Royal Highness took immediate steps to improve the housing conditions of his tenants. He makes frequent visits to Kennington, and follows the requirements and the improvements carefully. By virtue of his charter to the Duchy of Cornwall, he appoints the Sheriff of Cornwall, has his own council and officers, and no Bill specially affecting the county may be introduced in the House of Commons without his consent.

Part of the Prince of Wales's estate is situated in Cornwall. There His Royal Highness is carrying on experiments in mixed husbandry, breeding live stock and producing crops required to provide the variety of diet needed for a herd managed on modern lines.

On his eighteenth birthday the Prince of Wales also became entitled to have his own household, consisting of a Controller and Equerry, and two secretaries, in addition to a large staff of servants, including special pages, coachmen, grooms, and a chauffeur. His father gave him St. James's Palace for his London residence. For months before his birthday, Her Majesty Queen



GENERAL VOLUME.



PRINCE ALBERT.

Mary was busy ordering new furniture for his apartment at Windsor Castle.

As a Peer of the Realm, His Royal Highness is entitled to attend debates in the House of Lords, a right which he frequently exercises. He also goes often to the House of Commons to watch the proceedings in that Chamber. At Court Balls at Buckingham Palace he joins the State procession and, clad in uniform and wearing the insignia of the Order of the Garter, takes his seat on the King's right hand at the foot of the dais.

The Prince is at the head of many committees, and takes his duties seriously. He also continues to take a keen interest in the Scout movement, and recently has issued an appeal for funds which, at the time of writing, was meeting with generous response.

---

### III.

Prince Albert Frederick Arthur George, Their Majesties' second son, has adopted the Navy as his profession, and has already won his laurels for bravery. He was born on December 14, 1895.

Prince Albert finished his studies in the senior division at the Royal Naval College, Dartmouth, in 1912, and started, early in 1913, to make an extended cruise in a battleship in the North Sea and adjacent waters, the cruise lasting the greater part of that year.

Like the Prince of Wales, Prince Albert was fond of athletics. When at Balmoral, he went in for deer-stalking, rabbit-shooting, fishing and swimming. He is expert at swimming, being as much at home in the water as on the land, and is a fearless diver. Sometimes, in his boyhood, he and his elder brother were able to induce their father to accompany them in swimming, and on such occasions had great fun.

Prince Albert and Prince Henry, his younger brother, when at Balmoral Castle, also practiced shooting at a stag target every morning after breakfast, the bullet marks made by one being whitewashed over by the other. The practice consisted of five shots at a hundred yards. They were enthusiastic cyclists and did

considerable trick riding, delighting to ride backwards until Princess Mary felt sure that a collision was inevitable, and then cleverly starting to ride forward at exactly the right moment to avoid colliding.

Prince Albert was nineteen years old when the war began. He was on the battleship *Collingwood* at the battle of Jutland, and Admiral Jellicoe mentioned him in his despatch after that engagement among the officers recommended for commendation for services. The Prince now holds the rank of Lieutenant in the Royal Navy and Wing Commander in the Royal Air Force. He is personal A.-D.-C. to His Majesty the King, who, some time ago, created him Duke of York and, on his twenty-first birthday in 1916, invested him with the insignia of a Knight Companion of the Most Noble Order of the Garter. Prince Albert is a success as a public speaker, delivering his addresses with sincerity and earnestness, and keeping cool and unperturbed at the functions he attends in a formal capacity.

He is particularly interested in the welfare of sailors and industrial workers, and is president of influential societies maintained for the purpose of helping them.

Amidst his various duties, Prince Albert, or the Duke of York, as he is now known, manages to find time for sports. He is exceedingly fond of hunting, and has won distinction as a tennis player.

---

#### IV.

Princess Victoria Alexandra Alice Mary, their Majesties' third child and only daughter, was a "Jubilee baby"—that is to say, she was born in Queen Victoria's "Jubilee" year, on April 25, 1897. Never before in her father's dynasty has the British Sovereign had but one daughter, and Princess Mary, therefore, occupies a unique position in English history.

Like her brothers, Princess Mary is exceedingly fond of swimming. A little bathing pavilion was erected on the beach at Snettisham, near Sandringham, and there the Royal children went

GENERAL VOLUME.



PRINCESS MARY.





swimming almost daily whenever they were staying at York Cottage. Princess Mary also cycles, plays tennis, and is a good rider. As a young girl she was often to be seen riding in Rotten Row, Hyde Park, her thick, long plaits of golden hair distinguishing her from the crowd. Tall, fair, vivacious and fond of out-door life, the Princess has taken after her Guelph ancestors in looks more than any of her brothers. She has a strong personality, and, in her childhood, was the autocrat of the nursery. The Princes were devoted to her, and would follow her lead unquestioningly. Even as a little child she appreciated, at its full value, the dignity of her position. On being asked if she would like a little sister, she quickly replied that she would not mind having a sister, but that she would not care for another Princess.

Princess Mary has inherited her mother's deft fingers and love of domesticity. She is an expert at all kinds of stitching and intricate knitting. She has a great talent for modelling in clay, and has a studio of her own where she works at her sculpture. Queen Mary discourages advanced and scientific studies for young women, and has seen to it that her daughter became accomplished in the Victorian sense of the word—in languages, keeping careful accounts of all expenditure and making up parcels for the poor. The Princess has a Savings Bank account at the Post Office, and since early childhood has conducted her own money transactions. She keeps a diary, and makes sketches in it of scenes or pictures that attract her fancy. She has been observed more than once at the Royal Academy, especially before pictures of Royalty, making notes in a blue-covered diary.

Princess Mary, like the other members of the Royal Family, was untiring in her war work. She rendered valuable assistance to her mother in connection with Queen Mary's Needlework Guild. Twice a week she went to a munition canteen where she served as unostentatiously as if she had been a girl of the people giving her half-day away from business to patriotic work. She is also greatly interested in Red Cross work, and possesses the first and second

badges for First Aid work. She conducted a class of ambulance workers at Buckingham Palace, who all held "First Aid" certificates.

It must be remembered that Princess Mary was still a very young lady when the war broke out in 1914. She was then only just seventeen. Naturally she could not do public work of the sort done by Queen Mary and Queen Alexandra, although she often accompanied her mother on such occasions, but she reached her majority seven months before the Armistice was signed, and by that time had begun to appear at public functions. She especially took a keen interest in the Girl Guides and Boy Scouts movements, and did all she could to encourage them. The Queen permitted her to become Patroness of the Girls' Patriotic Union of Secondary Schools, founded for the purpose of doing something for the men at the front. The Union represented 329 schools, and its members helped, by active service and by self-denial, giving up their pocket money, prizes, sweetmeats, and other luxuries, devoting the money thus saved to their work of mercy.

Princess Mary continues to take keen interest in the work of the Volunteer Aid Detachments of the nursing service, and also in the Girl Guides movement. As Colonel-in-Chief of the Royal Scots Regiment, she keeps in close touch with all the regimental institutions, especially the associations for helping soldiers' dependents.

Like her father and brothers, the Princess loves hunting, and in season rides with the West Norfolk Hounds.

---

## V.

Prince Henry William Frederick Albert, born on March 31, 1900, has only recently come much before the public eye. He studied for more than three years at a private school at Broadstairs. He is an all round sportsman, a polo-player, a tent-pegger, and, like his elder brothers, a swimmer and cricketer. He shone in public competitions at Eton. He is charming and unaffected in his manner. The tallest of the King's sons, measuring fully six feet, the Prince has a fine head and shows considerable musical talent. He does not like to

GENERAL VOLUME.



PRINCE HENRY.

GENERAL VOLUME.



PRINCE GEORGE.

be baffled, but puzzles out the trick of everything that he sees that mystifies him. Thus, when he sees a conjurer give an entertainment, he will not rest satisfied until he learns the secrets of his performance. Prince Henry made his first speech in October, 1920, at a Mansion House meeting on behalf of the Royal National Orthopaedic Hospital.

---

## VI.

Prince George Edward Alexander Edmund, who was born on December 20, 1902, went to school at Broadstairs with Prince Henry, and is now a Naval Cadet. Prince John, born on July 12, 1905, died after a very brief illness on January 1919.

---

## VII.

Few persons know that the younger children of the King of England are, strictly speaking, commoners, unless and until they are personally raised to the peerage. The eldest son is born Duke of Cornwall. The younger children, so long as they remain commoners, may vote at an election and may even be elected to the House of Commons. If they were to commit a crime, they would be tried by a common jury, and not by the House of Lords or the Court of the High Lord Steward. The only members of the Royal Family who enjoy special advantages by law are the King's wife, his eldest son, his eldest daughter, and his eldest son's wife.

All the children of the Royal Family have been brought up to be contented with simple amusements. They have gone to see the sights of London that the poorest children are taken to as a treat—the Tower, the Zoo, the Museums, the exhibitions, the pantomimes, theatres, and cinemas, paying their money at the entrance and taking part in the side-shows. They dress plainly and wear only clothes made by British workmen of British materials. As little ones they played with good, serviceable toys, and not only received gifts on their birthdays but presented them to poor children.

## CHANGE IN THE NAME OF THE ROYAL HOUSE.

In July, 1917, King George announced his intention of changing the name of his House and Family, and discontinuing all German titles. In pursuance of that determination, he proclaimed that his Dynasty was, in future, to be known as the House of Windsor. To carry out his intention of renouncing all German degrees, styles, dignities, titles, honours, and appellations, new, distinctively English titles were bestowed upon the members of the Royal Family. Their Highnesses Princess Victoria and Princess Marie Louise of Schleswig Holstein, it was announced, would drop the latter portion of their names and would be known merely as Princess Victoria and Princess Marie Louise, respectively. The Princesses of the Royal Family who bore the title of Duchess of Saxony relinquished that title. The Duke of Teck became Marquis of Cambridge; Prince Alexander of Teck, the Earl of Athlone; Prince Louis of Battenberg, the Marquis of Milford Haven; and Prince Alexander of Battenberg, the Marquis of Carisbrook. Royal Warrants were prepared granting authority to Colonel His Highness the Duke of Teck and his descendants and the other descendants of his father Major-General His Highness the late Duke of Teck, to assume the surname of Cambridge; to Admiral His Serene Highness Prince Louis of Battenberg and his descendants and the other descendants of his father, His Grand Ducal Highness the late Prince Alexander of Hesse, as British subjects, to assume the surname of Mountbatten; and Her Grand Ducal Highness Princess Louise of Battenberg, grand-daughter of Queen Victoria and daughter of the late Princess Alice, to be known only as the Marchioness of Milford Haven.

All the members of the Royal House of Windsor gave of their best to the British cause during the Great War. On August 5th, 1914, Princess Victoria turned the drawing rooms of Marlborough House into a workroom for making garments for wounded soldiers and sailors. The Princess Royal, as President of the County of London Section of the British Red Cross Society, concentrated her efforts upon work in connection with that mission of mercy. A

hospital car, pronounced the most perfect in its appointments ever put into operation in any war, was organized by Princess Christian. Princess Victoria chose to assist the Ladies' Auxiliary Committee of the Y. M. C. A. in working out their schemes for recreation huts. Princess Arthur of Connaught became a Red Cross probationer in St. Mary's Hospital. Princess Alexander of Teck, the Countess of Athlone, devoted her energies to the commissariat of the Windsor munition workers. This does not mean that the Royal Family did nothing else. On the contrary, their names were connected with every war charity as patronesses or active workers. They did not hedge themselves about with pomp and circumstance, but went about among the people as if belonging to them, identifying themselves with their weal and woe. What wonder that the British Royal Family occupies a unique place in the affections of those over whom they have been set to rule.

---





## CHAPTER III.

---

### BRITISH STATESMEN AT THE HELM DURING THE WAR.

---

#### I.

#### MR. H. H. ASQUITH.

WHEN the war began, Mr. Asquith was in his 62nd year. Born at Morley (Yorkshire) on September 12, 1852, of the commercial section of the middle class, his rise in life was due entirely to sheer force of character, ability, industry, and sedulous self-help, and not at all to outside influence or family connection.

At the City of London School, which he attended, he captured every available prize, among them a scholarship to Balliol College, Oxford. There he became one of Mr. Jowett's favourite pupils and achieved a long series of academic triumphs. Leaving Oxford in 1876, he joined Lincoln's Inn. Not having any influential friends in the legal profession, he had to serve many weary years of apprenticeship, waiting for fortune to smile upon him. Success did finally come, and he became the envy of the profession.

Mr. Asquith entered Parliament in 1886, as Member for East Fife, a seat which he held without interruption until he was defeated at the "Khaki election" of 1918. His early career in Parliament was a quiet one, although everybody recognized his ability. No one dreamt, in those days, that, at the end of six years, during which he had made scarcely half a dozen speeches in the House of Commons, he would be given so important an office as that of Home Secretary.

Before Mr. Asquith had been long in office, he justified Mr. Gladstone's faith in him. One of his first acts was to make a

searching investigation into the conditions of labour, especially in dangerous and underpaid trades, and to have a Factory and Workshops Act passed materially improving the conditions of the work-people. He introduced the Welsh Disestablishment Bill in 1894, and came, for the first time, in conflict with Mr. Lloyd George, who felt that the proposals did not go far enough. That conflict did not, however, prevent the two latter becoming allies and working together for almost two decades.

When Mr. Asquith resigned office in 1895 he returned to the practice of law in defiance of precedent, and felt no humiliation in pleading before judges who erst while had been his subordinates.

Upon the resignation of Sir Henry Campbell Bannerman, Mr. Asquith became the Prime Minister. As the result of the rejection by the House of Lords of the Budget of 1909, containing Mr. Lloyd George's famous land clauses, a General Election took place, at which the Liberal Party was returned with a majority of 100.

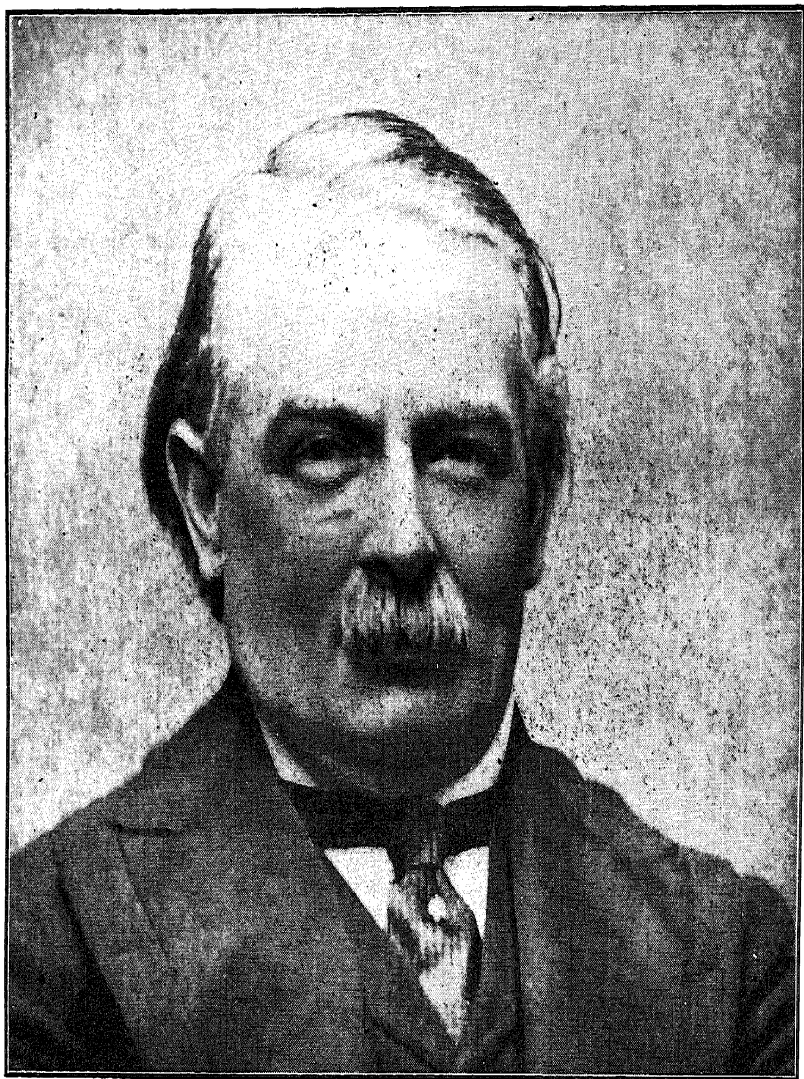
A hot controversy followed regarding the demand from the Sovereign for a guarantee for the creation of Peers to ensure the passing of the Parliament Act. In the midst of this political turmoil King Edward died, but his demise did not interfere with the placing of that Act upon the Statute Book.

During the same session Mr. Asquith took an unprecedented step. Following the resignation of Colonel Seeley, the War Minister, in consequence of the threatened strike of officers at the Curragh (Ireland) over Irish Home Rule, he himself assumed the vacant office. When the war began in August, 1914, therefore, he was at the head of the Empire's fighting machinery. One of his first acts was to secure Lord Kitchener's consent to serve as Minister of War.

Persons who finally succeeded in hounding Mr. Asquith out of office declared that his evenly balanced temperament became almost perpetually poised as he grew older, and that his answer to all questions was "wait and see." Reticent by nature, even the best of his friends often wished that he would make fuller disclosures—would discuss matters on which he chose to preserve silence. That, coupled



GENERAL VOLUME.



MR. LLOYD GEORGE.

with his disposition to balance one act, one exigency, against another, which made him pause and ponder long before making a move, must have proved maddening to those of his colleagues who wished to be free to make quick decisions and to act upon them quickly, and to possess the power to make all departments carry out the decision.

His faults are, however, of his qualities, as the French would say. He is patient, serene, long-suffering under abuse, and dignified in the most difficult position, even when treated with gross disrespect by men infinitely inferior to him in calibre. His intellect is so keen, his senses so alert, that he always makes the right reply, without hesitation or vagueness. His memory is so retentive that he always seems to remember, in debate, every word he has used on previous occasions. His grasp of Parliamentary detail is nothing short of marvellous. He has a natural bent for bringing order out of chaos.

Some day the British people will realize how much they owe to this man who carried them through the earlier portion of the war, and they will then raise a statue to his memory.

---

## II.

### MR. LLOYD GEORGE.

When hostilities broke out, Mr. Lloyd George was Chancellor of the Exchequer, and had to take recourse to methods, on the one hand, to prevent the cataclysm from causing a financial panic, and on the other, to secure the money to finance the war. As soon as the character of the preparations made by Germany was realized, and it was found that only a superhuman effort to speed up the production of armaments, especially that of high explosives, could save the situation, he was asked to become the Minister of Munitions. Almost midway in the war, he succeeded Mr. Asquith and thenceforward shouldered the heavy responsibility of finding the men, money, and munitions to see the British nation and Empire through some of the blackest days of the struggle to final victory.

As an intimate friend of the Prime Minister said to me some time ago, the greater the crisis, the gloomier other people became,

the more buoyant was Mr. Lloyd George. That robust faith in himself and in his cause, that ability to keep cheerful in direst difficulty and to communicate his cheerfulness to his colleagues, more than any other quality he possessed, pulled his people through the most terrible struggle in which they had ever been engaged. That same quality, more than any other, has raised the man from straitened circumstances to be the head of the greatest Empire that ever existed.

Mr. David Lloyd George was born at Newchurch, Lancashire, a Manchester suburb, in 1863. His father, William George, Master of the Hope Unitarian School, a native of Liverpool and of Trolld-yr-Allt, Wales, died suddenly of pneumonia, leaving his widow with two babies (the eldest, David, was only four years old), and a child unborn. Left penniless and friendless among strangers, she took the two boys and returned to her old home at Llanystumdwy, Wales, where the bereft family found shelter and love in the humble cottage of her brother, Mr. Richard Lloyd, the village shoemaker.

The family was very poor. Mr. Lloyd George, in a reminiscent mood, has himself written: "We seldom ate fresh meat, and I remember that our greatest luxury was half an egg for each child on Sunday morning."

The uncle devoted his whole life and time, energy and money to educating his sister's children and giving them a start in life. He studied school-books himself so as to be able to help them learn their lessons—even to the point of studying law so he could be of assistance to David, when it was decided that he should adopt the legal profession. Richard Lloyd, besides being the village shoemaker, was the Minister of the "Church of the Disciples," a small Baptist sect, and David very nearly decided to become Minister of the little chapel as his uncle's successor, actually occupying the pulpit on several occasions.

With Richard Lloyd's assistance David was able to pass the law examinations, and opened a little office at Portmadoc and began to practice as a solicitor in 1884. He was inundated with clients in

distress, but, since he never asked them for a fee, and, naturally, they did not force payment upon him, he never had any money. It was not until his brother, William, passed his examinations and joined the firm that the professional work began to pay. There is no doubt, however, that, in the long run, Mr. Lloyd George's fortunes were founded upon his early unpaid work. His clients were, for the most part, victims, in one way or another, of rapacious landlords—oppressed tenants or poachers in a small way. His success in winning cases ordinarily regarded as hopeless soon made him a popular idol, destined to achieve greatness.

Mr. Lloyd George's Parliamentary career began thus in 1890. Merionethshire (Wales) had sent to the House of Commons a man who had been brought up in a cottage. The sneers and jeers to which he was subjected by members of the ruling caste so roused Mr. Lloyd George that, on the spur of the moment, he decided to stand for Parliament just to show the Tories that the day of the cottage-bred man had dawned.

Everything was against him. His opponent, Mr. Hugh Nanney, (afterwards Sir Hugh Nanney) a Conservative of the deepest dye, was a man of great influence. Even his own party was lukewarm, for, strictly speaking, he was then, as he has continued to be throughout his career, a Welsh Nationalist whose political creed consisted primarily of faith in himself and whose political platform was "A Free Religion for a Free People in a Free Land." He put up such a stout fight that, in spite of all handicaps, he was elected.

Realising that a margin of 18 votes was altogether too small for safety, and being a believer in publicity—especially press publicity—he immediately organised a limited liability company, acquired a number of English and Welsh papers in and near Carnarvon (his constituency) and began to "dig himself in" in the affections of his constituents. As a result of his foresight, at the next election in 1892 he multiplied his majority eleven times though he was faced by a much more formidable opponent than in 1890. The Conservative party put up against him no less a personage than Sir John Puleston,

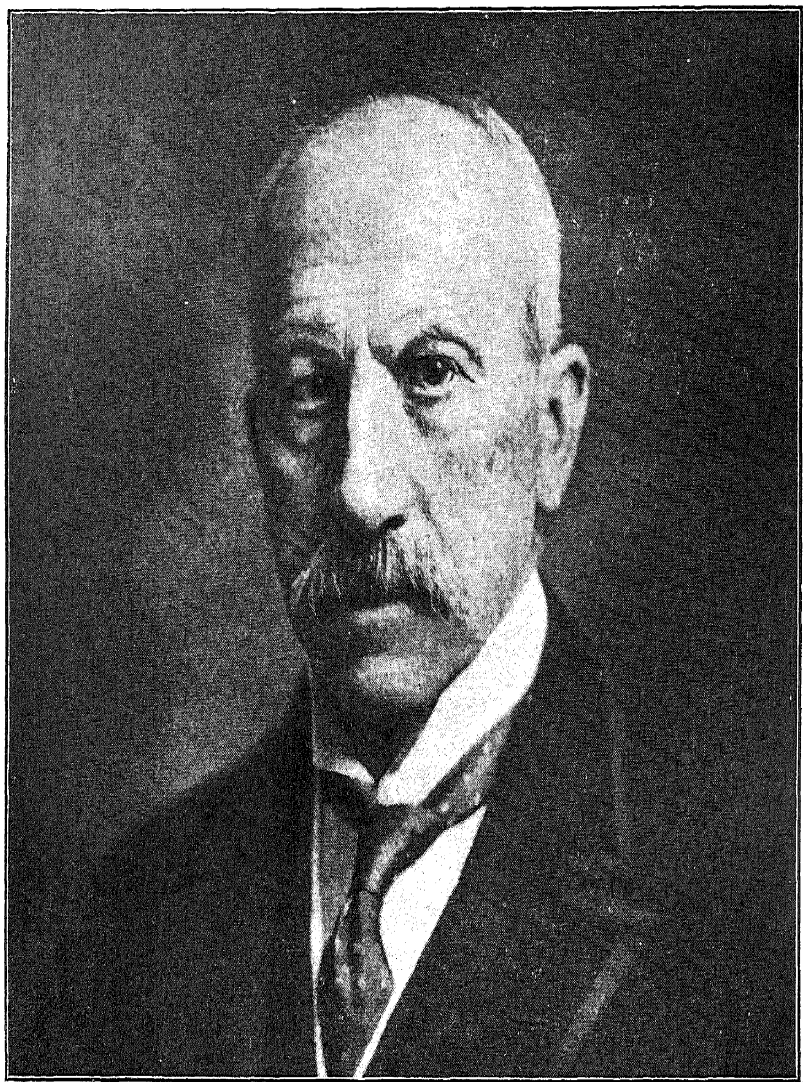
who had spent many years in the United States and had there amassed a large fortune and fame, who, as a Conservative Member for Devonport, had taken an active interest in non-political Welsh movements, and who had been specially appointed Constable of Carnarvon in order to strengthen his chances as a candidate opposed to the Welshman who had made himself exceedingly obnoxious during the two years he was in Parliament, for he had, almost immediately after his election, flouted Liberalism in his public speeches and bitterly attacked the Church, the State, and the Land.

A speech delivered at Bangor during that period shows Mr. Lloyd George's ultra-socialistic tendencies at that time. The toilers of the country, he declared, had to bear "the burden of maintaining the army, law, order and royalty." The Anglican clergy monopolised the tithes given to the Church "for their own selfish enjoyment," instead of "expending the funds to maintain the poor, repair the highways, and educate the people," and as a consequence, heavy rates had to be imposed "for the purpose of discharging functions which belonged to the clergy and for performing which they are still paid." He asserted that "burdens have been cast upon the wealth-producers of the land which ought to have been borne by the wealth-consumers." It was iniquitous, he added, that the "whole weight of an unproductive class must necessarily fall upon those who work," and it was impossible to provide "large incomes to men who will not work, without lowering the wages, lengthening the hours, and impoverishing those who toil for their daily bread." The only way, in his opinion, to "get better hours, better wages, better conditions of life," was to trench "upon the enormous rent-rolls and revenues of landlords and monopolists." Until the war began, such sentiments formed the keynote of Mr. Lloyd George's political work in and out of Parliament. The first Budget that, as Chancellor of the Exchequer in Mr. Asquith's first administration, he introduced, contained proposals for taxation which made the landlords furious. The statement that he made in introducing that measure in Parliament, and the speeches that he made in the country to back it up, roused them still further. He





GENERAL VOLUME.



VISCOUNT MILNER.

carried public opinion with him, however, and his party returned from the polls with a large enough majority, not only to force the Budget through Parliament, but also to clip the wings of the House of Lords. At the time hostilities broke out, it is to be doubted if any man in public life was feared or execrated more by the privileged classes than he was.

Mr. Lloyd George's record during the war, however, completely disarmed his enemies by creating the feeling in the country that he was the one man who could bring about Germany's defeat. That faith secured him the goodwill of the very men who not long before had despised and hated him and ultimately made him the Prime Minister of the British Empire.

Those Conservative leaders who found themselves in harness with Mr. Lloyd George soon discovered that he was not the ogre that he had been painted to be—that he could give as well as take. A man of singularly fascinating personality, possessing great tact and dialectical skill, willing to devote his whole energy to the winning of the struggle and to subordinate everything to that object, he soon won his way to their hearts.

The political expedients which Mr. Lloyd George was compelled to adopt from time to time, while head of the Government, involving, in so many instances, the sacrifice of principles to which, again and again, he had professed to be devoted, laid him open to attack from some of his former colleagues, who finally rallied round Mr. Asquith and refused to have anything to do with the administration which he formed after bringing the Germans to their knees. These tactics cleft the Liberal Party in twain, the larger section naturally clinging to the man in power.

---

### III.

#### MEMBERS OF THE WAR CABINET.

When Mr. Lloyd George instituted the War Cabinet, the name included in it which caused the greatest surprise was that of Lord Milner. It was expected that a Conservative statesman was likely to be

offered the post of Food Controller, but no one thought that he would be one of the "Big" five. (Born at Geissen in 1854 and educated in Germany, and later at King's College, London, and at Balliol College, Oxford, Mr. Milner (as he then was) drifted early in his life into journalism and had the good fortune to be associated with William T. Stead when the latter was writing for the *Pall Mall Gazette*. From journalism he stepped into politics. Mr. (afterwards Lord) Goschen, soon after he went to the Treasury, appointed him his Private Secretary. Then he went to Egypt as Under-Secretary for Finance. Upon his return, he was appointed Chairman of the Board of Inland Revenue. From there he was sent, as pro-Consul, first to the Cape and later to the Transvaal and Orange Colony. Finally, the Conservative Government of the day appointed him High Commissioner for South Africa. (Stead and Milner quarrelled over the Boer War). I remember Stead telling me how he always referred to that war as "Milner's war" and, while in South Africa, refused Milner's invitation to stay with him at Government House and would not even call upon him. Upon his return from South Africa, Lord Milner found himself one of the dominating forces in his party. He led the revolt against Mr. Lloyd George's famous Budget and advised the Lords to throw it out and "damn the consequences"—which they did with disastrous results to themselves.

---

#### IV.

##### LORD CURZON.

At the time the War Cabinet was first formed, Lord Curzon was 57 years of age. He had occupied the office of President of the Council and leader of the House of Lords since the formation of the Coalition Government in 1915. He was at the time Chairman of the Air Board, and, simultaneously with his appointment to the War Cabinet, came the announcement of his engagement to the American lady who now reigns at his mansion in Carlton House Terrace. Lord Curzon's travels in the East, his career in India as Viceroy and Governor-General from 1899-1905, and his resignation over the

GENERAL VOLUME.



LORD CURZON.

GENERAL VOLUME.



MR. BONAR LAW.



GENERAL VOLUME.



MR. ARTHUR HENDERSON.



military controversy in which Lord Kitchener scored, are too well known to be dealt with here.

---

## V.

### MR. BONAR LAW.

Mr. A. Bonar Law entered the War Cabinet in his 58th year. As leader of the Unionist Party in succession to Mr. Balfour, he was invited by Mr. Asquith to join the Coalition Government, and served under him as Secretary of State for the Colonies. Unable to form his own administration when invited to do so by His Majesty upon Mr. Asquith's resignation, he became the Chancellor of the Exchequer in Mr. Lloyd George's first Government. Finding the various demands made upon his energy much too heavy, the Prime Minister relieved him of his work at the Treasury. Possessing, as he did, infinite tact, patience and courtesy, and commanding the confidence of the Unionist Party, Mr. Bonar Law carried great weight in each Government of which he was a member.

---

## VI.

### MR. ARTHUR HENDERSON.

Mr. Arthur Henderson, the only Labour representative in the first War Cabinet, had taken office under Mr. Asquith, first as President of the Board of Education, and later as Paymaster-General. A Glasgow man of about the same age as Mr. Lloyd George, he fought his way up and gradually, by force of character and ability, became a recognized leader in the labour movement. Not a little of the success which his party has achieved during recent years is due to his organizing ability.

---

## VII.

### MR. GEORGE BARNES.

After Mr. Henderson resigned from the Government, his place in the War Cabinet was filled by Mr. George N. Barnes, who, as a boy of tender years, had worked in a jute mill in Dundee, and, after

a hard struggle extending over a generation had risen to the position of General Secretary of the Amalgamated Society of Engineers. Working in conjunction with Mr. F. Herbert Stead, M. A., of the Browning Settlement, one of the two surviving brothers of Mr. W. F. Stead, he promoted the old-age pensions movement. During the war, he strove hard to secure increased pensions and better allowances for the soldiers and sailors. A man of the people who, by self-study, had acquired large and varied knowledge, and who, in spite of adverse circumstances, had acquired broad sympathies and a calm, balanced judgment, his work at the War Cabinet during a period when intensive effort had to be made in mobilizing men and materials, proved invaluable. I have heard more than one Member of that Cabinet speak of him in terms of highest praise.

---

### VIII.

#### GENERAL SMUTS.

General Smuts entered the War Cabinet during the latter period of the war. A Boer, who had fought against England in the South African war, he, in association with General Botha, readily grasped the hand of friendship extended by "C. B." When the conflict began in Europe, he threw his whole weight into the movement for the defeat of Germany. In inviting him, while in London, to serve upon the War Cabinet, Mr. Lloyd George proved to the world that the title of "King's Minister" borne by Ministers in the Dominions overseas was no vain title, and thus strengthened the relations existing between the Boers and the British.

---

### IX.

#### SIR EDWARD CARSON.

The only other man who served in the War Cabinet was Sir Edward Carson, of Irish fame. On the eve of the outbreak of hostilities he was using his influence to block the progress of the Home Rule Bill and was even threatening the Government with actual armed rebellion if they persisted in "forcing" Home Rule upon Ireland, as

he expressed it. Born in Dublin in 1854, educated at Portarlington School and Trinity College in that city, he had been, from 1892, without interruption, Member of Parliament for Dublin University. Choosing the Law as his profession, he became Queen's Counsel, Solicitor-General for Ireland, Solicitor-General, and Attorney-General.

---

#### THE BRITISH CABINET DURING THE WAR.

As the hands of the famous clock in the Cabinet room of No. 10, Downing Street, the official residence of the British Prime Minister, neared 11 P. M., on the fateful evening of August 3rd, 1914, there sat round the table at which Cabinet meetings are held, all but two of the members of His Majesty's Government, waiting for Germany's answer to the ultimatum which was then about to expire. If, when the hour struck, no answer had been received, then it was understood that Britain had entered the fray.

Among the men who sat waiting for Germany's answer which never came were:—

Mr. H. H. Asquith, Prime Minister,  
Viscount Haldane, Lord High Chancellor,  
The Marquess of Crewe, Lord Privy Seal and Secretary of State  
for India,

Mr. Winston Spencer Churchill, First Lord of the Admiralty,

Mr. Reginald McKenna, Home Secretary,

Mr. Lewis Harcourt, Secretary of State for the Colonies,

Sir Edward Grey, Foreign Secretary,

Mr. David Lloyd George, Chancellor of the Exchequer,

Mr. Thomas McKinnon Wood, Secretary for Scotland,

Mr. Augustine Birrell, K. C., Chief Secretary for Ireland,

Mr. Herbert Samuel, Postmaster-General,

Mr. Sydney Buxton, President of the Board of Trade,

Mr. Walter Runciman, President of the Board of Agriculture,

Mr. Joseph Albert Pease, President of the Board of Education,

Mr. Charles Edward Henry Hobhouse, Chancellor of the Duchy  
of Lancaster, and

Sir Rufus Isaacs (now the Earl of Reading, our Viceroy and Governor-General), Attorney-General.

The two members of the Ministry who were absent were Viscount Morley of Blackburn, Lord President of the Council, and Mr. John Burns, President of the Local Government Board. Neither of them saw eye to eye with their colleagues over the question of the war then pending. Immediately upon the declaration of hostilities, they both resigned from the Government.

Mr. H. H. Asquith had then been Prime Minister for six years, having come into that office upon the demise of his old Chief, Sir Henry Campbell Bannerman, that great Liberal leader who is affectionately known by his people as "C. B.," and who won South Africa by his generous treatment of that country.

---

## II.

Almost immediately upon the declaration of war, there was a re-shuffle of the Ministry. Mr. Asquith had, for some time, been acting as Minister for War, Colonel J. E. B. Seeley having resigned from that office because of the Curragh incident (of which mention is made in the next chapter). The Prime Minister invited Lord Kitchener, who at the time was actually on his way to Egypt, to become War Secretary, which post he held to the day of his death, while on his way to Russia for a conference.

The Liberal Ministry, under Mr. Asquith, shouldered the burden of the war through the first ten months—months filled with the gravest anxiety—months which saw the German tide roll Paris-wards, and finally, when, after the battle of the Marne, it was bent backwards, continue again and again to dash itself against the Allied armies with a force which at times seemed irresistible. As days of anxiety lengthened into weeks of worry, and the enemy's strength gave no sign of weakening, it became more and more apparent that if Britain was to pull her full weight in the war, she must abandon, for the time being, her traditional system of party Government and fashion a National Cabinet in which all parties

would be represented as nearly as possible according to the confidence of the nation enjoyed by each, and expressed by the strength of each party in the House of Commons. The Coalition Ministry thus formed consisted of twelve Liberals (not including the Prime Minister, Mr. Asquith), nine Unionists, and one Labour Member.

Lord Haldane, though the creator of the Territorial Army system, and, in a large measure, of the Imperial Chief of Staff, was hounded out of office because he was believed to be pro-German in his sympathies. Thus are great men honoured by their nation. Mr. Asquith certainly showed weakness in capitulating to popular clamour. His sacrifice of so clear a thinker and so skilled an organizer as Lord Haldane, undoubtedly reacted upon his Ministry, from which, as described later, he was ousted during a subsequent crisis in the war, his colleague, Mr. Lloyd George riding, at the head of the popular demand, into the place vacated by him.

It was not until June 9th of that year (1915) that the royal assent was given to a Bill creating a Ministry of Munitions. Mr. Lloyd George who, till then, had been Chancellor of the Exchequer, was placed at the head of the new department.

In October, 1915, Sir Edward Carson found himself unable to agree with his colleagues in regard to the policy to be adopted in the Balkans and resigned. He was succeeded by Sir Frederick E. Smith, generally known as "F. E." (now Lord Birkenhead, Lord Chancellor in the present Ministry).

About that time the "War Committee," or "Inner Cabinet," consisting of Mr. Asquith, Mr. Bonar Law, Mr. Lloyd George, Mr. Balfour, and Mr. McKenna, was formed, with power to act, except in cases involving a radical change of policy, without consulting the full Cabinet. It came into existence because it was considered that the Cabinet was too large efficiently to conduct the war. As will appear later, it did not, however, satisfy the persons to please whom it had been instituted.

In February, 1916, the department of Blockade was created, and Lord Robert Cecil was placed at its head and given Cabinet rank.

## III.

The Government had to bear many shocks during 1916. First of all, in January, came the resignation of Sir John Simon, the Home Secretary, as a protest against the introduction of the Compulsory Service Act. The same month was marked by the withdrawal of the British forces from the Dardenelles, which recoiled upon Mr. Churchill, who had already left the Admiralty and had even resigned from the Chancellorship of the Duchy of Lancaster, since he regarded that post as a "well-paid sinecure." The surrender of Kut followed in March. In May Mr. Birrell resigned as Irish Secretary, as the result of the Sinn Fein rebellion. A month later came Lord Kitchener's tragic death. At one time the Labour Ministers resigned from the Cabinet because of the Compulsory Service Act, but later were persuaded to withdraw their resignations. Viscount Grey's administration of the Foreign Office and Mr. Balfour's administration of the Admiralty had been the cause of constantly expressed dissatisfaction. Mr. Asquith was bitterly attacked for the delay in taking drastic measures to conserve food supplies and for failing to impose more rigorous application of the Military Service Act.

The culmination came early in December, when Mr. Lloyd George calmly paid a visit to No. 10, Downing Street, and issued practically an ultimatum to the Prime Minister. As Mr. Asquith himself described the incident at a meeting of the Liberal Party held at the Reform Club on December 8, Mr. Lloyd George had gone to him exactly a week earlier and brought him a specific proposal that the War Committee should in future consist of but three members, one of the three being the Chairman, and the Prime Minister was not to be a member of it. It was to have full power, subject to the supreme control of the Prime Minister, to decide any question connected with the war. While quite willing to re-organize the War Committee, Mr. Asquith very naturally insisted that the Prime Minister must be its Chairman. As he put it: "I shall be very

surprised if any Prime Minister attempts to govern this country without sitting on the War Committee."

Meantime Mr. Asquith spent the week-end in the country. Returning on Sunday afternoon, he learned that a meeting of his Unionist colleagues had been held in the morning under the presidency of Mr. Bonar Law, that they regarded the situation as very serious, and that, in their opinion, construction from within was impossible. They, therefore, urged that he (Mr. Asquith) should at once tender his resignation, and intimated that if he did not do so they would feel obliged to tender theirs.

Mr. Asquith asked his Unionist colleagues to pause before taking so grave a step until he could have a further communication with Mr. Lloyd George. He declared that he felt that a break-up of the Cabinet would be a national calamity.

Then Mr. Asquith had a conversation with Mr. Lloyd George to see if it were possible to meet his views. They were at issue on two points—the relation of the Prime Minister to the War Committee, and the personnel of that Committee. "There was a strong and sharp difference of opinion" between the two. Finally the matter was left for further consideration next day.

To his great consternation, on picking up the *Times* next morning, Mr. Asquith found that, through a breach of confidence on some one's part, the matter under discussion was outlined and commented upon editorially. He at once realized the construction that was bound to be placed upon a proposal that he be excluded from the war counsels, and wrote a letter to Mr. Lloyd George calling attention to the fact that unless the unfortunate impression it had produced was at once corrected he could not possibly go on.

Mr. Lloyd George replied that he had not seen the *Times* article. That gave no satisfaction to Mr. Asquith and he wrote to Mr. Lloyd George that, after full consideration of the matter, he had come to the conclusion that "it was not possible for such a Committee to be made workable and effective without the Prime Minister as its Chairman," and that if the Committee were reconstructed, as he

thought it should be, upon a smaller basis, he "must choose the men to sit upon it with the single regard to their capacity for the conduct of the war." He did not hesitate to add that there had been "a well-organized, carefully engineered conspiracy directed against members of the Cabinet, but in the main against Viscount Grey and himself.

Lord Derby's description of these events given at a luncheon of the Aldwych Club on December 6th, gave a somewhat different impression from that conveyed by Mr. Asquith's revelations to him.

According to him the proposal was that "the War Committee should consist of a smaller number of men and should practically constitute the Cabinet of the War, that its duties should be carefully to consider every proposal and, looking forward, to anticipate, so far as any human being could anticipate, all that might come of a policy they adopted, and, having adopted a policy to stick to that policy and see it through to the best of their ability. The question was—what should be the constitution of the War Committee?—and the proposal was made that it should consist, as I say, of a smaller number of men than the present Committee, that the Prime Minister, —whose duties are so great that he could not always preside over the Committee, which ought to sit all day and every day—could attend whenever he thought it desirable, and naturally when he attended he would be the Chairman of that Committee. But, of course, in his absence there should be another Chairman properly delegated to take his place. There was, further, power given to the Prime Minister of not only attending, and when he attended of presiding over the Committee, but of vetoing any proposal that the Committee might put forward." Whoever was correct—Mr. Asquith or Lord Derby—it is quite certain that Mr. Asquith had been outmanœuvred. He tendered his resignation to the King on Tuesday, December 5th. His Majesty had no alternative open to him but to accept it.

Immediately upon accepting Mr. Asquith's resignation, the King summoned Mr. Bonar Law to an audience and invited him to form a



Ministry. In the afternoon His Majesty held a conference, at which Mr. Asquith, Mr. Lloyd George, Mr. Balfour, Mr. Bonar Law, and Mr. Henderson (the Labour member of the Government) were present. In the evening the King gave a further audience to Mr. Bonar Law, who intimated that he was unable to form a Ministry. The King then summoned Mr. Lloyd George, who undertook to form a Government. Mr. Bonar Law promised his co-operation, and this simplified, in a measure, the formation of a Cabinet. The constitution of the new Administration was officially announced on Sunday, December 10th. It was to consist of a War Cabinet of five members, including the Prime Minister, and twenty-eight Ministers, who were not to be members of that body.

It must have taken tact and diplomacy of the highest order upon the part of Mr. Lloyd George to persuade so many members of his administration to accept a lower status on the grounds of ensuring war efficiency.

A number of prominent politicians who had served in Mr. Asquith's government were not taken by Mr. Lloyd George into his administration. Among them were the Marquis of Lansdowne, Lord Buckmaster, the Marquis of Crewe, Mr. Herbert Samuel, Viscount Grey, Mr. McKenna, Mr. E. S. Montagu, Mr. Tennant, Mr. Runciman, Lord Crawford, Mr. Mackinnon Wood, and Mr. Lewis Harcourt. Mr. Austen Chamberlain and Lord Robert Cecil were the only Ministers holding the same offices as in Mr. Asquith's government.

A number of new names appeared in the administration, for the most part representing "big business." Mr. Gordon Hewart relinquished a lucrative practice at the Bar to take up the post of Solicitor-General. It was necessary to find seats in Parliament for several of the newly appointed Ministers.

The announcement that Mr. Bonar Law was to act as leader of the House of Commons marked another innovation. That duty had, heretofore, devolved upon the Prime Minister, and in handing it over to his colleague in the Coalition, Mr. Lloyd George showed that

he was not asking others to make sacrifices which he, himself, shirked.

The Government, as thus constituted, lasted only about eight months. A crisis was precipitated owing to a visit which Mr. Arthur Henderson, a Member of the War Cabinet, made to Paris, accompanied by Mr. Ramsay MacDonald, as he explained, upon the request of the United Socialist Party of France that some English delegates should "accompany the Russian delegates to Paris, so as to examine with them the new invitation to an international conference, and to talk over the proposal for an inter-allied conference." Mr. Henderson declared that he had gone in his capacity of Secretary of the Labour Party, and not at all in his capacity of Member of the War Cabinet. He had not consulted with the Cabinet before going to Paris, and, doubtless, his visit caused embarrassment to the British Government. The upshot of it all was that Mr. Henderson resigned, and Mr. George N. Barnes, M. P., was appointed in his place.

Meanwhile, a storm was brewing for the Coalition Government. The commission appointed to inquire into the conduct of the campaign in Mesopotamia published a report which, in its effect, was nothing short of a bombshell. Mr. Chamberlain resigned as the result of the exposure, and Mr. Lloyd George reconstructed his Cabinet. At the close of 1917, therefore, the personnel of the Government had altered considerably.

There were no spectacular changes in the Cabinet during 1918.

The following list gives the names of the members of the various Governments during the war :—

Prime Minister: H. H. Asquith; David Lloyd George.

Lord High Chancellor: Viscount Haldane; Lord Buckmaster; Lord Finlay; Lord Birkenhead. Ministers without Portfolios: Marquess of Lansdowne; A. Henderson; G. N. Barnes; Viscount Milner; A. Bonar Law; Sir E. Carson; Gen. J. C. Smuts.

Lord President of the Council: Earl Beauchamp; Marquess of Crewe; Earl Curzon of Kedleston.

Lord Privy Seal : Marquess of Crewe ; Earl Curzon of Kedleston ; Earl of Crawford and Balcarres.

First Lord of the Treasury : H. H. Asquith ; A. J. Balfour.

First Lord of the Admiralty : Winston Spencer Churchill ; A. J. Balfour ; Sir E. Carson ; Sir Eric Geddes.

Home Secretary : Reginald McKenna ; Sir John Simon ; Herbert Samuel ; Sir George Cave, K. C.

Foreign Secretary : Sir Edward (later Viscount) Grey ; A. J. Balfour.

Colonial Secretary : Lewis V. Harcourt ; A. Bonar Law ; Walter H. Long.

Chancellor of the Exchequer : D. Lloyd George ; R. McKenna ; Earl of Crawford and Balcarres.

Secretary for War : H. H. Asquith ; Earl Kitchener of Khartoum ; D. Lloyd George ; Earl of Derby ; Lord Milner.

Secretary for India : Marquess of Crewe ; J. Austen Chamberlain ; E. S. Montagu.

President of the Board of Trade : Sydney (now Lord) Buxton ; Walter Runciman ; Sir A. Stanley.

President of the Board of Education : J. A. Pease ; A. Henderson ; Marquess of Crewe ; Dr. H. A. L. Fisher.

President of the Local Government Board : Herbert Samuel ; Walter H. Long ; Lord Rhondda ; W. Hayes Fisher (later Lord Downham) ; Sir Auckland Geddes.

President of the Board of Education and Fisheries : W. Runciman ; Earl of Selborne ; Earl of Crawford and Balcarres ; R. E. Prothero (now Lord Ernle).

Minister of Munitions : David Lloyd George ; E. S. Montagu ; Dr. C. Addison, W. S. Churchill.

Lord Lieutenant of Ireland : Lord Wimborne ; Viscount French.

Chief Secretary to the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland : Augustine Birrell ; H. E. Duke ; E. Shortt.

Solicitor-General for Ireland : A. W. Samuel.

Attorney-General for Ireland : John Gordon ; James Campbell James O'Connor ; E. Shortt.

Chancellor for Ireland : Sir Ignatius J. O'Brien.

Paymaster-General : Lord Strachie ; A. Henderson ; Sir Joseph Compton-Rickett.

Minister of Blockade : Lord Robert Cecil ; Sir Laming Worthington Evans.

Secretary for Scotland : Mr. T. McKinnon Wood ; H. J. Tennant ; R. Munro, K. C.

Solicitor-General for Scotland : Sir T. B. Morison, K. C.

Lord Advocate : J. Avon Clyde.

Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster : Herbert Samuel (now Sir Herbert Samuel) ; C. E. H. Hobhouse ; E. S. Montagu ; Winston Churchill ; T. McKinnon Wood ; Sir Frederick Cawley, Bart ; Lord Beaverbrook ; Lord Downham.

First Commissioner of Works : Lord Einnott ; Lewis V. Harcourt ; Sir Alfred Mond.

Attorney-General : Sir John A. Simon ; Sir E. Carson ; Sir F. E. Smith (now Lord Birkenhead).

Solicitor-General : Gordon (now Sir) Hewart, K. C.

Postmaster-General : Herbert Samuel ; C. E. H. Hobhouse ; J. A. Pease ; Albert Illingworth.

Civil Lord of the Admiralty : George Lambert ; Earl of Lytton.

Air Minister : Lord Rothermer ; Sir W. Weir.

Pensions Minister : Arthur Henderson ; John Hodge.

Minister of Labour : G. H. Roberts ; John Hodge ; G. N. Barnes.

Food Controller : Lord Devonport ; Lord Rhondda ; J. R. Clynes.

Shipping Controller : Sir Joseph Maclay.

Minister of National Service and Recruiting : Neville Chamberlain ; Sir A. C. Geddes.

Minister of Reconstruction : Dr. C. Addison.

Director of Propaganda in Enemy Countries : Lord Northcliff.

Minister of Information : Lord Beaverbrook.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

---

### THE ALLIES.

It is well known that in point of magnitude the recent war surpassed all records of man's history in ancient, mediæval, or modern times. The Asiatic peoples that hurled themselves against the ancient States of Greece; the barbarian hordes of Northern Europe who successfully measured their strength with the mighty Empire of Rome; the Christian Crusaders who advanced into Palestine in a later age as defenders of the shrines of their faith; the Great European armies which took part in the wars of Napoleon and made almost the whole of the continent a vast battleground, all pale into insignificance in comparison with the number and the power of the peoples involved in the Great War, which has just closed after having been fought on several continents and in the three elements of earth, water, and air. The great muster of peoples for action on the field, described by epic-writers like Homer and Virgil, even without being divested of the idealisation of poetry, is nothing compared with the vast concourse of nations and empires that were brought together into the conflict by accident, necessity, or freewill.

The British Empire, of which it has been said with legitimate pride that its broad roots coil beneath the sea, "and its branches sweep the world," had Allies of no ordinary magnitude in their campaign against the central Empires which threatened the cause of freedom in Europe and, indirectly, all the world over. Unlimited as are the resources of the British Empire, the help of the Allies was undoubtedly a matter of necessity, in view of the great military strength arrayed against it and in view also of the great wealth and the high scientific advancement of at least one of the aggressors, Germany.

## BELGIUM.

The place of honour among the Allies should be given to Belgium, though it is far from being the most important or powerful country. It was the spirit of heroism on the part of this small nation which offered the first resistance to the forces of Germany and held up its strength and thus gave time for France and England to organize their forces for the cause of liberty and civilization. No tribute of praise can be too much for a people, who, sure of defeat and ruin in the event of war with a powerful kingdom, chose the path of honour and not of meek submission. Introducing a complimentary volume to King Albert of Belgium, containing tributes to the Belgium King and people from representative men and women throughout the world, Hall Caine wrote:—

“With nothing to gain by taking up arms, with no territory to annex, no commerce to capture, no injury to revenge, having neither part nor lot in any European quarrel, desiring only to be left alone that she might pursue the arts of peace, Belgium found herself confronted suddenly by the choice of allowing her soil to be invaded by a powerful neighbour on his way to destroy his enemy, or of protecting her independence as a separate nation by the whole strength of her armed resistance. Although one of the smallest and least aggressive of the countries of Europe, the daughter among the nations, Belgium, true to her lofty political idealism, chose the latter part, not counting the cost, only realising that a ruthless crime was about to be committed, and drawing the sword after the sword had been drawn against her, in defence of her honour, her national integrity, her right to be mistress in her own home, her historic heritage of freedom and all the spiritual traditions of her race. In doing this during the past fateful months, Belgium has fought not only her battle but also the battle of France, the battle of Great Britain, and the battle of Freedom. By her brave stand against incalculable odds she has added a new and inspiring chapter to the heroic annals of humanity and perhaps lifted to a higher level the future destiny of man.”

Such was the first Ally, in fact the country for whose preservation Britain entered the war. It was formed an independent State so recently as in 1830, having been for some time a part of the Netherlands, the change having been effected by a revolution which broke out in the city of Brussels on the 25th August, 1830. Being a small State, with an area of 11,373 square miles, a population of 7,571,387, and a field army consisting of only eight divisions, it was naturally impossible that the State could rely on its own means of defence. It had therefore sought its security in the Treaty of London of 1831, by which its neutrality was guaranteed by Austria, Russia, Great Britain, and Prussia. To Germany this Treaty was, of course, only "a scrap of paper" and the world witnessed a revolting tragedy. "Her beautiful country has been laid waste. Her harvests, which were ripe for gathering, have been trodden into the earth. Her villages have been given up to flames. Her cities have been made to resound with screams of shell and cries of slaughter. Her historic monuments, venerable with the associations of learning and piety, have been razed to the ground. And, above all, death has taken an awful toll of her manhood on the field of battle, while multitudes of her surviving people, the very young, the very old, the very weak, the very poor, all innocent and all helpless, have been driven forth on the verge of winter from their smoking, blackened and outraged homes into an exile in foreign lands from which there can hardly be any hope that many of them will return. No more woeful and terrible spectacle of a country in utter desolation ever came from earthquake, eruption, or other convulsion of Nature in her wrath, than has been produced in Belgium by the hand of man. A complete nation is in ruin. A whole country is in ashes. An entire people are destitute, homeless, and on the roads. A little nation, dedicated to liberty, has kept the pledge and died for it." It must be some satisfaction to the world that the destroyer has been laid low, reparation is being demanded for all this injury, and the work of reconstruction has already happily begun.

King Albert of Belgium (born in 1875, he succeeded to the

throne in 1909, after his uncle Leopold II) has been the guiding spirit of his people, during all these years of sacrifice and heroism. It has well been said that of the three Kings of Belgium since its formation as an independent kingdom with its integrity guaranteed by the great powers of Europe, the first, Leopold, steered the little kingdom with exquisite skill through dangers from within and from without until he was hailed as the Nestor of Europe; the second energetically sustained and developed the commerce and manufactures of his realm with extraordinary success, but the third, Albert, has already eclipsed his predecessors and ranks with William the Silent, the indomitable champion of the Low Countries. Driven away from his capital, deprived of the major part of his kingdom and a witness of the untold sufferings of his helpless people, King Albert did not lose the courage of his heart and led his shattered armies against the German hordes, sharing all the vicissitudes of the ordinary soldier on the field of battle. One of the foremost of living English poets, Sir William Watson, has offered a notable tribute in verse to his greatness:—

Receive, from one who hath not lavished praise

On many Princes, nor was ever awed

By empire, such as grovelling slaves applaud,

Who cast their souls into its altar-blaze,—

Receive the homage that a freeman pays

To Kinghood flowing out of Manhood broad,

Kinghood that toils uncovetous of laud,

Loves whom it rules and serves the realm it sways.

For when your people, caught in Agony's net,

Rose as one dauntless heart, their King was found

Worthy on such a throne to have been set,

Worthy by such as They to have been crowned ;

And loftier praise than this did never yet

On mortal ears from lips of mortals sound.

Thanks to the spirit of the *entente cordiale* fostered between England and France during the regime of that Prince of peace-





GENERAL VOLUME.



INDIAN CAMP IN FRANCE, MAKING CAKES, WHICH ARE COOKED IN OIL IN  
SMALL CALDRONS, [p. 115]

makers, Edward VII of England, the war found a powerful Ally in England. The importance of the alliance with France should not be judged merely by the military and naval strength of the country, though it is of sufficient magnitude to evoke respect. To its area and population of 207,054 square miles and 39,602,258 souls, respectively, should be added those of her colonial possessions, estimated to possess an area of about 4,000,000 square miles and a population of 4,460,000 persons. The field army of France may be reckoned at 800,000 which, with normal reserves and colonial troops, would usually amount to 1,380,000, though, as is well known, the country was able to put in the field a tremendously larger army in the recent war. Her navy played no unimportant part in the conflict. As a home of culture and as a champion of the spirit of liberty, though the latter has sometimes over-stepped the bounds of reason, her prestige is high among the civilized nations of the earth, and it was indeed a privilege to have her fighting on one's side. Rudyard Kipling may be said to represent the spirit of appreciation of the country and its people by the British in the beautiful tribute he has contributed to the

#### BOOK OF FRANCE.

Broke to every known mischance, lifted over all  
By the light, same joy of life, the bucklers of the Gaul,  
Furious in luxury, merciless in toil,  
Terrible with strength she draws from her tireless soil ;  
Strictest judges of her own worth, gentlest of man's mind,  
First to follow truth and last to leave old truths behind—  
*France, beloved of every soul that loves its fellow-kind.*

The worthy President of the French Republic, Monsieur Raymond Poincare (born in 1858 ; elected President, 1913) has been somewhat overshadowed by his brilliant Prime Minister and Minister of War, M. Clemenceau, but it is difficult to exaggerate the part he has played during the last few eventful years of French History. He has voiced the best aspirations of his people and worked zealously for the advancement of the fair name of France and for the successful

prosecution of the war, from which France has emerged with undying glory.

---

#### ITALY.

After centuries of trouble, from the neighbouring empires of Austria and France, not to speak of internecine warfare, Italy found herself a consolidated kingdom of some position only in 1861, various Provinces of Italy coming under the sovereignty of the first elected King, Victor Emmanuel, some years later.

The present King, Victor Emmanuel, (born 11th November, 1869; succeeded to the throne on the death of his father on the 29th July 1900) has recently given striking proof of his abiding affection for his people, by renouncing much of the Crown property and his art-treasures and palaces in favour of the nation, and that was the spirit in which he seconded the efforts of his people who fought Austria, for whom they had special reasons of hatred, and helped materially in the winning of the war.

110,362 square miles of area and a population of 36,120,118 constitute the Kingdom of Italy, excluding the foreign possessions and dependencies, the colony of Eritrea on the Red Sea coast, Italian Somaliland, Tripoli and Cyrenaica. Service in the army or navy is compulsory and universal, the war effective of the Italian army being 3,159,836 of all ranks. The Italian Navy has always occupied a position of importance in European History and its value met with generous appreciation by the Allies in the recent war. Its air-force is by no means negligible. On the outbreak of the war, Italy had as many as two hundred aeroplanes organized in twenty-eight squadrons.

In mood less serious than what is demanded by the present subject Pope wondered, "what mighty contests rise from trivial things."\* A similar reflection will rise to the lips of all when contemplating the curious fact that the immediate and ostensible cause of the last world-conflagration was the murder on the 28th June,

---

\* The Rape of the Lock.

1914, of the Archduke, Francis Ferdinand, the heir-apparent to the Austrian throne, and his consort, by a Serbian student in the streets of Serajevo. The fire thus kindled in Servia raged over the whole world and no account of the Allies can be complete without a reference to Serbia, to whom Austria offered the first ultimatum and thus drew Germany on her own side, ranging Russia, France, and England, in the first instance, on the other.

---

#### SERBIA.

An area of 33,891 square miles with a small population of 4,615,567 make Serbia one of the smallest powers associated with the activities of the war; but the hardy people inhabiting the little mountainous kingdom have always enjoyed a high reputation for personal courage, and it was long indeed before they were vanquished by the overwhelmingly superior forces of Germany and Austria, strengthened by those of Bulgaria and Turkey. Serbia is able to mobilise half a million soldiers on occasions of necessity; when the country is declared to be in grave peril every male Serbian between the ages of 18 or 21 and older, and up to 55, is liable to be called to the colours, irrespective of his military training.

King Peter of Serbia (born in 1844; ascended the throne in 1903) has had an adventurous life, having at one time served as a private in the Foreign Legion of the French Army and fought in the Franco-Prussian War of 1870. Falling into the hands of German soldiers on one occasion, he jumped into a stream and effected his escape, while his captors were discussing how they should divide the £400 discovered in his wallet.

---

#### RUSSIA AND ROUMANIA.

Russia and Roumania were Allies till particular stages of the war, the former having got out of the compact by the sad Bolshevik developments after the dramatic revolution which deposed the Czar, and the latter having made a separate peace with the Central Powers on the 8th May, 1918, after the fall of its capital, Bucharest. What

with thorough want of organization and treacherous intrigue, even in responsible quarters, Russia could never give her best to the cause of the Allies, and her early withdrawal increased the responsibilities to an extent undreamt of in the early stages of the war.

In the technical sense, there were other Allies too in Europe, like Portugal; but we must hasten to an account of two of the most powerful Allies of the British, Japan in Asia, and the United States of America, whose help in the war gave decisive results.

---

### JAPAN.

No elaborate array of statistics is needed to bring home to the reader a sense of the position of the Land of the Rising Sun, which, since its triumphant success in the war with Russia, has come to occupy a place of great consideration among the powers of the earth. The help of Japan ensured the safety of the cause of the Allies in the East generally and her powerful navy, besides patrolling the broad Pacific Ocean, did not a little to scour the seas in Asia and Europe. Those who realise the special part played by naval strength in the recent war, will understand what a debt is due to Japan.

With an area of 260,738 square miles she has a population of 56,860,735; but the figures are hardly an index of the importance of her power. Her material prosperity is strikingly illustrated by the fact that during the year 1917, her imports amounted to the enormous sum of 103,579,240 yen, while her exports amounted to the even larger sum of 160,300,503 yen. She is equally efficient in the arts of war, and her army and navy are such as to be desired as Allies by even the most powerful combination among the countries in the world. The total strength of the field army may be taken to be 600,000 combatants, including Kobi troops usually detailed for lines of communications. Her naval strength was stated to be as follows at the end of 1919:—

|                    |     |     |     |    |
|--------------------|-----|-----|-----|----|
| Dreadnoughts ...   | ... | ... | ... | 10 |
| Pre-dreadnoughts   | ... | ... | ... | 13 |
| Armoured cruisers  | ... | ... | ... | 12 |
| Protected cruisers | ... | ... | ... | 12 |

|                   |     |     |     |    |
|-------------------|-----|-----|-----|----|
| Torpedo gun-boats | ..  | ... | ... | 5  |
| Destroyers        | ... | ... | ... | 80 |
| Torpedo boats     | ..  | ... | ... | 26 |
| Submarines        | ... | ... | ... | 18 |

His Majesty, Joshito, Emperor of Japan (born in 1879; ascended the throne in 1912) is by all accounts said to be carrying on worthily the high traditions of progressive government inaugurated by his father, and is responsible for Japan's phenomenal progress within the last few decades.

---

### THE UNITED STATES.

No effort is needed to prove the material greatness and power of the United States of America. The Republic was able to land on an average ten thousand soldiers a day on European soil, with all the necessary concomitant equipage and supplies, besides helping in the rationing of the Allies, and even of the enemies since their fall. The estimated population of the United States of America in 1916 was 102,017,312, and her area 3,574,658 square miles. These figures do not give any adequate idea of the wealth of her resources. Her wealth was estimated at 187,739,071,090 dollars in 1912, and her estimated expenditure for 1919 has reached the enormous figure of 12,804,034,000 dollars. Never having aspired to be a military empire, the peace strength of the United States army is naturally low, amounting only to 137,203. But that the figure was capable of expansion was proved even at the early stages of her entry into the war. War was declared with Germany in April, 1917, and before the end of the year an army of 1,500,000 men was in the field, in training at home, or abroad. At the outbreak of the war the total naval strength consisted of 787 vessels of all types from super-dreadnoughts to submarine chasers, the total cost being estimated at 230,080,000 dollars. A very large addition was made to the destroyer programme at a cost of about 70,000,000 dollars. It was also resolved to provide 25,000 aeroplanes by January, 1919. The monthly expenditure on the navy rose from 1,600,000 dollars to

12,000,000 dollars. Owing to the rapid collapse of the enemy, the United States did not enjoy the privilege of putting forth her exertions to the full, but there was enough indication of her strength, to cheer the Allies, to unnerve the hearts of their enemies and, one may add, to make a rapid settlement of the ultimate issues of the war.

After estimating all this strength in favour of the side which the British Empire joined as an active fighter, the account would be incomplete without a reference to what was probably the most powerful source of support for the Allies, the righteousness of their cause. In a moment of unpreparedness, they were faced by the highly organized armies of two great military empires, which had equipped themselves for the struggle during the treacherous silence of years. But the truth of Sakespeare's words were once more to be demonstrated, this time on a scale unparalleled in the history of mankind:—

What stronger breast-plate than a heart unstained!  
Thrice is he armed that hath his quarrel just,  
And he but naked, though locked up in steel,  
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

---



## CHAPTER V.

---

### THE KING'S APPEAL TO HIS PEOPLE.

THE following appeal bearing the facsimile of His Majesty's signature was published in the papers :—

“BUCKINGHAM PALACE.

“To

“MY PEOPLE,

“At this grave moment in the struggle between my people and a highly organized enemy who has transgressed the Laws of Nations and changed the ordinance that binds civilized Europe together, I appeal to you.

“I rejoice in my Empire's efforts, and I feel pride in the voluntary response from my subjects all over the world, who have sacrificed home, fortune, and life itself, in order that another may not inherit the free Empire which their ancestors and mine have built—I ask you to make good these sacrifices.

“The end is not in sight—more men and yet more are wanted to keep my arms in the field and through them to secure victory and enduring peace.

“In ancient days the darkest moment has ever produced in men of our race the sternest resolve.

“I ask you, men of all classes, to come forward voluntarily and take your share in the fight.

“In freely responding to my appeal, you will be giving your support to our brothers, who, for long months, have nobly upheld Britain's past traditions and the glory of her arms.”

---

### THE KING'S MESSAGE TO THE PRINCES AND PEOPLES OF THE INDIAN EMPIRE.

“To

“THE PRINCES AND PEOPLES OF MY INDIAN EMPIRE.

“During the past few weeks the people of my whole Empire at Home and Overseas have moved with one mind and purpose to

confront and overthrow an unparalleled assault upon the continuity of civilization and the peace of mankind.

"The calamitous conflict is not of my seeking. My voice has been cast throughout on the side of peace. My Ministers earnestly strove to allay the cause of strife and to appease differences with which my Empire was not concerned. Had I stood aside when, in defiance of pledges to which my Empire was a party, the soil of Belgium was violated, and her cities laid desolate, when the very life of the French nation was threatened with extinction, I should have sacrificed my honour and given to destruction the liberties of my Empire and of mankind. I rejoice that every part of the Empire is with me in this decision.

"Paramount regard for treaty faith and the pledged word of rulers and peoples is the common heritage of England and of India.

"Among the many incidents that have marked the unanimous uprising of the populations of my Empire in defence of its unity and integrity, nothing has moved me more than the passionate devotion to my Throne expressed both by my Indian subjects and by the Feudatory Princes and Ruling Chiefs of India, and their prodigal offers of their lives and their resources in the cause of the Realm. Their one-voiced demand to be foremost in the conflict has touched my heart, and has inspired to the highest issues the love and devotion which, as I well know, have ever linked my Indian subjects and myself. I recall to mind India's gracious message to the British nation of goodwill and fellowship which greeted my return in February, 1912, after the solemn ceremony of my Coronation Darbar at Delhi, and I find in this hour of trial a full harvest and a noble fulfilment of the assurance given by you that the destinies of Great Britain and India are indissolubly linked."

---

#### THE KING'S MESSAGE TO THE INDIAN TROOPS IN FRANCE.

"I look to all my Indian soldiers to uphold the *Izzat* of the British *Raj* against an aggressive and relentless enemy. I know with what readiness my brave, loyal Indian soldiers prepared to fulfil this

sacred trust, shoulder to shoulder with their comrades from all parts of the Empire. Rest assured you will always be in my thoughts and prayers. I bid you go forward and add fresh lustre to the glorious achievements and noble traditions of courage and chivalry of my Indian Army, whose honour and fame are in your hands."

The King has also sent a message to the British troops from India, in which he says:—

"I have implicit confidence in you, my soldiers. Duty is your watchword, and I know your duty will be nobly done."

---

#### THE KING-EMPEROR'S TOUCHING MESSAGE TO INDIAN ARMY CORPS ON LATTER'S LEAVING FRANCE.

The message given below from His Majesty the King-Emperor to the Troops of the Indian Army Corps leaving France was delivered by the Prince of Wales on November 26th, 1915:—

"Officers, non-commissioned officers, and men of the Indian Army Corps.—

"More than a year ago I summoned you from India to fight for the safety of my Empire and the honour of my pledged word, on the battlefields of Belgium and France. The confidence which I then expressed in your sense of duty, your courage and your chivalry, you have since then nobly justified. I now require your services in another field of action, but, before you leave France, I send my dear and gallant son, the Prince of Wales, who has shared with my armies the dangers and hardships of the campaign, to thank you in my name for your services and to express to you my satisfaction.

"British and Indian comrades in arms, yours has been a fellowship in courage and endurance, often against great odds, in deeds nobly done in the days of ever memorable conflict, in a warfare waged under new conditions and in peculiarly trying circumstances; you have worthily upheld the honour of the Empire and the great traditions of my Army in India.

"I have followed your fortunes with the deepest interest and watched your gallant actions with pride and satisfaction. I mourn

with you the loss of many gallant officers and men. Let it be your consolation, as it was their pride, that they freely gave their lives in a just cause for the honour of their Sovereign and the safety of my Empire. They died as gallant soldiers and I shall for ever hold their sacrifice in grateful remembrance.

"You leave France with a just pride in the honour of the deeds already achieved and my assurance and confidence that your proved valour and experience will contribute to further victories in the fields of action to which you go.

"I pray God to bless and guard you and to bring you back safely, when the final victory is won, each to his own home, there to be welcomed with honour among his own people."

---

LORD HARDINGE'S SPEECH.

After the King's message\* had been read in Council, H. E. the Viceroy said :—

I think I am voicing the views of my Council, and of the whole of India, when I say that we are profoundly grateful to His Majesty for his gracious and stirring message, and that we can only assure His Majesty of our unflinching loyalty and devotion in this time of crisis and emergency.

I propose now to add a few words explaining in greater detail the situation described by His Majesty in the first few sentences of his message.

It is now five weeks ago that the British Empire was plunged into war with the two great military nations, Germany and Austria. As has been said by His Majesty, the war is none of our seeking, but it has been thrust on us and is what one can only describe as wicked and wanton. Although we all deeply deplore the horrible assassination at Serajevo of the Austrian heir to the throne and his consort, we cannot but feel regret that this was made the pretext for a conflict in which it was well known that there was every probability that most of the great Powers of Europe would be involved. It was,

---

\* This will be found at page 121.

however, not until Germany with a callous disregard for our international obligations, to which she herself was a party, refused to respect the neutrality of Belgium, guaranteed in the Treaties of 1831 and 1839 of Austria, Russia, Great Britain, and Prussia, that the intervention of Great Britain became inevitable. It is hardly necessary for me to describe the steps taken by the King-Emperor to ensure peace and the patient genius and wholehearted efforts of that great statesman, Sir Edward Grey, to induce Germany to take a responsible attitude. Nor need I relate in detail what Mr. Asquith has described as the infamous proposals of Germany to buy our neutrality, while giving her a free hand to destroy the independence of Belgium and the integrity of France and her possessions. All these details have been given by Sir Edward Grey and Mr. Asquith in the House of Commons on the 3rd and 4th August. It suffices for me to say here that Great Britain having, with other great Powers, guaranteed the neutrality of Belgium, the vital interest of England being concerned in the independence and integrity of the State, it was her duty to keep her word and to maintain that neutrality with all the forces and resources at her disposal. It was in accordance with this stern sense of duty and with the conviction that her cause was just and righteous, and Great Britain's accustomed roll of protection of the smaller independent States, that she took up the sword to maintain the independence and integrity of Belgium and declared war on Germany. We have only to refer to the words of the German Chancellor in the Reichstag, when he admitted that Germany has done a grievous wrong to Belgium, to find more than ample justification for the action of our statesmen. The excuse then given that France meditated an attack on Germany through Belgium is one that can deceive no one; for it is notorious that France, who desires peace as much as we do, had already promised to respect the neutrality of Belgium. No government, no people in Europe, had less desire for war than the French, but their engagement by a treaty of honour compelled them to recognize their obligation to Russia.

It is common knowledge that Germany for the last ten or

fifteen years has been carefully planning and preparing for a campaign of aggression and self-aggrandisement, and, in spite of all denials of the German Government of any hostile intentions, those who, like himself, have been engaged in watching over the foreign interests of Great Britain during the past few years, correctly gauged the intentions of Germany to force war upon England, France, and Russia as soon as she was ready for it and at the most favourable moment.

We are now face to face with a possibly long and exhausting war, which, however just and righteous on our side, must be a terrible ordeal through which we should pass with confidence in the justice of our cause and with a strong determination. When this result has been achieved, as I have no doubt it will, let us not boast, but thank Him who has given us the victory.

War is a horrible thing, but there is a worse thing than war, and that is national dishonour and the failure of a nation to keep its engagements. This we have been happily spared by the firm and straightforward attitude of our statesmen in England.

In this great crisis it has been a source of profound satisfaction to me that the attitude of the British Government has been so thoroughly appreciated in India and has met with such warm support. I have no hesitation in saying that the valuable offers of loyal assistance that I have received from the Ruling Chiefs of India and the countless offers of personal services and of material help made to me by both rich and poor in the Provinces of British India, have touched me deeply and have given me one more proof, which I never needed, of what I have long known and never for an instant doubted, namely, the deep loyalty and attachment of the Indian people to the King-Emperor and the Throne, and their readiness to spare no sacrifice on their part to further and strengthen the interests of the Empire.

The fact that the Government of India are in a position to help the mother country by the despatch of such a large proportion of our armed forces is a supreme mark of my absolute confidence in the

fidelity of our troops and in the loyalty of the Indian people—I trust that this may be fully recognized in England and abroad—that, owing to the war, sacrifices will have to be made is inevitable, and that suffering will be entailed is unhappily certain. But I am confident that the people of India, standing shoulder to shoulder, will shrink from no sacrifice and will loyally co-operate with the Government in maintaining internal order and doing all in their power to secure the triumph of the arms of our King-Emperor.

The countless meetings to express loyalty held throughout India and the warm response of the people to my appeal for funds for the relief of distress in India during the war, have filled me with satisfaction and have confirmed my first impression that in the war the Government would be supported by the determination, courage, and endurance of the whole country.

It was speaking, moreover, with confidence and pride that I was able to offer to His Majesty the finest and largest military force of British and Indian troops for service in Europe that has left the shores of India. I am confident that the honour of this land, of the British Empire, may be safely trusted to our brave soldiers, and that they will acquit themselves nobly and ever maintain their high traditions of military chivalry and courage.

To the people of India I would say at this time, let us display to the world an attitude of unity, of self-sacrifice, and of unswerving confidence under all circumstances in the justice of our cause and in the assurance that God will defend the right.

When the Viceroy had concluded, Mr. Chitnavis, representing the Indian community, expressed the gratefulness which they all felt for His Majesty's message, and asked the Viceroy to assure His Majesty that the whole country was with him in this hour of crisis and would loyally and devotedly do everything possible to ensure the success of the British arms. He then moved the following resolution:—

“That in view of the Great War, involving most momentous issues, now in progress into which our august Sovereign has been forced to enter by obligations of honour and duty, to preserve the

neutrality guaranteed by treaty and the liberties of a friendly State, the Members of this Council, as voicing the feeling that animates the whole of the people of India, desire to give expression to their feelings of unswerving loyalty and enthusiastic devotion to their King-Emperor and an assurance of their unflinching support to the British Government. They desire at the same time to express the opinion that the people of India, in addition to the military assistance now being afforded by India to the Empire, would wish to share in the heavy financial burden now imposed by the war on the United Kingdom and request the Government of India to take this view into consideration and thus to demonstrate the unity of India with the Empire. They request His Excellency the President to be so good as to convey the substance of this resolution to His Majesty the King-Emperor and His Majesty's Government."

This was seconded by one of the principal Mahomedan leaders, the Raja of Mahmudabad, who made an important speech. It was supported by one of the Punjab Sardars, and was further supported in an eloquent speech by Pundit Malaviya, one of the leading representatives of Indian opinion. It was also supported by a distinguished Mahomedan gentleman, Sir Fazalbhoy Currimbhoy, who speaks for Bombay; by Mr. Ghuznavi, speaking for the Mahomedans of Eastern Bengal, and by Mr. Surendra Nath Banerjee, who is well known as an exponent of liberal views in Bengal. Mr. Banerjee, in supporting the resolution, pointed out that :—

"It was the duty of the Council to focus the sentiments of support and enthusiastic loyalty by which every Province of the Empire was animated. This desired to tell the world, the enemies of England and all else whom it might concern, that their loyalty was not lip-deep, but that behind the ranks of one of the finest armies of the world were the vast and multitudinous races and people of India bound together as one man."

The Viceroy in reply said:—

"It has been a source of profound pleasure to me to listen to-day



to the loyal and patriotic speeches by Hon'ble Members of my Council, and it has struck me during the course of to-day's discussion in Council that this remarkable demonstration of loyalty and of unity with the Empire has been a fitting baptism of this new chamber. I fully recognize that the views expressed by Hon'ble Members represent, not merely their own personal views, but those of the whole country, which has been deeply moved by the fact that the Empire has, through no fault on the part of its statesmen, been placed in a position of grave external danger. The hearty desire displayed on every side to make material sacrifices and to offer personal service has been a striking demonstration of the enthusiasm of all classes and creeds to unite with the Government in resisting the aggressive action of a power which can only be regarded as a menace to civilization in its savage efforts to conquer Europe and indirectly the world. India has gladly given her sons to fight the common foe side by side with the sons of Great Britain, Canada, Australia, and New Zealand, and we may with confidence and pride look forward to their achievements on the battlefield being worthy of the best and highest military traditions of this country.

"It is no longer a secret that we have already despatched two splendid Divisions of Infantry to Europe and one Cavalry Brigade, while three more Cavalry Brigades will follow immediately. That we have been in a position to send a military force of over 70,000 combatants to fight for the Empire across the seas is a legitimate source of pride and satisfaction to India as a whole, and with the knowledge that practically all the Ruling Chiefs have placed their military forces and the resources of their States at the disposal of Government, it is clear that we are not at the end of our military resources.

"Several of the Ruling Chiefs have, in accordance with their desire, been selected to accompany the Expeditionary Forces, whilst all who have had any military training have expressed a desire to serve.

"Amongst those selected are Maharaja Sir Partab Singh,

Regent of Jodhpur, the Maharajas of Bikaner, Patiala, Ratlam, Kishengarh, and Jodhpur; the Nawabs of Jaora, Sachin, and Bhopal, and several other leading Indians of rank and distinction. Among those being our friend Malik Umar Hayat, who never misses an occasion to go to the front and whose cheery presence in this Council we shall all miss.

"I should like to add at the same time that our Ally, the Maharaja of Nepal, has also very generously placed his force at the disposal of Government, while I have received from His Majesty the Amir the most friendly assurance."

The resolution was carried without a single dissentient.

---

#### LORD SINHA AND THE WAR.

In his Presidential address at the 30th Indian National Congress Lord (then Sir S. P.) Sinha said:—

"The question which, above all others, is engrossing our minds at the present moment is the war, and the supreme feeling which arises in our minds is one of deep admiration for the self-imposed burden which England is bearing in the struggle for liberty and freedom, and a feeling of profound pride that India has not fallen behind other portions of the British Empire, but has stood shoulder to shoulder with them by the side of the Imperial mother in the hour of her sorest trial. In the great galaxy of heroes in the imperishable Roll of Honour there are now, and there will never cease to be, beloved Indian names testifying to the fact that our people would rather die unsullied than outlive the disgrace of surrender to a bastard civilization. Our conviction is firm that, by the guidance of that primeval spirit which shapes the destinies of nations, the course of right will ultimately prevail and the close of the struggle will usher in a new era in the history of the human race.

"My next duty is to convey our instituted admiration and our heartfelt gratitude to those of our brethren who have been shedding their blood on the battlefields of Europe, Asia, and Africa in defence of the Empire. The war has given India an opportunity, as nothing



GENERAL VOLUME.



MEMBERS OF THE BENGAL AMBULANCE CORPS. [p. 131]

else could have done of demonstrating the courage, bravery, and tenacity of her troops even when pitted against the best organized armies of the world, and also the capacity of her sons of all classes, creeds, and nationalities to rise as one people under the stimulus of an overpowering emotion. That the wave of loyalty which has swept over India has touched the hearts of all classes has been ungrudgingly admitted even by unfriendly critics. The Bengali is just as anxious to fight under the banner of His Majesty the King-Emperor as the Sikh and the Pathan, and those of them to whom an opportunity has been given to serve, either in ambulance, postal, or despatch work, have shown as utter a disregard of danger and devotion to duty as others employed in the more arduous work of fighting. India has risen to the occasion, and her Princes and peoples have vied with each other in rallying round the Imperial standard at a time when the enemies of the Empire counted on disaffection and internal troubles. The spectacle afforded a striking proof, as much of the wisdom of those statesmen who have in recent years guided the destiny of this British Empire in India, as of the fitness of the Indian people to grasp the dignity and the responsibility of citizenship of a world-wide Empire. Nor must we forget to tender to the families of those who have laid down their lives in the glorious cause, our sincere and respectful sympathy.

“ Brother delegates,—Doubts have been expressed in some quarters as to the wisdom of the Congress assembling while the war is still going on. It has been suggested that discussions of political problems might be misconstrued as an attempt to advance individual national interests at a time of Imperial stress. I do not think that such apprehensions are well founded. If we had any doubt as to the ultimate success of England, we might well hesitate to discuss a question which can only arise after the war is over and peace is concluded. We want to make it perfectly clear that there is no one among us willing to cause the slightest embarrassment to the Government. We seek to make no capital out of the service so ungrudgingly rendered by our countrymen to the Empire. There is not, I trust, a single person in our camp who

expects reforms as the price or the reward of our loyalty. That loyalty would indeed be a poor thing if it proceeded from a lively sense of favours to come. Nor could any serious and responsible Indian publicist advocate that, as a result of the war, there should be a sudden and violent breakage in the evolution of political institutions in India. The problem before us is how, without asking for any violent departure from the line of constitutional development which far-sighted statesmen—English and Indian—desire for India, we cannot still press for a substantial advance towards the development of free institutions in this country. It is our earnest hope that the spontaneous outburst of loyalty throughout the country has dispelled for ever all sense of distrust and suspicion between us and our rulers, and that, after the war is over, British officials will consider it their duty not so much to administer one's affairs efficiently as to train the people to administer our affairs. With this change of spirit, the people will also begin to look upon these officials as zealous co-adjusters in the task of their political self-development."

---

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR JAMES WILLCOCK'S MESSAGE TO THE  
INDIAN ARMY CORPS AT THE FRONT.

Order of the Day No. 1.

"Soldiers of the Indian Army Corps,—

"We have all read with pride the gracious message of His Majesty the King-Emperor to his troops from India.

"On the eve of going into the field to join our British comrades, who have covered themselves with glory in this Great War, it is our firm resolve to prove ourselves worthy of the honour which has been conferred on us as representatives of the Army of India.

"In a few days we shall be fighting, as has never been our good fortune to fight, before and against enemies who have a long history.

"But is their history as long as yours? You are the descendants of men who have been mighty rulers and great warriors for many centuries. You will never forget this. You will recall the glories of your race. Hindu and Mahomedan will be fighting side by side with

British soldiers and our gallant French Allies. You will be helping to make history. You will be the first Indian soldiers of the King-Emperor who will have the honour of showing in Europe that the sons of India have lost none of their ancient martial instincts and are worthy of the confidence reposed in them.

"In battle you will remember that your religions enjoin on you that to give your life doing your duty is your highest reward.

"The eyes of your co-religionists and your fellow-countrymen are on you. From the Himalaya Mountains, the banks of the Ganges and Indus, and the plains of Hindustan, they are eagerly waiting for the news of how their brethren conduct themselves when they meet the foe. From mosques and temples their prayers are ascending to the God of all, and you will answer their hopes by the proofs of your valour.

"You will fight for your King-Emperor and your faith, so that history will record the doings of India's sons and your children will proudly tell of the deeds of their fathers."

"Camp,

"October 10th, 1914."

---

#### INDIA'S LOYALTY.

Speaking of India in a speech delivered by him on the 2nd October, 1914, at Cardiff, Wales, the Prime Minister (Mr. Asquith) said :—

"In India (cheers)—where whatever we won by the sword, we hold and we retain by the more splendid title of just and disinterested rule, by the authority not of a despot, but of a trustee (cheers)—the response to our common appeal has moved all our feelings to their profoundest depth, and has been such as to shiver and to shatter the vain and ignorant imaginings of our enemies (cheers). That is a remarkable and indeed a unique spectacle."

The Marquis of Crewe (Secretary of State for India), in announcing in the House of Lords that Government had decided to employ Indian troops at the front, said :—

"As Secretary of State for India, I should like to say a word in

continuation of what has been said with regard to the despatch of two Indian Divisions and a Cavalry Division to the seat of the war in Europe.

"It has been deeply impressed on us by what we have heard from India that the wonderful wave of enthusiasm and loyalty now passing over that country is to a great extent based upon a desire of the Indian people that Indian soldiers should stand side by side with their comrades in the British Army in repelling the invasion of our friend's territory and the attack which has been made upon it.

"It is well known in India that African troops of the French Army, which have been assisting the troops in France, are of Native origin, and I feel certain it would have been a disappointment for our loyal Indian fellow subjects—all the more on that account—if they had found themselves for any reason debarred from taking part in the campaign on the continent of Europe.

"We shall find our army reinforced by soldiers, high-souled men of first rate training and representing an ancient civilization—and we feel certain that if they are called upon they will give the best possible account of themselves, side by side with our British troops, in countering the enemy.

"I venture to think that this keen desire of our Indian fellow subjects to co-operate with us is not less gratifying than the same desire which has been shown by the various self-governing dominions, some of whose soldiers, in due course no doubt, will be found fighting side by side with the British and Indian troops in the war.

"Of course, we all know that India does not possess an inexhaustible reservoir of troops, and the defence of India must of itself be the prime consideration, not merely to India itself, but also to us.

"But I am able to state so far as external aggression is concerned (of which I hope and believe there is no prospect) there is a possibility that, in spite of the heavy draft upon the Indian Army, our Indian frontiers will be held fully and quite secure and with



GENERAL VOLUME.



A FRENCH INDIAN SOLDIER.  
[p. 134]



regard to any risk of internal trouble in India, against which in ordinary times, of course, our combined British and Indian forces have secured us, I believe at this moment the general enthusiasm which has been awakened by our resistance to the unprovoked attack which has been made upon our Allies, is such as to render anything of the sort altogether impossible.

“That enthusiasm has pervaded all classes and races in India. It has found vent in many different ways, in some cases by gifts of great liberality for the service of the troops in the field.

“I was told only yesterday by the Viceroy that one of the principal Indian Princes sent him a gift of 50 lakhs of rupees for the use of the troops in the field and there have been, on varying scales, a number of offerings of the same kind.

“I feel confident, therefore, that the action which has been taken will meet with the most enthusiastic reception in India and I believe that it will be approved by Your Lordships' House and by public opinion generally.”

---

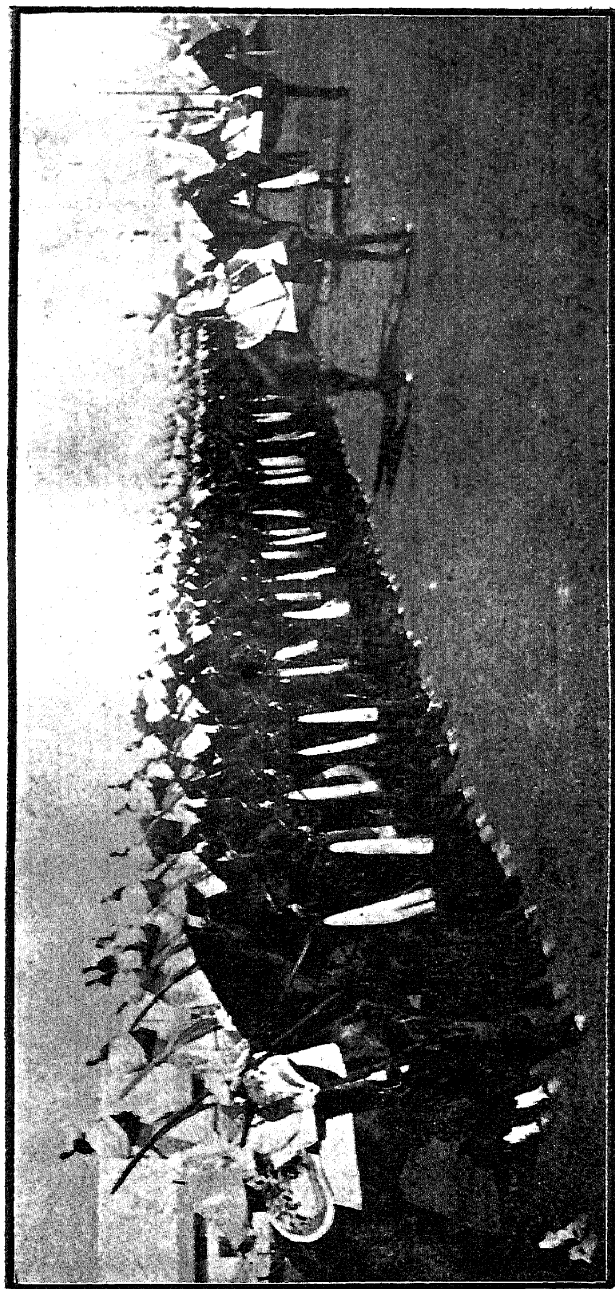
*Extract from a Speech of the Marquis of Crewe, Secretary of State for India, in the House of Lords, on September 9th, 1914.*

“I received yesterday a summary of offers of service and money made in India to the Viceroy. The Rulers of the Indian Native States, numbering nearly 700 altogether, have with one accord rallied to the defence of the Empire and offered their personal services and the resources of their States. From among the many Princes and nobles who volunteered for service in the war, the Viceroy has chosen the Chiefs of Jodhpur, Bikaner, Kishengarh, Rutlam, Sachin, and Patiala, Sir Pertab Singh (Regent of Jodhpur), the Heir-Apparent of Bhopal, and a brother of the Maharaja of Cooh Behar, together with other Princes belonging to noble families. The veteran Sir Pertab Singh, in spite of his seventy years, refused to be denied the right of serving the King-Emperor in person and is himself going to the front, accompanied by his great-nephew, the reigning Maharaja, who is only sixteen years of age and who was

brought up at Wellington College. These have already joined the Expeditionary Force.

“ There are twenty-seven States in India that maintain Imperial Service Troops, and immediately on the outbreak of war the services of all these troops were placed at the disposal of the Viceroy. From twelve of those States the Viceroy has accepted contingents of infantry, cavalry, sappers, and transport, and also the Bikaner Camel Corps; and some of these have already embarked on active service. Further than that, a number of Chiefs, entirely of their own volition, combined to provide a hospital ship, to be named *The Loyalty*, for the use of the Expeditionary Force. The Maharaja of Mysore has placed a sum of Rs. 50 lakhs at the disposal of the Government for expenditure in connection with the Expeditionary Force. The Viceroy adds that the Maharaja of Gwalior, besides sharing in the expenses of the hospital ship, the idea of which was started by himself, and that eminent lady, the Begum of Bhopal, has placed large sums of money at the disposal of the Government of India for the purpose of providing a great number of horses as remounts. From Mahomedan Loharu in the Punjab and from two States in Baluchistan there are offers of camels with drivers to be supplied and maintained by the Chief and the Sardars of those States. The Maharaja of Rewa, a distinguished Chief in Central India, has offered his troops, his treasury, and even his private jewellery, to be placed at the disposal of His Majesty the King-Emperor. I ought to add that a number of Chiefs, the Maharaja of Kashmir, the Maharaja of Bundi, besides the Maharaja of Gwalior, the Maharaja of Indore, and the Maharaja of Orcha, have, besides, independently subscribed large sums to the Fund of His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales. The Maharaja of Kashmir gave a large subscription to the Indian Fund, and, what will seem to Your Lordship rather a new departure in the case of an Indian Prince, presided at a meeting of 20,000 people held at Srinagar and himself delivered a stirring speech, as the result of which large subscriptions were collected. The Maharaja of Holkar offers, free of charge, all the horses belonging

GENERAL VOLUME.



The Imperial Cadet Corps.



to his State Forces which the Government may find it convenient to accept. The Nizam of Hyderabad has made a similar offer, as also have the Jam of Navnagar and some of the other Bombay Chiefs. The Viceroy adds that every Chief in the Bombay Presidency has placed the whole of the resources of his State at the disposal of Government.

"Then we go further afield. The Mehtar of Chitral, a name which woke memories of quite a different kind, and the various tribes in the Khyber Agency have sent loyal messages and offers of support to His Excellency's Government. All States, however remote, and some of the quite small States have expressed their desire to give such assistance as they can. The Viceroy goes on to say, very truly, that last, but not least, outside of India altogether, generous offers of assistance were received from the Nepal Durbar. The Nepal Government have placed the whole of their military resources at the disposal of the British Government, and the Prime Minister offered a sum of rupees three lakhs to the Viceroy for the purchase of machine-guns or field equipment for some of the Gurkha regiments, and also gave large donations from his private purse to the Indian Relief Fund and to the Prince of Wales's Fund. He also offered Rs. 30,000 for the purchase of machine-guns for the 4th Gurkha Rifles.

"Then we go still further on to the heights. We find that the Dalai Lama has offered 1,000 Tibetan troops for service under the British Government. He also states that innumerable Lamas all over Tibet are offering up prayers for the success of British Arms. In fact, there is only one spirit and one movement over the whole of India. The Viceroy has received thousands of telegrams and letters from every quarter expressing loyalty and the desire to assist; and the local administrations have also received a vast number. They have come from every community, from all manner of different associations, religious and political, from all the different creeds, and from countless numbers of individuals offering their resources, or their personal services.

“There have also been a number of enthusiastic offers of medical help, of some of which I hope we shall be able gratefully to avail ourselves. The Zamindars of Madras offered 500 horses at quite an early stage in the proceedings; and the Imperial Indian Relief Fund which was started, of course, quite independently of any fund here for the relief of distress caused in India itself, has been responded to with great enthusiasm and vigour. There were a certain number of Indian Chiefs in Europe at the time. These have not been any more backward in offering their assistance and help. I find that of these who were in these parts, the Maharaja and the Maharani Sahiba of Bharatpur subscribed to the Indian Relief Fund and offered the whole resources of their State to Government. The Raja of Akalkot, a Bombay Chief, offered his personal service, and the Raja of Pudukotta placed his entire resources at the disposal of Government. The Gaekwar of Baroda placed at our disposal the whole of his troops and the resources of his State. The son of the Mir of Khairpur, a Mahomedan Ruler in North-West India, offered his personal service. And I find also that of the British Indian residents in this country a great number, young and old, have shown their one desire to offer some form of assistance—personal service or medical service, or some form of contribution to the Empire—in a most loyal and generous manner.”

“Further offers of help were subsequently announced, notably that of His Exalted Highness the Nizam of Hyderabad, who offered a contribution of 60 lakhs of rupees (£400,000) towards the cost of the war, and, in particular, to defray the entire expense, while on foreign service overseas, of his own regiment of Imperial Service Lancers and of the 20th Deccan Horse (of which he is honorary Colonel).”

In the course of another speech announcing the receipt of a telegram from the Viceroy describing the proceedings at a meeting of the Imperial Legislative Council, Lord Crewe said:—

“I think, my Lords, that we must all agree that this demonstration of true and heartfelt loyalty in India to the King-Emperor and to the Government is one of the most gratifying facts as the outcome of the



present war. As we all know, the devotion and offers of support from the self-governing Dominions of the Crown have been not less striking. Those Governments are manned by people of our own blood, with countless memories and traditions which centre round these islands. But it is, perhaps, even more striking, certainly not less gratifying, that these who speak for the various races in India—races which represent a civilization of almost untold antiquity; races which have been remarkable in arms, in arts, and in the science of government—should in so wholehearted a manner rally round the British Government, and, most of all, round the person of their Emperor at such a moment as this; and I am certain that this House will desire to express, through those of us who are entitled to speak for it, its appreciation of their attitude and our recognition of the part that they have played and are playing.”

---

#### AN IMPARTIAL VIEW OF INDIAN LOYALTY.

A writer under the *nom de plume* of “Asiaticus” says:—

India has gratified the rest of the Empire and astonished the whole world. There has been nothing in history to equal the magnificent and sincere offers of help and service which have been showered upon the Government of India by her Princes and peoples. The reading in the House of Commons of the message from the Viceroy, describing all the offers received, produced a wave of emotion such as Parliament has seldom known. The relations between Great Britain and India have been transfigured in a month. The true and chief cause of India's magnificent support of Great Britain is that devotion to a just and honourable ruler is inherent in every fibre of the Indian peoples. India is loyal to the core and at the core. Let there no longer be any lingering doubt about that. In the past we have sometimes judged her too harshly, because among her three hundred millions there are some who oppose our rule and even strive to undermine it. Do we judge of the people of Great Britain by ranting anarchists in Hyde Park and the dynamitards who left some explosive under Mr. Gladstone's seat in the House of Commons? Clearly as an

able Russian diplomatist once warned me, we have thought too much of the dangers. The response of India at this juncture leaves us awed but grateful. The explanation offered by the educated classes is accurate also. They are loyal too, but theirs is a reasoned loyalty. They have asked for more liberty, and struggled hard to obtain it, but they have always protested their loyalty and their words were true, far more true than we realized. They have seen and know that though we have made mistakes, though we have sometimes been unsympathetic, though we have often given our confidence grudgingly, we have tried to administer India fairly and honestly and with constant care for the well-being of the Indian peoples. Small wonder that the splendid army sent by India has aroused the admiration of the whole world. The British Expeditionary Force has done well on the continent because it is entirely composed of trained professional soldiers, but it is no disparagement of the troops from Great Britain to predict that no army already operating in Europe will be found to excel the compact force of 70,000 hard-bitten warriors from India, which will soon be marching against the Germans. One smiles now to read again General Von Bernhardt's comforting assurance to his countrymen that "for a war in Continental Europe, we have only to take into account the regular army stationed in England." He will soon become acquainted with 70,000 proofs that he is wrong and another 70,000 can be furnished if needs be.

\*

\*

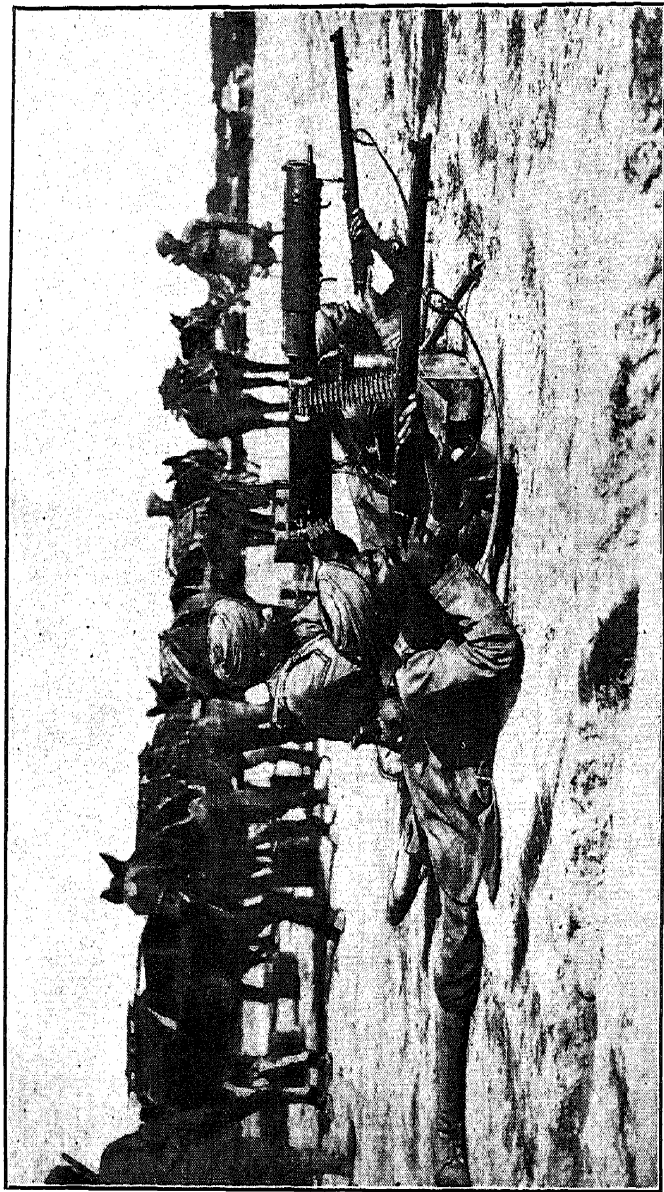
\*

\*

---



GENERAL VOLUME.



SIKHS IN CAMP IN FRANCE.

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE EMPLOYMENT OF INDIAN TROOPS IN THE WAR.

IN his introduction to "The Indian Corps in France,"\* Lord Curzon writes:—

"The Indian Army, in fact, has always possessed, and has been proud of possessing, a triple function: the preservation of internal peace in India itself; the defence of the Indian borders: and the preparedness to embark at a moment's notice for Imperial service in other parts of the globe. In this third aspect India has for long been one of the most important units in the scheme of British Imperial Defence, providing the British Government with a striking force always ready, of admirable efficiency, and assured valour.

\* \* \* \*

"Now, however, General Willcock's Army Corps was to be pitted against the most powerful military organization on the globe, against a European enemy who had brought to the highest pitch of sinister perfection both the science and the practice of war, and who was about to plunge not Europe alone, but the entire civilized world, into such a welter of continuous fighting and horror as the mind of man had never imagined and history had never known. The landing of the two Indian Divisions, numbering 24,000 men, on the quays of Marseilles in September and October, 1914, was a great event, not merely in the annals of the Indian Army, but in the history of mankind.

\* \* \* \*

"That the Indian Expeditionary Force arrived in the nick of time,

---

\* Lieutenant-Colonel J. W. B. Merewether, C. I. E., Indian Army, and Lieutenant-Colonel Sir Fredrick Smith (now Lord) Birkenhead. (John Murray, Albermarle Street, London, W.)

that it helped to save the cause both of the Allies and of civilization, after the sanguinary tumult of the opening weeks of the war, has been openly acknowledged by the highest in the land, from the Sovereign downwards. I recall that it was emphatically stated to me by Lord French himself. The nature and value of that service can never be forgotten.

"Neither should we forget the conditions under which these Indian soldiers served. They came to a country where the climate, the language, the people, the customs, were entirely different from any of which they had knowledge. They were presently forced with the sharp severity of a northern winter. They who had never suffered heavy shell fire, who had no experience of high explosives, who had never seen warfare in the air, who were totally ignorant of modern trench fighting, were exposed to all the latest and most scientific developments of the art of destruction. They were confronted with the most powerful and pitiless military machine that the world has ever seen. They were consoled by none of the amenities or alleviations, or even the associations of home. They were not fighting for their own country or people. They were not even engaged in a quarrel of their own making. They were plunged in surroundings which must have been intensely depressing to the spirit of man. Almost from the first they suffered shattering losses.

"In the face of these trials and difficulties, the cheerfulness, the loyalty, the good discipline, the intrepid courage of these denizens of another clime, cannot be too highly praised. If disappointment, and even failure, sometimes attended their efforts, their accomplishment was nevertheless solid and striking. The writer was at Neuve Chapelle, just after that historic combat, no record in it excelled that of the Indian troops. This volume contains the tales of other deeds not less heroic and daring. When the first V. C. was pinned on to the breast of an Indian soldier, not only was the promise given by the King-Emperor at the Imperial Durbar of 1911 redeemed, but the valour of Hindustan received at last the full recognition of its supreme merit.

GENERAL VOLUME.



INDIAN TROOPS IN THE TRENCHES : WINTER, 1914.

GENERAL VOLUME.



INDIAN TROOPS AT HANDLEY—PAGE AERODROME, CRICKLEWOOD.  
THE TWO INDIAN V. C.'S HAVILDAR CHATER SINGH, V. C.  
(1/9TH INFANTRY) AND HAVILDAR LALA, V. C.  
(4TH GURKHAS). [p. 143]



"This volume deals chiefly with the stormy incidents of war. But any one who visited the Western front during the period which it covers, and saw the Indian regiments either in the trenches or in reserve, will also carry away with him many a picture of the good fellowship prevailing between British and Indian soldiers, of the deep and characteristic devotion of the latter to their British Officers, and of the happy relations between the men in *Pugris* and the inhabitants of the country. The letters of the Indian soldiers to their folk at home would stand comparison with any that the official post-bag has conveyed to England from our own heroes at the front, in their uncomplaining loyalty, their high enthusiasm, their philosophic endurance, and their tolerant acceptance of the privations and sufferings of war.

"That this record \* should have been compiled seems entirely right and just. That it will stand forth as one of the most radiant chapters in the glorious history of the Indian Army is certain. That it will act as a stimulus to the martial spirit and loyalty of India for generations to come, cannot be doubted. Nor will it be less a source of congratulation to its readers that the Indian Army well earned the recognition of its great achievement."

---

SIR FRANCIS YOUNGHUSBAND ON THE SERVICE RENDERED BY  
INDIAN TROOPS.

"Had we not been able to bring these reinforcements from India, had our position been so precarious that we could not afford to take them away, and *a fortiori* had been under the necessity to send over more British troops to strengthen our position in India, then in all probability our troops in Flanders would not have been able to stay the German onrush and our brave little army would have been swept off the Continent.

"That Indians were able to help the French, Belgians, and ourselves in stopping a blow which the Germans had prepared for

---

\* The Indian Corps in France.

years is a thing of which they may be proud, and for which we should always be grateful to them."

---

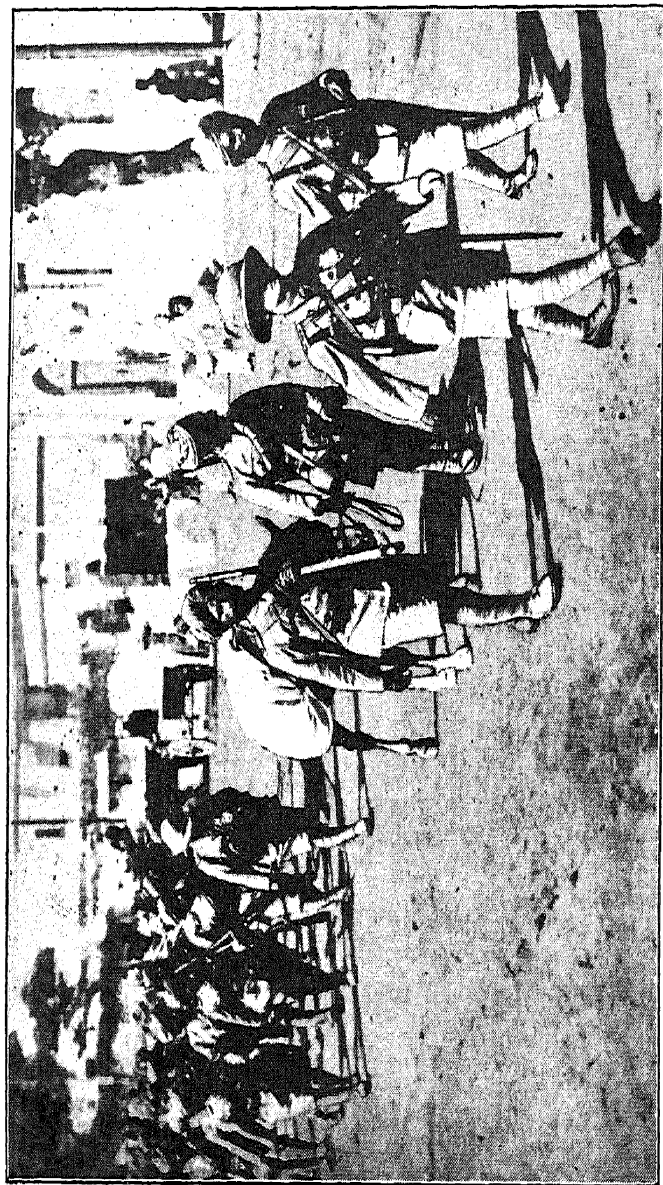
SPEECH BY LORD CURZON.

At a meeting held on Thursday, October 8th, 1914, at the Knightsbridge Hotel, Lord Curzon said:—

"The loyalty shown by India to Great Britain at the present juncture was the most striking in its manifestation in the history of our connection with the Indian Empire. The military spirit of the Indian was as deeply founded in the institutions and instincts of their race as it was in the English race. The co-operation of Indian troops with our own on the field would not only be an addition to our military strength, but would also conclusively demonstrate the unity of the Empire. (Applause). That was the first reason in the minds of all of them why such a meeting as the present should be held. The second, and it was one on which he desired to say a word, was: The cause for which they were fighting affected India as it affects ourselves. The naval, political, and military ambitions of Germany threaten India as forcibly and they threaten ourselves."

Lord Curzon went on:—"We have only to look to the whole character of the German policy in recent years, their intrigues, continued up to the present moment with Turkey, to appreciate the danger, their success will be to the Indian Empire no less than to our own. We may depend upon it that a German victory would have ulterior consequences as great, as serious, as far-reaching upon India as upon ourselves. Don't imagine that in the event of such a calamity occurring India would have known nothing about it. It would have re-acted for generations, for centuries, to come, and affected the whole future of India. But there is another point of view from which this war affects India. It is a common place, to which we have listened from press and platform in the last few weeks, that we are not engaging in this war for aggrandisement or aggression, addition to our territory, or any of the ordinary objects for which war is generally the reason, but for the great moral





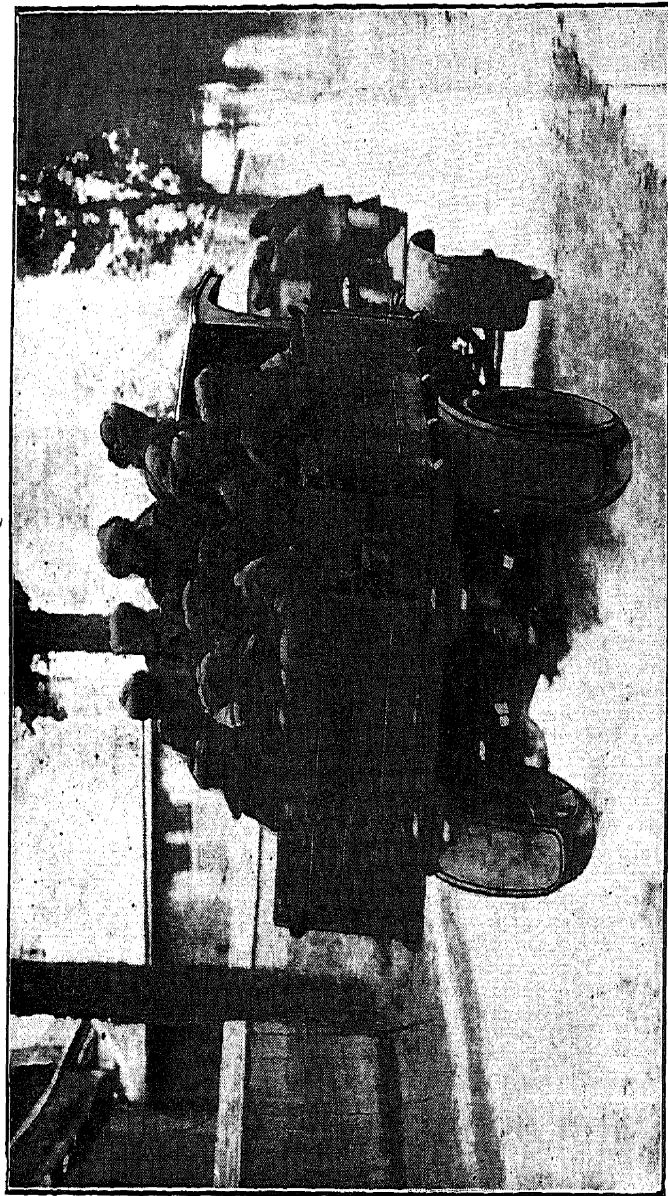
principles of honour, of justice, of truth, and of right. These are the principles for which we fight; fidelity to our pledged words and the sanctity of treaties, and for the protection of the weak. (Hear, hear.) And are not these principles as dear to India as to ourselves; are they not the whole foundation on which our rule in India is built up? So is it not India's duty to rally to them as vigorously as we have done and as we do ourselves. Then there is another point I would like to put before you—why India deserves this recognition. For the last 40 years India, with ever-increasing intensity, was pleased to take a part in our wars. She has been allowed to do so on several occasions, and has done it with great success on Asiatic fields of combat. We have utilized her forces in Egypt, in Abyssinia, East Africa, in many parts of the East, as far as China. I am glad to see the gallant General Gaselee here, who conducted that operation, and during that time she has constantly asked for more opportunities of assisting us. Well do I remember—and there are gentlemen in this room with whom I had the honour to serve in India, who also will remember—at the time of the South African War how keenly the Indian Army wished to take part and co-operate with our troops. But for political and racial reasons, upon which it is not now necessary to enter, they were precluded from doing so. The wheel, however, has at last completed the turn, and we now see that Lord Beaconsfield, when he moved the troops of India to Malta in 1878, took a step to show his utmost confidence in the people of India that has not since then been obliterated from their memories. If he could rise from his grave, with what pride and pleasure would he view the outcome of what he did, the wisdom of his prescience which led him to take that step which has had such significant results. Lastly, I think we are all anxious to see the Indian troops co-operate with our own because of the common interests of the two Empires. India's future is undivided, its lot is inseparably associated with our own, and it is impossible for us to go into any vital struggle without India desiring to co-operate in it. These are the main reasons why our feelings in this country are strongly aroused in favour of the operation of the Indian troops

in the present war, and how gratifying it is to find out that their sentiments are not peculiar to ourselves, but shared by the Indian people. Nothing more dramatic or encouraging has ever occurred in the history of our connection with India than the offer of the Legislative Council of India, the offers, generous, spontaneous, noble, from the great Princes of India, of men, money, troops, assistance in every conceivable form—and not less spontaneous and universal are the responses of the people of all classes of India. And so it came about that the feelings in India and in this country were unanimous. While we were at war they were anxious to take their part, and the confirmation of these desires has produced this great result upon which we are now going.

“ Now, ladies and gentlemen, I suppose all this has been a great shock to the German Emperor. If the German Emperor’s prognostications had been realised, I imagine at the present moment that the Amir of Afghanistan ought to have passed the Khyber on the way to Peshawar, that our neighbours on the other northern borders ought to be pouring down through the mountain defiles on the whole frontier up to the rich plains of India. I suppose my friend, the Maharaja of Nepal, ought to have been invading the upper parts of the Provinces where Sir John Stanley had so distinguished a career. (Loud applause.) And as for the rest of India, I suppose that there ought to be, to satisfy the German Emperor, an outbreak in all parts of the country in which our women and children should be shut up in the forts and cities as they were at the time of the Mutiny. (Loud applause.) These were the expectations the German Emperor had in his mind, but since the war began that Imperial personage has had many rude shocks. (Laughter, hear, hear, and applause.) He was grievously disappointed at what has happened in Ireland, he has been as much disappointed by General Smuts in East Africa, but he has been even more seriously disappointed at the attitude of the two political parties in this country. (Laughter.) But more disappointing to him has been the action of India herself. (Renewed laughter.) To these, instead of sedition, we have had all parties united ; instead of



GENERAL VOLUME.



A MOTOR LORRY LOAD OF INDIANS ON THEIR WAY TO THE FRONT. [p. 147]



our Indian Army being employed to check hostile movements and put down rebellion, it is in France. India, if not denuded, has at any rate been deprived of a great many of its best troops for the service of the Empire.

“Now, last week we all of us read of the landing of the first part of the Indian contingent at Marseilles. It was a dramatic moment in the history of the Indian Army and of the Empire; it was a landmark in the history of our connection with India. And I suppose the German Emperor, who found Sir John French’s force of a hundred or a hundred and twenty thousand was a contemptible army, could find no *adjective effective* enough to apply to the still smaller forces that are coming from India (laughter), and he will have an opportunity a little later on of finding whether they are contemptible or not. (Applause.) But this, I think, we may with confidence predict of them. They will behave on the battlefield with as much fortitude as any in Europe. (Loud applause.) They will also, I equally confidently predict, be as humane. (Hear, hear.) I doubt if we will hear of the Indian troops destroying churches, murdering innocent women and children, bayonetting old men, taking part in the numberless horrors which have characterised the war of the Apostle of German modern culture. They will, I say, be as humane as any force serving on the continent. Another thing I venture to predict of them, and it is this: they will give as creditable an exhibition of loyal and friendly understanding and co-operation between officers and men as any European force serving in the field. (Hear, hear, and applause.) We sometimes read in the papers of the German Infantry advancing with amazing heroism to the charge, and the German officers—in the rear (laughter)—urging them on to attack, sometimes using means more forcible than pleasant to carry out that intention. But, in the case of Indian troops, we may be sure that their officers will be in front of them not behind them (applause), and side by side with them will be the officers, commissioned and non-commissioned, whose connection with their English comrades, as everyone who knows the Indian army can

testify, manifests whole-hearted camaraderie and good-fellowship, relations which, I am sure, will startle some of our friends in Europe, but it will be a great guarantee of success when the shock of battle comes (Applause.)

"Ladies and gentlemen, we are here to-day not merely to express our gratitude for this great outburst of loyalty or our admiration for these men; we are here to discuss whether we cannot do something to render the conditions under which they are going to serve, along with our men in Europe, most comfortable and more agreeable to themselves. Do not let us forget that these Indian troops are going to a field of warfare very different from that of which they have any knowledge in their own country; to a country where different conditions as regards supplies of food, communications, comfort, and so on, exist; to a country which in a few weeks' time will in all probability be plunged in the rigours of winter where they may suffer many hardships to which some of them, at any rate in their own native country, have not been habituated. And as we read in the papers of the suffering entailed upon our own troops, in spite of the splendid provision made for them in respect of comforts; if you read of the appeals made everywhere for blankets and coats and belts, and all those little things which are so often lost sight of in a campaign, but which are so vital for keeping up the vitality and spirit of the soldiers; and if you realize as we are all beginning to do, the enormous destructive power and wastage, how arrangements are liable to go astray and how the soldier, fighting his best and showing incredible gallantry, suffers from the want of a little something which is forgotten, which, lying wounded, would be so much to him; if we realize all this of the British troops and of the European troops, how much more will these conditions apply to the Indian troops, and how much more necessary it is to consider what we can do to provide them with these little extras which it may turn out to be so necessary to send them.

"This is a Club of men and women who join themselves together in order to keep alive the old connections they had with India and



GENERAL VOLUME.



SOME OF THE INDIAN LANCERS ON THE MARCH IN FRANCE. [p. 149]

to afford them opportunities of meeting for social intercourse and social enjoyment alike. But on an occasion like the present, I take it, that social enjoyment and amusement will take a third place, and we shall agree in taking action to show our practical appreciation of the splendid co-operation of the Indian troops with our own." (Applause.)

---

#### PARTICIPATION OF INDIAN TROOPS IN THE WAR.

Lord Crewe in a speech said :—

It had been deeply impressed on the Government that the wonderful wave of enthusiasm and loyalty throughout India was due to the desire of the Indian people that Indian soldiers should stand side by side with their comrades in the British army in France, and there would be disappointment in India if Indians had been barred from participating in the war. The army would then be reinforced by soldiers who were high-souled men of first class training, and he was certain that they would give the best possible account of themselves. Despite the heavy drafts on the Indian Army, the Indian frontier would be adequately secured, and Lord Crewe believed that the enthusiasm pervading all classes and races in India would render internal trouble absolutely impossible.

He continued: "I venture to think this keen desire of our Indian fellow-subjects is no less gratifying than is the same desire of the self-governing dominions, some of whose troops will be found side by side with British and Indian troops."

"India did not possess an inexhaustible reservoir of troops, but there was scarcely a possibility of external aggressiveness and the Indian frontiers had been adequately secured.

"The enthusiasm awakened by our resistance makes internal troubles impossible. It pervaded all classes and races."

Lord Crewe concluded: "I feel confident that the action we have taken will meet with the most enthusiastic reception in India."

---

#### INDIAN TROOPS LAND IN FRANCE.

A new page in history was opened when the fleet of transport

rounded the point swerving alongside bearing the flower of the King-Emperor's Indian Army. The day was gloriously fine, and the rows of gleaming, smiling faces surmounted by pugrees fluttering in the breeze presented an unforgettable picture. The whole city was seething with excitement while the troops disembarked, and when the force defiled through the city to the Rest Camp, led by the Sikhs, the inhabitants were wild with delight and enthusiasm. It was a moving sight to see Sikhs, Gurkhas, Punjabis, Baluchis, and Princes with bejewelled turbans, pass along through dense masses of cheering spectators; every window, every balcony and roof being packed. As the troops proceeded they were pelted with flowers, while the people on the pavement pressed forward to grasp their hands and pin flowers and tricolours on their tunics. The excitement reached its culmination when the Baluchis passed playing "La Marseillaise." The pleasure of the troops at their splendid welcome was as intense as was the admiration of the French for the Indians' bearing, efficiency, and equipment. It was really an Expeditionary Force, complete from mule batteries to the last pick and shovel.—The "Pioneer."

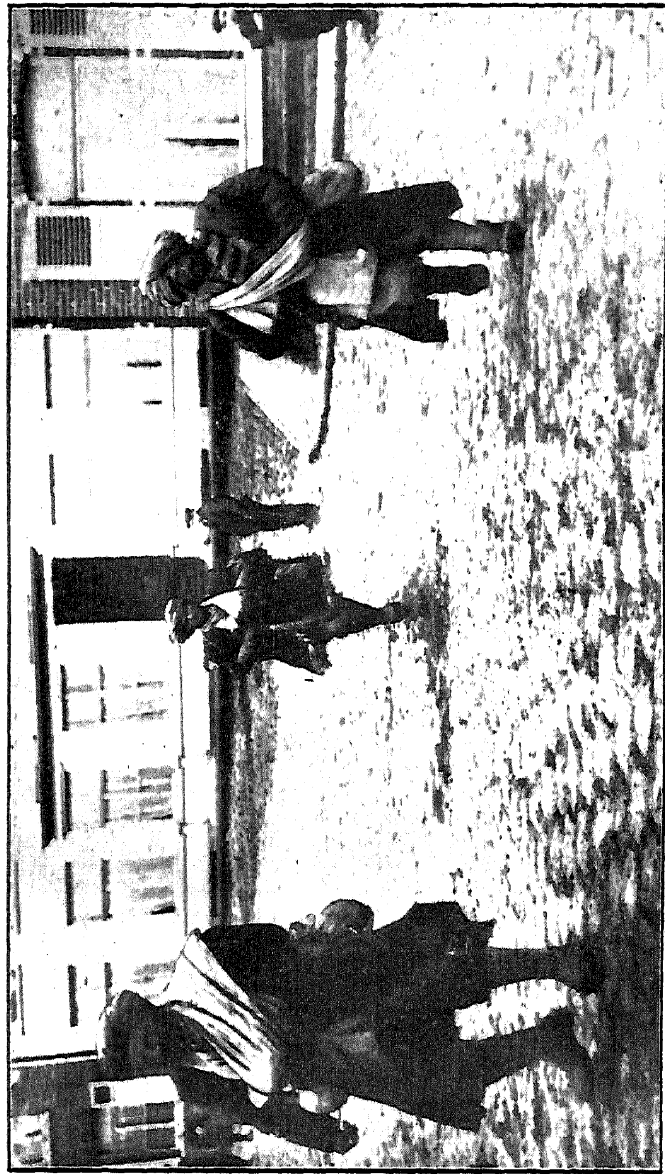
---

#### THE KING AND WOUNDED INDIANS.

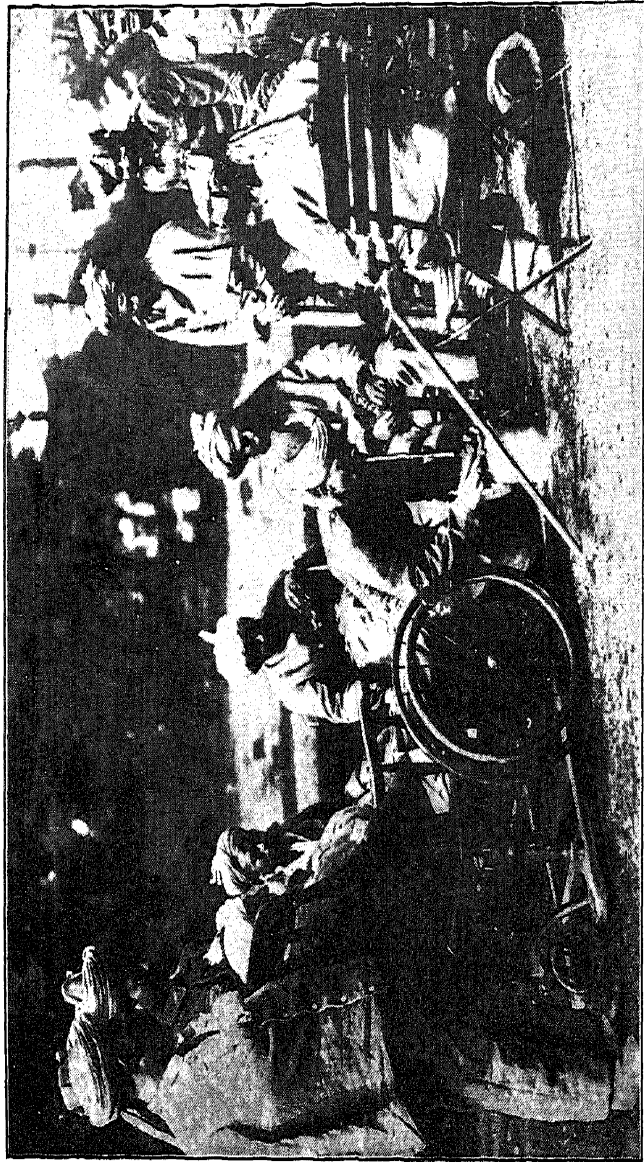
A correspondent of the "Pioneer" wrote from London on 9th January, 1915, as follows :—

"I have been greatly impressed by His Majesty to-day. I have seen the King in many places and under various circumstances; I saw him drive from Marlborough House to Buckingham Palace to receive his Privy Council and the Lord Mayor of London and all the Sheriffs and Under-Sheriffs and who not, and to hear them take the oath of allegiance that chill May morning after Edward the Peace Maker had passed away. I saw him riding with the Kaiser and the Duke of Connaught, in the solemn procession that followed the body of the departed King from the Palace at Westminster to the crowded station at Paddington. I saw him walking through Windsor Street with the Kaiser and the late King of the Belgians, still following the cold clay of his father to its resting place in St. George's Chapel. I saw him

GENERAL VOLUME.



GENERAL VOLUME.



WOUNDED INDIAN SOLDIERS AT BRIGHTON ENJOYING A SMOKE USING AN OLD JAM  
JAR AS A HOOKAH PIPE. [p. 151]



on the morning of his own Coronation day, but surely he never looked so much like the true, human gentleman he is, as he did to-day, when he clasped the hands of the Pathans, Sikhs, Dogras, Gurkhas, and Afridis who lie wounded in our Indian General Hospital here and thanked them with salt tears in his eyes for the glorious part they and their fellows were playing and had played that the Empire might live, that justice and right might triumph and that blackness of heart and all unrighteousness might be driven out into captivity. The King is not so fond of Brighton as was his father. He paid a surprise visit, and with his simple, large-hearted manner, he just thought he would see, not only how his Indians were getting on but whether the arrangements made for their comfort were as sumptuous as the rich heart of England could provide. But little birds whisper when Great Kings move, and many there were in the streets and at the hospital gates to shout their welcome to the Sailor who sits upon the throne. That was no figure of speech, it has been known for some time that the response of the Indian Empire to the call of its Emperor touched the heart of King George more than anything has touched it since he came to the throne. There are those who say that the King's honest heart was so wounded by the brutal treachery of Germany that for a time he wondered whether he could place trust in spoken word again. And when the sword of India flashed like lightning from its sheath, the King smiled, knowing then that words spoken in India were the honest words of great-hearted, honest men.

"There were many notabilities presented to the King to-day; he is too polite to show boredom, but it was with a singularly ingenuous smile that he shook the last ceremonious hand and hurried out into the corridors to see his troops. The King speaks Hindustani fairly well, but with an accent which was evidently unfamiliar to some of the patients. However, it was all smiles and happiness, even the tears in the King's eyes were the happiest of tears. He smiled through them and blew his nose, and nodded his head and was *just* George.

"Colonel Campbell accompanied him, and often when he began to explain to His Majesty some incident in connection with some man's wound, the King would stop him with perhaps a merry laugh, or perhaps a little choke, and say: 'Surely I know that! At that place these men did this, that or the other for me.' And even when the patient was too ill to speak, he wasn't too ill to nod and smile."

The King and Queen visited the wounded Indian soldiers in the New Forest.

Their Majesties conversed with every Sikh soldier. The King wore a Field Marshal's uniform. His Majesty showed remarkable knowledge of the regiments represented and spoke a few words in Hindustani, much to the soldiers' delight.

The Queen's first remark was: "Now just tell me anything you want and I will get it sent down."

The result is that numbers of warm clothes will be sent from Buckingham Palace. Before leaving, the King reviewed hundreds of slightly wounded Indian soldiers outside the tents amidst shouts of "Victory to the King-Emperor."

---

#### THE KING'S VISIT TO THE SEAT OF WAR.

The King-Emperor visited the Indian Corps on the morning of the 1st December, accompanied by H. R. H. the Prince of Wales. After a short visit to the Corps Headquarters, where representatives of Cavalry detachments were drawn up as a Guard-of-Honour, His Majesty visited the various Divisions. He spent some time passing down the ranks of all the regiments, speaking to many of the men and asking many considerate questions as to their welfare. The King then inspected the Heavy Battery which was in action and passed to the neighbouring Corps.

---



GENERAL VOLUME.



FIELD-MARSHAL VISCOUNT FRENCH OF YPRES, K.P., G.C.B.,  
O.M., G.C.V.O., K.C.M.G. [p. 153]

## CHAPTER VII.

---

### GALLANTRY OF INDIAN TROOPS.

---

THE following message was received by the Commander of the Indian Corps from Field Marshal Sir John French, Commander-in-Chief, in November, 1914:—

“Please congratulate your Indian troops on their gallant conduct and express my gratitude to them.”

The Corps Commander, under whose orders the first units to be engaged had been temporarily placed, also sent a warm letter of congratulation and thanks.

“They have shown a degree of adaptability which is extraordinary. The development of the campaign will show that the Indian troops are as admirably trained and disciplined as they have already proved that they are courageous.”

---

### FRENCH PRAISE OF BRITISH AND INDIAN TROOPS.

A French officer attached to the Indian troops, describing the battle in Flanders in the “Temps,” emphasises the courage of the British, as the official *communiqués* had possibly not allowed the public properly to realize the difficulty of the British task, which was to check the new German invasion between La Basse and Ypres. They had to hold the trenches for several weeks against a more numerous and desperate enemy. In many places the British lines were so thin that obstinacy worthy of Waterloo was necessary to prevent them from being pierced.

The trenches were surprised on several occasions, but a counter-attack was immediately prepared and the trenches were

retaken even at the greatest sacrifice. The British Cavalry dismounted and held the trenches in a particularly brilliant fashion. They had to endure the devastating artillery fire which the Germans on October 30th and 31st concentrated on them, thinking that trenches held by Cavalry men could easily be retaken. Shortly afterwards, a lancer regiment was ordered to recapture the town of Messines and used bayonets for the first time, yet it attacked like a hardened infantry and swept the enemy out.

The Indian contingent fully shared the losses and glory. Scarcely had the troops landed, when they were thrown in the centre of the furnace. They sustained losses unflinchingly and there was never the slightest signs of wavering.

If our Allies wished to experiment by bringing troops from India, their experiment has given decisive results. The battle in Flanders will prove to be one of the most fatal for the Germans. Several times after the night attack a single British battalion counted 700 corpses opposite its trenches. A British battery recently surprised a German brigade in close formation and massacred 4,000.

---

#### LORD FRENCH'S TRIBUTE TO INDIAN TROOPS.

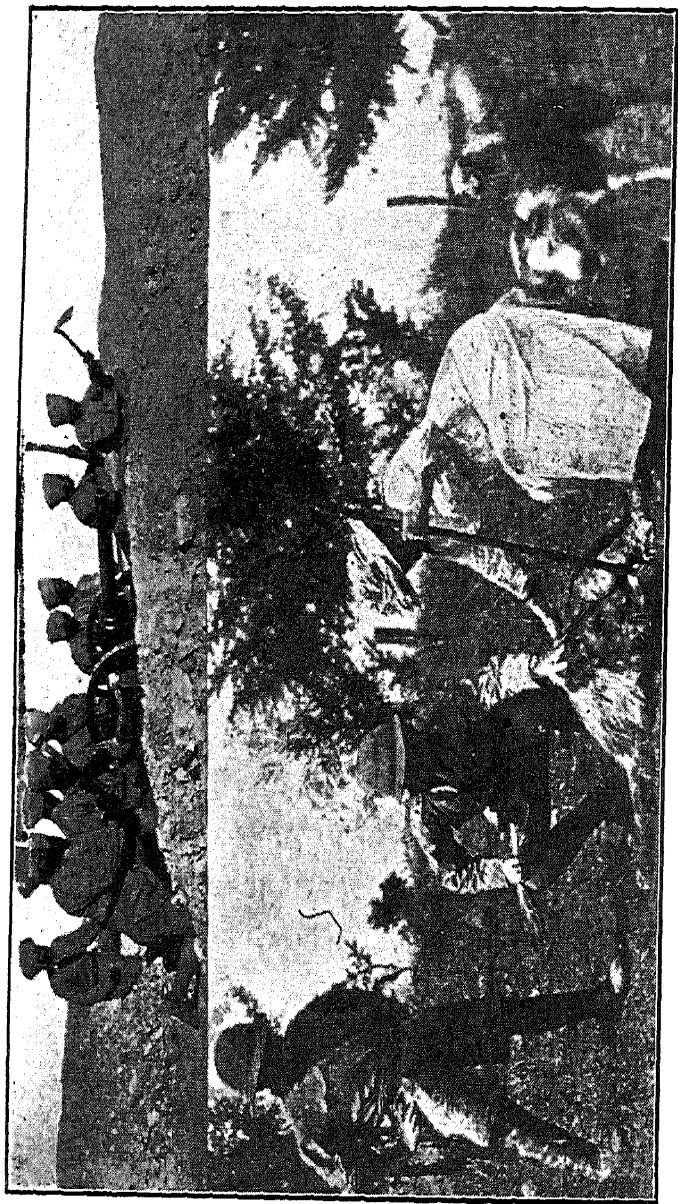
His Excellency the Viceroy received the following message from Field Marshal Sir John French:—

"I am glad to be able to inform Your Excellency that the Indian troops under General Sir James Willcocks fought with great gallantry and marked success in the capture of Neuve Chapelle and the subsequent fighting which took place on the 10th, 11th, 12th, and 13th of this month. The fighting was very severe and the losses heavy, but nothing daunted them. Their tenacity, courage, and endurance were admirable and worthy of the best traditions of the soldiers of India."

The Press Bureau has issued notes by an observer who is serving with the Indian Army. Referring to the entirely novel circumstances under which Indians are fighting, he says that it is a subject for satisfaction that Indians have so finely fulfilled the high expectations



GENERAL VOLUME.



AN INDIAN BATTERY IN ACTION.



formed of them. Their Commander has pride in the reflection that they have done the work they were asked to do and have maintained the line they were asked to maintain and in perhaps the greatest battle ever fought have shown themselves following worthily the example of so many generations of soldiers. This Commander has had a ready response to the order issued last month, which said: "You are the descendants of mighty rulers and great warriors and will fight for the King-Emperor and your faith, so that history will record the doings of India's sons, and your children will proudly tell of the deeds of their fathers."

The observer adds that the officers, who have undergone precisely the same hardships as the men, are worthy of the highest traditions of the service. In the loss of officers and men Great Britain is paying a cruel price for the liberties of Europe and nowhere is that price more bitterly felt than in the Indian Army Corps, where the friendships, sympathy, and mutual confidence between officers and men are unsurpassed in any service in the world. They count it a gain that they fell in a service they love so well.

---

The following appeared in a London paper, dated 26th October, 1914:—

"A wounded corporal of the Field Artillery, who has returned to Aberdeen, gives a vivid description of a charge by the Bengal Lancers. The place and date are eliminated. He says the enemy had been pressing us hard all along the line and suddenly flung a Brigade of Infantry supported by Artillery at a point at which, he guessed, we were most exhausted. The Germans were half way towards our trenches when the Indians, who had only arrived the day before, were brought up. Receiving the command, they swept forward, we cheering as they passed. Making a slight detour to avoid our line of fire, they swept into the Germans from the left like a whirlwind with a shrill yell. They rode right through the Germans, thrusting to the right and left and bringing the men down every time. The Germans broke and ran for their lives. The Lancers pursued them for about a mile.

When the Indians returned they were cheered all along the line."

---

The following account is taken from the "Daily Express," dated London, 22nd October, 1914, *re* its account of the behaviour of the Indian troops in their first action against the Germans:—

"They went into action as though they were on parade. There was not a flicker of an eyelash as great shells ploughed the ground around them. Their only sorrow was that it was impossible to get at close quarters with the Germans. Only the Cavalry did so, and they were more than happy."

---

Extract from a note from the Secretary of State to the Viceroy:—

"It is a matter of great satisfaction that the Indian troops have so finely fulfilled the high expectations found of them. The amazing adventures ascribed to them in press reports must be received with caution. They have done the work they have been asked to do, they maintained the positions which they were asked to maintain, and, in perhaps the greatest battle ever fought, shown themselves worthy of the martial traditions of so many generations of soldiers. The friendship, sympathy, and martial confidence subsisting between the English Officers and the men is unsurpassed in any service. The officers have undergone precisely the same hardships as the men. Their conduct is worthy of the highest traditions of the service."

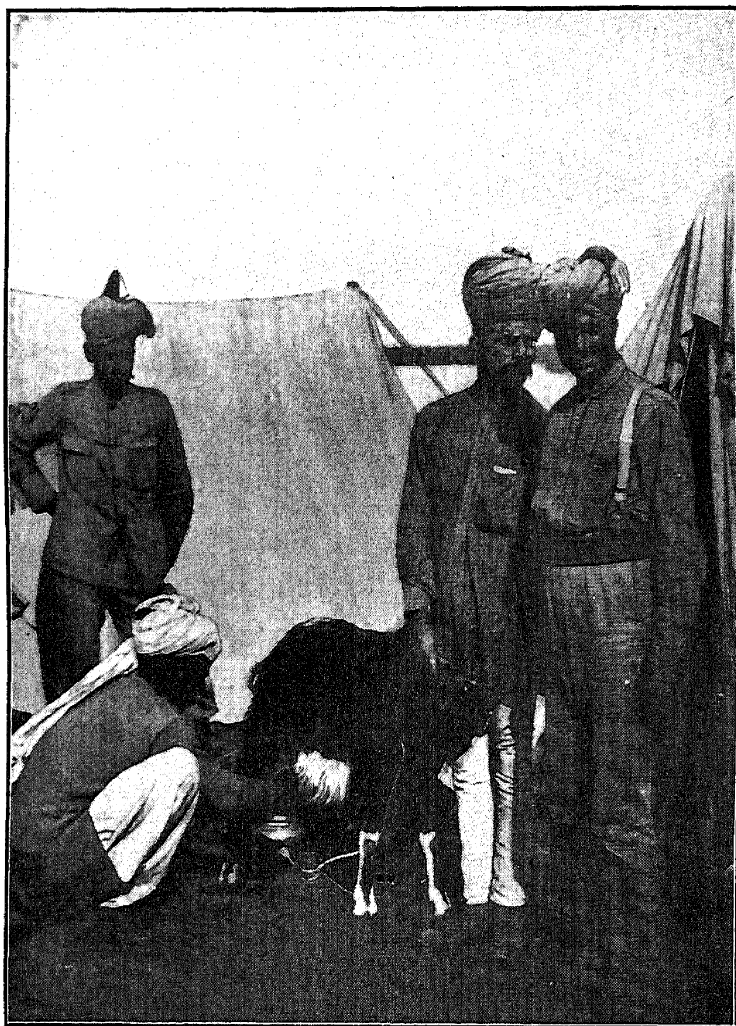
---

#### GERMAN PRAISE OF INDIAN TROOPS.

That not all Huns are devoid of chivalry is evidenced from the following interesting comments on Indian troops by a German:—

The special correspondent of the "Frankfurter Zeitung," writing his impressions of the Allies' front, praises the splendid equipment and warlike appearance of the Indians, who are well provided with winter clothing. He states that the comparatively small number of prisoners in German hands is due to the fact that they are forbidden to surrender without the permission of officers. Hence when the officers are disabled, the Indians fight till they are killed. Everything





SIKHS IN CAMP IN FRANCE MILKING ONE OF THE THOUSANDS  
OF GOATS WHICH HAVE BEEN GOT TOGETHER TO ENABLE THE  
INDIANS TO HAVE THEIR MILK. [p. 157]

he continues, is done by the British to avoid exposing the Indians to the weather. They only spend 24 hours in the trenches and then have 24 hours' rest. They are intelligent and good fighters.

Praise by an enemy is praise indeed, even though he happens to fall into an error when he says that the Indian troops were more favoured than their British comrades in arms as respects exposure to weather and length of duty in the trenches. The fact is, as official records show, there was no distinction made between Indians and Europeans, both alike had to face all sorts of weather and endure prolonged spells of trench duty.

---

#### THE LATE LORD ROBERTS' APPRECIATION OF INDIAN TROOPS.

A peculiar and sad interest attaches to the following letter by the late Field Marshal Lord Roberts, inasmuch as it was in all probability one of the last written by him to the Press. It appeared in T. P. R.'s *Great Deeds of the Great War* of 31st October, 1914 :—

"SIR,

"At such a moment when, even as I write, our Indian soldiers are being ranged with our British troops in the battle line in France, I cannot refuse your request to say a few words about these fine men.

"It is much to be deplored that the people of these Islands, as a rule, are woefully uninformed of all that pertains to our Great Indian Empire. Here is a country, in area some one million of square miles, in population something over 300 millions, in history, ancient and modern, in traditions, great and glorious, and in architectural treasures, industries and manufactures, rich and renowned. Yet how little is known about all this to the bulk of the British nation, and, unaccountable as it may seem, it has always been so. Lord Macaulay, three-quarters of a century ago, wrote that India to most people was a subject not only unpleasant but positively distasteful."

"It is not so bad now. I am glad to believe that during recent years owing largely to greater facilities for communications and

travel, a steadily increasing interest has been shown in everything pertaining to India, and a keener and more intelligent desire has been aroused to understand better our relations with our fellow-subjects inhabiting that vast continent. And a great impetus has been given to this desire by the splendid and spontaneous outburst of loyalty and devotion evoked by the great struggle with an unscrupulous enemy in which we are now involved. Princes, soldiers, and people have with one accord acclaimed our cause to be their own and have placed themselves, their troops, and their treasures at the disposal of their King for the help of Great Britain in her hour of need; their only demand being to be allowed to serve side by side with their British fellow-subjects against the common enemy.

"THESE GRAND MEN." . . . .

"During a long period in India I was constantly associated with these grand men, in peace and in war, and I had the honour of serving with them in many an arduous campaign. Each experience had strengthened my confidence in them and my admiration for their many soldierly qualities. My conviction is that properly led, they are fully the equals of our own men in courage, constancy, and endurance. When I say 'properly led,' I am referring to the number of British Officers in each Indian Regiment. At the time I left India (1893) the British Officers did not exceed 8 or 9 per Regiment, a quite insufficient proportion, but I am glad to say that this number has since then been nearly doubled, for it is not to be expected that Indians can do with less leading than British soldiers.

"SEASONED AND DISCIPLINED."

"Anyone who thinks or speaks of our Indian soldiers as mercenaries' in the common acceptation of that term, has a very mistaken idea of them. The Sikh, the Gurkha, the Rajput, the Dogra, the selected Mahomedan, enter the service because they consider the profession of arms affords the most honourable of all careers, and in the East this is universally the case.

"There is no short service in the Indian Army, unless a man, for private reasons, after three years' service in the ranks, chooses and

GENERAL VOLUME.



THE GURKHAS ARE THE SMALLEST OF THE INDIAN TROOPS, AND THE MINIMUM HEIGHT ACCEPTED IS FIVE FEET. BUT NONE ARE BRAVER OR MORE SKILLED IN HAND-TO-HAND FIGHTING. [p. 168]





claims his discharge. This, of course, may sometimes happen, but otherwise, an Indian soldier stays in the service until he is entitled to his pension. Thus the ranks of the Indian Army are filled with seasoned men who are well known to each other and to their officers, and are for years imbued with the strict sense of discipline which is the foundation for success in war.

#### "A PERSONAL TRIBUTE TO INDIAN DEVOTION.

"The loyalty of the Indian soldiers is proverbial. There are many nationalities, creeds, and castes in India, and at one time or other, during the establishment of British power in the country, we have tried a fall with all of them. The result may be briefly stated. When they fought us, they fought bravely and well, and often gave us quite as good as they got. When we finally prevailed, we shook hands, they became our good friends, and in the most arduous circumstances they have repeatedly proved their loyalty and devotion to their salt. Many instances in support of this statement could be given, many within my own personal experience. More than once a native soldier has tried to shield me with his own body when bullets were falling.

#### "A HISTORIC TESTIMONY.

"I will conclude these brief remarks with one example from a page of Macaulay relating to the defence of Arcot by Clive:—

'During the fifty days the siege was maintained. During fifty days the young Captain maintained the defence with a fierceness, vigilance, and ability which would have done honour to the oldest Marshal in Europe. The breach, however, increased day by day. The garrison began to feel the pressure of hunger. Under such circumstances many troops so scantily provided with officers might have been expected to show signs of insubordination, and the danger was peculiarly great in a force composed of men differing widely from each other in extraction, colour, language, manners, and religion. But the devotion of the little band to its chief surpassed anything that is related of the Tenth Legion of Cæsar or the Old Guard of Napoleon. The sepoy came to Clive, not to complain of their scanty

fare, but to propose that all the grain should be given to the Europeans, who required more nourishment than the Natives of Asia. The thin gruel they said, which was strained away from the rice, would suffice for them. History contains no more touching instance of Military fidelity, or the influence of a commanding mind.'

"AN APPEAL FOR A BRITISH RESPONSE."

"This appreciation, hastily written, may perhaps convey some idea of the brave men who have eagerly crossed the stormy seas to stand shoulder to shoulder with us in the battle line. With feelings of pride and gratitude we have accepted their aid. Let us show this pride and gratitude, do what we can for their comfort and well-being in the field and for tending and nursing those whose fate it may be to be struck down in the fight. The public have already made a generous response to my appeal for the 'Indian Soldiers' Fund,' but further subscriptions are needed, and I hope everyone will contribute what is possible to lessen the hardships and discomforts which these fine fellows inevitably have to endure.

"Yours, etc.,

"(Sd.) ROBERTS, F. M."

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

---

### INDIAN PRINCES AND CHIEFS ON ACTIVE SERVICE.

---

#### I

SHORTLY after the war began, as I was riding on top of a motor-omnibus going from the heart of London to Hampton Court, a man sitting in the seat immediately behind me tapped me on the shoulder and called my attention to a number of portraits decorating the exterior of a cinema-house—or “picture palace,” as it is often called.

“Ye see that?” asked the man. Looking in the direction in which he was pointing I saw a portrait which was meant to be a likeness of that gallant soldier, Lieut.-General Maharaja Sir Partab Singh.

“Fine soldier that!” exclaimed my new-found friend. “He let no grass grow under his feet! Not he! The Hun had hardly set foot in Belgium when Sir Partab rushed to our aid!”

The Englishman is so reserved by nature that he sits beside you for hours in a railway carriage without taking any notice of you. You may travel for miles on top of a ’bus without so much as a “good morning” from the fellow whose shoulder jostles against yours every time the vehicle goes over a rough bit of road. Only when that trait in the Englishman’s character is borne in mind, is it possible to realize how powerfully the emotions of Britons must have been stirred by the rally of the Indian Princes and peoples to the British flag, to make the man sitting behind me on top of the omnibus start a conversation with me. Once the ice was broken,

however, the fellow kept up a running comment upon people and events.

The warm manner in which he spoke of India's Rajas and Commoners who had rushed to Britain's aid during her hour of crisis reflected the gratitude that the British people felt in those days. How difficult it now seems to convey to people in India an adequate idea of the emotions that India's generous response to the Empire's call stirred in Englishmen and Englishwomen at the time when the fate of the Empire trembled in the balance! A thin line of British soldiers had crossed the Channel to reinforce the hard-pressed French and Flemish forces facing the concentrated attack for which the German General Staff had been preparing in secret for so long. Reinforcements to the British forces could come from but one part of the Empire—from India, which alone maintained, at that time, a standing army of any great dimensions.

Help came without hesitation, without the slightest desire for barter. It came from India of the Rajas as well as from British India. One of the first Indian Rulers to cable to the Viceroy offering his personal services was the late Maharaja of Rewa, in his famous telegram: "What orders of the King-Emperor for me and my troops?" And the Maharaja-Gaekwar of Baroda took everybody's breath away by placing the resources of his State at the disposal of the King-Emperor. These are but two instances of a devotion which was universal throughout Indian India.

Contingents from the Indian Army and from the troops maintained in Indian States went into the firing line in the principal theatre of war long before troops from any other overseas unit of the Empire could take the field there, and although, of Britain's children overseas, India was by no means the nearest to that scene of action.

What wonder that in those early days of the war the tall, stalwart, be-turbaned, be-whiskered Sikhs, who not so very long before had attracted the rude notice of everyone, and about whom the street gamins used to make unseemly remarks as they followed them in tormenting droves, were considered to be the saviours of the

Empire! Wherever any Indian went he was respectfully saluted by the populace. When English people passed an Indian student on the street they stopped to shake hands with him and told him what a relief it was to feel that the Indians were coming to their rescue.

The cabled reports of the offers made by the various Rajas and by Indians in general were displayed at considerable length in newspapers of all shades of political opinion. In view of the fact that all the papers were materially cut down in size because of a famine of print-paper, and that practically all the space had to be devoted to actual war-news, that was a marked compliment. Many of the editors did not content themselves with merely printing reports concerning India's desire to help the British at that critical juncture, but found space for leaders and leaderettes calling particular attention to India's loyalty and warmly praising Indians for their rally round the Union Jack.

The action of the Rajas attracted more notice than the offers of Indian commoners to help the Empire. Indeed, to read through the columns of the newspapers and to listen to the talk in fashionable drawing rooms and on the street, one would have thought that the British, as a rule, did not much distinguish India apart from her Rajas, whose resplendent traditions stirred their imagination.

The fact which appealed most to Britons was that so many of the Rajas chose themselves to serve with the troops. Scions of mighty warriors and wise kings were they. The ancestors of many of them ruled large kingdoms justly and ably when civilization was only dawning in Europe, none among the distinguished personages who were fighting alongside them could claim so ancient and so noble a lineage as theirs. Needless to add, the enemy had no warriors whose names could be mentioned in the same breath with India's Rajas.

Their claim to distinction rested not merely upon a 'glorious past. They exercised sovereign functions over their States; their powers, moreover, were not restricted by Parliaments or constitutions.

## II.

Here is a list, arranged in alphabetical order for the sake of convenience, of the Indian Sovereign Rulers who went to war in one theatre or another :—

- The Raja of Akalkot ;
- The Raja of Bariya ;
- The Rana of Barwani ;
- The Maharaja of Bikaner ;
- The Maharaja of Idar ;
- The Maharaja of Jamkhandi ;
- The Maharajadhiraj of Kishengarh ;
- The Nawab of Loharu ;
- The Maharaja of Marwar (Jodhpur) ;
- The Maharaja of Mayurbhanj ;
- The Chief of Mudhol ;
- The Jam Sahib (now Maharaja) of Navanagar (Jamnagar) ;
- The Thakore Sahib of Rajkot ;
- The Maharaja of Ratlam ;
- The Nawab of Sachin ;
- The Sar Desai of Savantvadi ;
- The Nawab of Savanur ; and
- The Raj Sahib of Vankaner.

With the exception of the Nawab of Loharu, who performed political duties in the region wrested from the Turks, all the Rajas were attached to the staffs of Indian corps, or were officers of specified regiments. Most of them served in the Western theatre of war.

Brought up in the lap of luxury, with great retinues of servants to attend upon them, they chose the hardships of active service, where the greatest among them could have but one officer to serve as aide-de-camp, secretary, and personal attendant, and could not have even a small room all to himself, but had to share it with another Raja. Born and bred under India's tropical sun they had to bear the rigours of the European winter—rigours accentuated by the novel conditions under which warfare had to be conducted in those





THREE GREAT INDIAN CHIEFS WITH THE ARMIES IN FRANCE.



early days of the grim struggle. It proved to be a bitterly cold winter, with much wet and slush. Many persons who entertained great regard for General His Highness Maharaja Sir Partab Singh, who was then past the seventieth milestone of life, were apprehensive that he would find the climate very trying; but they forgot that he had accompanied the Boxer Expedition to China, and had been snow-bound in a frontier campaign. In any case, he passed two whole winters in France without making the least complaint.

How well the Rajas at the Western Front were able to bear the wet and cold of France and Flanders was brought home to me by a photograph which Colonel His Highness the Raja of Ratlam showed me on one of his visits to London during the course of the conflict. It was taken in the depth of winter, and the ground was covered with a thick blanket of snow. The group included the Raja Sahib, Raj Kumar Captain Sardar Singh, and Rao Raja Lieutenant Sagat Singh, and several French men and women, who had been on a shooting expedition in a forest outside the war-zone. I noticed that the Indian fighters wore their ordinary army tunics, and did not have any mufflers to protect their throats from the cold, whereas the Europeans wore heavy overcoats. The contrast was striking, and very graphically brought out the hardiness of the scions of the Indian Ruling Families.

It would, perhaps, have been impossible for the Rajas at the front to endure the hardships attendant upon active service had they not deliberately inured themselves to privation. It is well known that Major-General His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner is so devoted to soldiering that he represses his appetite, lest indulgence in the luxuries of life may lower his fighting efficiency. Maharaja Sir Partab Singh has, all his life, scrupulously avoided indulgence of every description, and has periodically inflicted severe privations upon himself so as to harden his constitution and enable him to bear hardships without flinching, as in the Tirah Campaign, when he was wounded and did not let anyone know about it until he was threatened with blood-poisoning. The Maharaja of Patiala, who unfortunately

was compelled by illness to abandon his journey to the front, sleeps on straw, between ordinary, rough army blankets, when he, with his troops, is engaged in manœuvres.

As the Rajas came from the various fronts on brief holidays to London, I had the opportunity of talking with them. I found that they had not a word to say about the privations that they suffered while on active service. The only feeling that they exhibited was that of happiness to be of some assistance to their Ally, the King-Emperor, in that time of trial. They all said that they were engaged on a soldier's job, and, so long as they remained on active duty, they were willing to rough it.

I heard from independent sources that their self-abnegation saved the military authorities all anxiety. This complete disregard for personal comfort is a trait that I am sure the ordinary reader would not expect in Rajas, who are generally believed to live a life of luxury.

How characteristic it was of our culture that the only difficulty to which any Raja on active service permitted himself to refer in the most casual terms was that connected with bathing. Used to taking their baths daily, nay, more than once a day, they naturally felt most uncomfortable when they found that even a weekly or fortnightly bath, which had to be taken in the open air in winter, was a great luxury. Sponge baths were not popular with them. One of them took back with him from London an ingenious device which served as a bath as well as a packing case, and appeared to be very happy when speaking to me of that discovery.

---

### III.

The Indian rulers did not go to the field of action for a week or a month. On the contrary, many of them absented themselves from their States for considerable periods. Take, for instance, His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner. He was at the front for about two years, and, in addition, undertook the onerous duties incidental upon serving as one of the Indian representatives at the Imperial War Conferences



GENERAL VOLUME.



INDIAN OFFICERS WITH MAHARAJA OF JODHPUR FOLLOWING BEHIND THE GUN  
CARRIAGE BEARING THE REMAINS OF THE LATE COMMANDER,  
LORD ROBERTS. [p. 167]

in 1917 and 1919. His Highness Raja Sir Sajjan Singh, the Raja of Ratlam, was on active service for about three years.

His Highness Maharaja Sir Pratab Singh, who was acting as Maharaja-Regent of Marwar at the outbreak of hostilities, spent almost three years in the Western theatre of war, and, towards the close of hostilities, was transferred to France. Lieutenant His Highness Maharaja Sumar Singh, the late Maharaja of Marwar, who was only 17 when he left Bombay for active service, was with the fighting forces for several months, and would not have gone back to India when he did had it not been for the fact that his minority was rapidly nearing its close, and Lord Hardinge wished to invest him with ruling powers before he surrendered the great office of Viceroy and Governor-General to Lord Chelmsford. Lieutenant-Colonel His Highness the Maharaja of Idar, Lieutenant-Colonel the Maharaja of Kishengarh, and Lieutenant-Colonel His Highness the Jam of Navanagar (Jainnagar), not to speak of the other Rajas, spent the best part of the winter of 1914-15 on the Staff of Field-Marshal French. Matters of State compelled them to return to India. They expressed the wish, as soon as they had adjusted the affairs that required their personal attention, to return to the front. The Viceroy, with the greatest difficulty, prevailed upon them not to make further sacrifices.

His Excellency could not, however, keep Maharaja Sir Pratab Singh from returning to the Western theatre of war. His Highness told me that he could not find it in his heart to remain in Europe while his great-nephew and ward, the Maharaja of Marwar, was being made the *de facto* ruler of his State. He tore himself away from the battlefield with tears streaming from his eyes—the only time in his life that that veteran Indian warrior is known to have given way to grief. No one could, however, keep him in India after the investiture ceremony had been performed. His Highness told the various persons who sought to dissuade him from leaving India that he had no administrative duties to worry him now that his Maharaja Regentship of Marwar had ended, and he hurried back to France as quickly as he could.

That the sovereign rulers of large States should have been willing to absent themselves, for long periods, from their territories in order to go on active service was a great compliment to the British Empire. It must be remembered that our Rajas rule personally, and do not merely reign. Absence from their States, therefore, meant that they had to leave the administration in the hands of a Prime Minister or a Council of Ministers. But whether in their own territories or at the front, the responsibility for good government ultimately rested upon their shoulders, and even when on active duty, they had to transact a certain amount of official business that could not be finally disposed of save by themselves. This meant that they had to carry on their sovereign functions simultaneously with their military duties while they were at the war. Only the deepest devotion to the British could, therefore, have induced them to go on active service.

The Indian rulers who went to the front offered vivid contrasts. While Maharaja Sumer Singh was only 17, his great-uncle, Maharaja Sir Partab Singh, was 71. The Nawab of Loharu, who served in the Persian Gulf, was about 56 years old. All the other Rajas were in prime of life.

Among them the Rajas reproduced, in microcosm, India's races and religions. Many of them, especially those belonging to the Rajput Houses, were of the purest Aryan stock. One of them Captain His Highness the Nawab of Sachin, was of Abyssinian descent. With the exceptions of the Nawab of Sachin, Savanur, and Loharu, all Muslims, the Rajas were Hindus.

Among the latter there was one, the Appa Sahib Patwardhan (or Chief) of Jamkhandi, who was a Brahman. That he should have been willing to flout the caste regulations that bar a Brahman from crossing the seas shows his progressive spirit no less than his devotion to the British cause.

Another Hindu, the Raja Sahib of Akalkot, who was on active service for several months, but who, much to his regret, was compelled by ill-health to go back to India, was a Mahratta belonging to the

celebrated Bhonslé clan. All the other Hindu Rajas at the front were Rajputs. They belonged to various clans, but were mostly connected with one another by blood-relationship and marriage.

The ruling dynasty of Marwar and its offshoots were specially well represented at the front. I have already stated that His Highness the Maharaja of Marwar went to the Continent and remained there for almost a year, and that His Highness Maharaja Sir Partab Singh was in France for about three years. His Highness the Raja of Ratlam, who served with the Indian Cavalry in the Western theatre of war, was descended from the Marwar Ruling Family, and so was the Maharajadhiraja of Idar, who saw active service in Egypt.

---

#### IV.

I may also add that several Princes of the Marwar House were with the colours. Maharaja Sir Partab Singh's two sons, Lieutenant Rao Raja Kanwar Sagat Singh and Rao Raja Kanwar Hanwat Singh, served with him. The Commandant, Sher Singh Maharaj, and some of the officers of the Jodhpur Lancers were closely connected with the ruling dynasty of Marwar. Even some of the men of this regiment, and of the cavalry regiments of the British-Indian Army on active service, claimed kinship with His Highness the Maharaja of Marwar. The fraternal tie binds the Rajputs indissolubly together, and the highest and the lowest clansmen treated each other with the greatest consideration, and even affection.

His Highness the Jam Sahib ("Ranji") not only took an active part in the war himself, but several members of his family saw active service. His nephew, Lient. Daji Raj, a valiant officer and adjutant of the Jodhpur Lancers, was killed in action in France.

Another Ruling Family which sent several relatives to fight in the Great War was that of Cooch Behar. His Highness the Maharaja Sahib's younger brother, Prince Hitindra, whose recent death is much deplored, was one of the first Indians to volunteer for service, and remained with the Indian Corps in France (in the famous Gharwal

Brigade, which won more than one Victoria Cross) until he was invalided home after being wounded. His Highness's cousin, Lieutenant Sen, R. F. C., was a prisoner in Germany, owing to a mishap while flying over the enemy lines.

Amongst members of other Indian Ruling Families conspicuous for their bravery may be mentioned those of Mysore, Bhopal, and Panna. So eager were the cadets of the Indian Ruling Families to see service that, as one of the Maharajas told me, scions of ruling dynasties who were extremely proud of their descent, offered to him and to other Rajas to serve as hostlers if they would only take them to Europe. Though on active service, they received no pay, and would have disdained it had it been offered. This is a point that few persons in the British Empire, or even in India, grasped, and, as a consequence, the Raj-Kumars and even Rajas on active service were often confused with paid officers belonging to the British-Indian Regiments.

Few persons realised the significance of the presence at the front of the Rana Jodha Jang Bahadur of Nepal, which, to all intents and purposes, is an independent country, with complete internal autonomy and power to control its foreign relations as it may see fit. The presence at the front of the nephew of the *de facto* ruler His Excellency Maharaja Sir Chandra Shumshere Jang, Rana Bahadur, Prime Minister and Marshal of Nepal, therefore, showed the close friendship that exists between the Government of India and the State on the Himalayan frontier.

The Rana Jodha Jang Bahadur was awarded the Military Cross in 1915, for commanding "a double company with great ability and conspicuous gallantry in face of a fierce fire from rifles, machine-guns, grenades, and bombs." The official account continued: His bravery was previously observed on September 25th last, when he led his company with marked gallantry and dash, right up to the German wire under very heavy rifle and machine-gun fire."

The deed of bravery which won the Rana Jodha Jang Bahadur his medal was performed in the fighting near Ypres. He was wounded in the arm while commanding a company, but refused to leave his



men until they had reached their objective. Later he was struck by a fragment of a high explosive shell, but gritted his teeth and went on until he fainted from loss of blood and exhaustion. Queen Mary pinned the Military Cross on his breast as a reward for his valour, and he was appointed A.-D.-C. to the Viceroy. A little later he was given a commission in the regular Indian Army with the rank of Captain.

This chronicle does not deal with the troops sent to fight and the contributions of various kinds made by the Rajas towards the prosecution of the war, as they are treated separately.

---

•



## CHAPTER IX.

---

### THE EFFECT OF THE WAR ON INDIA.

DURING its last century of contact with the energetic civilization of the West there has been an amount of strenuous endeavour in India that has almost belied the state of comparative lethargy and easy-going methods that prevailed in this country prior to the period mentioned. It is no exaggeration to say that there has been an Indian Renaissance, widespread in its range, profound in its inspiration and rich in the fruit it has borne. The movement is increasing in vitality every decade and many a milestone of progress is being rapidly passed.

Among the events which have, from time to time, imparted powerful impulses to this movement must be counted the recent war. Paradoxical as it may appear, a war, with all the destruction and carnage it inflicts on humanity, draws forth the latent powers of a people as well as the potential resources of a country and is often responsible for a glorious rejuvenation, side by side with ruinous bankruptcy in certain directions. That has been exactly the way in which the war has affected India, which was drawn into the vortex of the warring nations of the West, though her own shores were left free of the dreadful activities of battling armies and navies. The meteoric course of the "Emden" was responsible for the sinking of a few ships and the bombardment of a few defenceless ports, but otherwise the destructive elements of war were nowhere to be found in this land. But throughout there was a strong element of activity calling forth the resources of India to the fullest extent, in aid of the great cause of civilization which was being threatened in Europe and, indirectly, all over the world,

by the military empires of Germany and Austria. Warriors marched forth in streams from their simple wayside villages to fight on foreign soil, far away from their home. The people were thrilled with new ideas of liberty and aspiration for a more spacious national life. There were efforts in every direction to mobilise all the material resources of the land and the wharf of many a port bore silent witness to work in this direction, by the piles of packages piled up for transport to the theatres of war. The exercise of national faculties in so many directions was bound to leave its impress on the minds and character of the people and also help in the reconstruction of the land, so as to make her a worthier member of the sisterhood of peoples in the world.

It has been said of many a powerful personality in the realms of biography that he rose one morning and found himself famous. Such sudden recognition of importance is naturally rare in the case of nations, as their rise is largely a matter of slow development and has to be general, before there can be such increased esteem in the world. The four years of the European War from 1914 to 1918 have, however, been a period of momentous import for India, and the war has left her with her reputation higher in the British Empire and among the peoples of the world. Not that she did not command any respect in the West before this cataclysmal outburst. But it was merely in the direction of a benevolent and indulgent praise of her ancient civilization and her wonderful contributions to the literature and philosophy of the world. As a modern power of any influence and importance, she was unknown.

The war has changed the situation to a very great degree, for have not Indian soldiers displayed their valour on the battlefields of Europe and has not India shown unsurpassed loyalty and devotion to the Throne and the cause of civilization. The wilds of Africa, the deserts of Sinai, and the ancient cities of Asia Minor have borne witness to the sacrifice and heroism of the former :—

Gathered like pearls in their alien graves,  
Silent they sleep by the Persian waves ;

Scattered like shells in Egyptian sands,  
 They lie with pale brows and brave, broken hands  
 They are strewn like blossoms mown down by chance  
 On the blood-brown meadows of Flanders and France.\*

The highest military distinctions open to a soldier of the Great British Empire have also been theirs, and it is no wonder that the average man in the West to-day looks at the Indian from an angle of vision very different from what he had before the war.

If the help and capacity of India and her peoples were appreciated in the theatres of war, her enhanced prestige also received recognition when the victorious nations assembled at the palace of Versailles, to dictate the terms of peace to the aggressive and defeated Empires of Germany and Austria and their companions in crime. It is with exhilaration of heart that an Indian reads the lines in *Paradise Regained*, in which the poet, drawing attention to the train of ambassadors leaving the gates of Rome, describes those from India and Ceylon :

From India and the golden Chersonese,  
 And utmost Indian isle Taprobane,

Dusk faces with white silken turbans wreathed.

How much more inspiring, by greater nearness of time and bearing on practical affairs, is the sight of His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner and the Right Hon'ble Lord Sinha taking part in the deliberations of a Peace Conference held on the conclusion of the most gigantic war ever fought on earth. In a document which promises to be one of the most outstanding landmarks in the history of the nations, there are affixed the signatures of the representatives of India and its significance cannot be denied. It is the first official recognition of India having a definite status of her own, among the great units of the British Empire and generally of the powers of the world.

The Right Hon'ble Mr. Montagu, the Secretary of State for India, drew attention to this effect of the war on the position of India,

---

\* Mrs. Sarojini Naidu: *The Gift of India*.

in the course of his speech at the last budget debate on India in the House of Commons :—

“I will try to sketch the position in India to-day. If we were considering only the position of India *vis-a-vis* the great nations of the world, the situation is a bright one. After having taken up the challenge which Germany and her Allies presented to the civilized world, after having devoted her invaluable troops and her resources to the Allied cause, India has won for herself a place in international discussion equal to that of the British Dominions and greater than the position occupied by any power in the world, except, of course, those who are colloquially known as the ‘Big Five.’ Not only has she separate access to the Peace Conference, not only have her representatives received from the King power to sign, on his behalf, peace with His Majesty’s enemies, but as members of the British Empire Delegation they share in the task of concerting the policy of the British Empire. I can only say on behalf of my colleagues, His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner and Lord Sinha, and myself, that we have devoted ourselves in Paris with all the more concentration to the interest of the Indian Empire, because we realize we are the representative of a people not yet, unfortunately, self-governing.

“It must have been a satisfaction to the House of Commons to learn that India was to be an original member of the League of Nations, and that Indian representatives are to sit in the far-reaching and important international labour organization which is to result from the Peace Treaty. These things, together with the place occupied by my friend and colleague, Lord Sinha, in the House of Lords, commit Parliament to the view that this position is only justified if you can raise India to the position of a sister nation in the British Empire, and is wholly inconsistent with a position of subordination. I must go one step farther. I would say to our colleagues who have sat with us round the Conference table, representing the great Dominions of this Empire, that the position of equality which they have given to the representative of India is wholly inconsistent, in my humble opinion, with the treatment of the citizens of India in British Dominions, in

South Africa or anywhere else—in a position which puts them lower than the citizens of any other parts of the British Empire.”

Ever since the introduction of western culture into India and the appreciation by her people of the free institutions of Britain, there has been an eager longing for a large political life. It is the inevitable consequence of coming into contact with the life and thought of a people who could say with legitimate pride:—

It is not to be thought of that the flood  
Of British freedom, which, to the open sea  
Of the world's praise, from dark antiquity  
Hath flowed, “with pomp of waters unwithstood,”  
Roused though it be full often to a mood  
Which spurns the check of salutary hands,  
That this most famous stream in bogs and sands  
Should perish; and to evil and to good  
Be lost for ever. In our halls is hung  
Armoury of the invincible knights of old;  
We must be free or die, who speak the tongue  
That Shakespeare spake: the faith and morals hold  
Which Milton held. In everything we are sprung  
Of earth's first blood, have titles manifold.\*

But the incidents of the war and the moral issues involved in it have exercised an even more powerful influence in changing the horizon of the minds of the people. There was the unique spectacle of great nations like England and France rushing to war and sacrificing blood and treasure, championing the cause of a small country like Belgium threatened by aggressive and unscrupulous neighbours. The United States of America joined the struggle, too, from the other side of the Atlantic, with the highest of humanitarian motives and for the support of Freedom. When the aggressive nations were laid low, the victorious powers met, not in the flushed mood of conquerors, but in a statesmanlike spirit for the reconstruction of the peace and harmony of the world. The endeavour of the great promoters of Peace, headed

---

\* Wordsworth: “British Freedom.”

by President Wilson, has been in the direction of liberating oppressed nationalities and basing government on the people's will and recognition of the principle of 'self-determination' in deciding the political destiny of peoples. Age-long tyrannies have vanished and everywhere the peoples are clutching the keys of power of the State.

Such a democratic upheaval, probably the greatest in history, must have its natural consequences on the people of India, who are no longer living in splendid isolation, but, as members of the British Empire, have been brought into the maelstrom of world-forces and are vibrating to all the newer impulses of the world. The awakening came even in the early days of the war, in view of the part the country was playing in its conduct and the splendid services rendered by the Princes and the people of India. The aspiration for a larger political life, which existed in the country decades earlier, found increased strength of utterance, acquiring greater self-confidence as well as greater hope of fruition. The political education of the people so as to fit them for self-government has always been present in the minds of at least the liberal statesmen of England and, even without the war, India was bound to receive more and more liberal instalments of reform, marking further stages in the movement inaugurated by the wisdom and foresight of the Marquis of Ripon and later by Lord Morley and Lord Minto. But the war has meant a sudden leap; the contemplated progress of several years has been abridged suddenly and we have now the Montagu-Chelmsford Reforms.

The distinguished writers of the Montagu-Chelmsford Report on Indian Constitutional Reform have taken note of this awakening in their official survey of the question: "The war has affected India in many ways, but above all it has become the predominant fact in the whole situation. The reason of the entry of Britain into the war appealed to the educated classes. . . . The spectacle of Indian troops going forth gladly to fight for justice and right, side by side with the British army, appealed intensely to India's imagination. It was a source of legitimate pride and delight to her people that



Indian regiments should be deemed fit to face the most highly trained enemy in the world. . . . The war and the sentiments to which the war has given expression have made political reforms loom larger in India. . . . The war has given to India a new sense of self-esteem. She has in the words of Sir Satyendra (now Lord) Sinha, 'a feeling of profound pride that she has not fallen behind other portions of the British Empire but has stood shoulder to shoulder with them in the hour of their sorest trial.' She feels that she has been tried and not found wanting, that thereby her status has been raised, and that it is only her due that her higher status should be recognized by Great Britain and the world at large. The war has given an interest in public affairs to many thousands who were indifferent before. . . . We find a belief that India has proved herself worthy of further trust and of a more liberal form of government, and that whatever changes are made should be made in recognition of her own progress, rather than as the award for any services she has rendered."

Practical response to this feeling was furnished to the people of India by the well-known declaration made by the Right Hon'ble the Secretary of State for India in the House of Commons on the 20th August, 1917, on behalf of His Majesty's Government: "The policy of His Majesty's Government, with which the Government of India are in complete accord, is that of the increasing association of Indians in every branch of administration and the gradual development of self-governing institutions with a view to the progressive realization of responsible government in India as an integral part of the British Empire." The practical fruition of this aim to a definite stage is within the very near future.

The development of the material resources of the land and the building up of new industries, may not be so appealing to the imagination as the two effects of the war on India already noticed and commented upon, namely, increased national prestige and a keenly awakened political consciousness; but it is not to be despised as it lies at the root of all national prosperity and an enlarged

political vision by itself cannot add materially to the happiness of the people. "Whoever could make two ears of corn or two blades of grass," said Swift, "to grow upon a spot of ground where only one grew before, would do better for mankind and do more essential service to his country, than the whole race of politicians put together." And one may say in the parlance of modern industry and commerce, that he who makes two looms or two lathes work where one worked is a great benefactor to society.

Paradoxical as it may appear, the Great War has meant the beginning of a new industrial era for India. In the very early stages of the war there was an acute realization of India's backwardness in industrial matters and her abject dependence on foreign countries for most of the manufactured goods needed for her consumption, in spite of the wealth of her own natural resources and her own pre-eminent position at one time in the history of the world in manufactures and industry. The necessities of war demanded a large supply of goods of various kinds, and the industrial resources of the country were mobilized to help the situation. With the help of the Indian Munitions Board, established under the authority of Government for the effective working of this object, it was possible to introduce, organize and develop new industrial operations, and the four years of the war have given a more powerful impetus to Indian industries than the work of several earlier decades.

The practical absence of imports from foreign countries, owing to the abnormal conditions of the war, gave rise to other industrial developments to meet the needs of the civil population, in spite of the difficulties in the way of getting new machinery for the purpose. Necessity has always been the mother of invention, and in more than one direction attempts were made successfully to utilize indigenous material for such expansion, when deprived of foreign assistance in the matter. Striking progress was made, for instance, in the manufacture of chemicals usually imported from foreign countries; in steel goods of various kinds never before manufactured in India, thanks to the enterprise of the Tata Works at Jamshedpur; in improved

processes of tanning leather, also in the building of ships and river-craft, an industry which had known days of glory in the earlier history of India.

The Indian Industrial Commission appointed by the Government of India Resolution No. 3403 of the 19th May, 1916, is the embodiment, in some measure, of this new aspiration and effort. With a personnel consisting of several able industrial experts, the Commission investigated the means by which "Government can usefully give direct encouragement to industrial development," and signs are already evident that its deliberations, which extended over two years, will bear valuable fruit. It is not surprising that the members of the Indian Industrial Commission should have taken note of the influence of the war in increasing the desire for industrial progress in the country. "We feel it necessary," they rightly observe, "to refer to the considerable change in public opinion regarding industrial questions brought about by the war, a change which we also see reflected clearly in the policy of Government. We have explained in our report the deadening effect produced by Lord Morley's dictum of 1910 on the initial attempt by the Government for the improvement of industries; but a change of sentiment was gradually coming about and a considerable step in advance was marked by the appointment of our Commission, with liberty to discuss the question of the direct participation of Government in the industrial development of the country. Since then the views of Government and of the public have been modified under the stress of war necessities, which have led to a still more definite adoption of the policy of State participation in industrial development and to the grant of State assistance to several industrial undertakings, of which the scope is not in every case limited by the possible duration of the present war. The working of the Indian Munitions Board has shown several examples of this policy and we trust that care will be taken to preserve such features of this organization as are properly adapted to peace conditions. We desire here to refer to the extent to which the action taken by Government and private industrialists under conditions created by the war has

assisted us, by furnishing actual examples of schemes which we have been contemplating. Though some of our conclusions have thus been forestalled, we have been enabled to present them with more certainty and completeness."

The close of the war has witnessed even more striking proof of effort towards industrial development. In the history of Indian industry and commerce, the year 1919 will be handed down as the starting point of several new joint-stock concerns, financed on a scale unprecedented in India. Industrial banks, ship-building companies, tanneries of an up-to-date kind, chemical manufactories, schemes for generating new electric power, and numerous other organizations, directed to the end of the material advancement of the country, have cropped up with amazing rapidity and promise to inaugurate a new era of prosperity. The war produced a certain amount of economic unsettlement by the raising of prices and by injury to certain branches of trade and industry, but the enormous profits made during the war by industrialists and producers all over the country have resulted in the building up of a large amount of capital, now placed at the disposal of the country for such beneficent purposes.

The influence exercised by the war on the nation's mind and character, being of a subtler kind, is difficult of definite appraisal. But to a discerning observer of things going on in the community round him, the effect at least in some directions ought to be apparent. It has, for instance, served to liberalize the national mind and the cause of social reform has received encouragement. Thousands of Indians in the ranks of the army and in other walks of life have crossed the seas and come into contact with diverse races of people in strange lands and the result has been twofold. It has intensified the sense of unity among themselves and has worn off some of their angularities by bringing them into intimate contact with foreigners. With their demobilization and return to their village homes all over the country, they have carried with them the message of the wider world, an increased sense of brotherhood and a wider sense of humanity.



GENERAL VOLUME.



SIKHS AT WORSHIP ON A HOSPITAL SHIP—THE PRIEST CAN BE SEEN READING THE SIKH'S SACRED BOOK "GURUGRANTH" WHILE BRITISH SOLDIERS AND OTHER INDIANS (NOT SIKHS) ARE SEEN STANDING IN THE BACKGROUND. [p. 183]

Allied to it is the encouragement given to the spirit of social service. Though India was far removed from the actual theatre of war, there was presented before the eyes of the people a unique spectacle of service to humanity in the shape of war-hospitals, relief funds for sufferers in the war organizations for taking care of the disabled and help at numerous centres for the more effective prosecution of Red Cross work. The sight of ladies volunteering for the work as nurses and of women, even in the odd corners of the extensive British Empire in India, engaged in the preparation of comforts for soldiers fighting abroad, was bound to exercise an elevating influence on the people of the country. The spirit of social service has undoubtedly been one of the earliest traditions of Indian civilization, and it has manifested itself in some form or other in every period of Indian history. It is now the humanitarian Buddhist monk going about the country with his gentle message of *ahimsa*; the pious Hindu King looking upon the well-being of the masses of his State as the highest ambition of his life; the orange-robed *sanyasi* inspiring others to deeds of unselfishness by the splendid example of his own renunciation; the luckless widow, doomed to unhappiness in life, seeking solace in service in the domestic circle, the spirit has always been in the country and it only requires being fanned afresh and made to inspire new forms and activities in altered conditions of social life. The war has been one of the most stimulating agencies of the principle in recent years.

Peace may have her victories no less renowned than war, but a continuous spell of peace has often an injurious effect on the martial spirit of a nation. Under the protecting ægis of the British Empire, India has had such a period of quiet for so many decades, that outside the few professedly military castes in India, the traditions of a martial career were rapidly dying out. The war has served to give a much-needed shaking to the people of the country and the martial spirit has begun to inspire a wider circle of people. The formation of the Indian Defence Force and the establishment of

special military organizations for the educated classes, like the University Platoons and the Bengal Light Horse, mark a new epoch, while the throwing open to Indians of commissioned ranks in the army, though on a small scale, have added fresh distinction to a military career in the eyes of India.

In an examination of the happier conditions which promise to dawn on the earth in this period of reconstruction, elsewhere in this volume, under the title of the "New Era," reference is made to the beneficent influences beginning to be felt in several countries in all departments of national life. Having been drawn into the vortex of the world's affairs without being confined to a limited national existence as in the past, it will be seen that India has shared in the quickening of life perceptible everywhere and many of the observations would apply to her own conditions of renewed life. Like the awakening into life of the inmates of the palace in Tennyson's *Day-Dream* at the touch of the Prince, in India also has

All the long-pent stream of life,

Dash'd downward in the cataract,

by the convulsion of the war which has left no part of the world untouched. When the time comes to record in full the activities of India in the twenty-first century, it will undoubtedly be one of the prominent landmarks to which the future historian will direct his vision as the starting point of a richer and more vigorous national life.

---

●



## CHAPTER X.

### THE CONSTITUTIONAL ERA IN INDIA.

#### THE DYARCHY.

A MESSAGE from the Rt. Hon'ble Lord Islington, G.C.M.G., P.C., Chairman, Joint Select Committee of Parliament on Indian Affairs, late Under Secretary of State for India.

[Lord Islington has had a wide constitutional experience. He was Governor-General of New Zealand for 1910-12 and then left to immediately take up the appointment of Chairman of the Indian Public Services Commission, on which he was engaged for over two years. At the outbreak of war he was Under Secretary of State for the Colonies, and about eighteen months later was transferred to the India Office, where he remained till after the termination of the war. While Mr. Montagu was absent from England on his Indian Mission, Lord Islington acted as Secretary of State, and later served on both the Selborne Committees which dealt with the Indian Reform legislation. What Lord Islington has to say on the new era which has opened in India is of interest.—EDITOR.]

The system of administration set up in the major provinces of India is exceedingly complicated. A liberal system of constitutional government in regard to a category of selected subjects has been introduced; while the remaining category of subjects continues to be controlled by the official executive, responsible, not to the legislature, but to Parliament.

Such a nicely-balanced arrangement can be easily upset by any determined group of persons with malign intentions, while, however,

it is easy to wreck the scheme, it requires great imagination, patience, and tact upon the part of everyone concerned, the representatives of the people, the permanent officials and the Governor—more especially the Governor—to make it a success.

In my opinion, success can be ensured only if strict attention is paid to the convention in regard to joint deliberation by the two wings of the provincial administration, laid down in the report of the Joint Select Committee on the Government of India Bill. Every subject of importance, whether reserved or transferred, should be discussed in the united Cabinet. One subject should not be isolated from any other. There should be no secrets between the two sections, official or ministerial. In other words, so far as deliberation and discussion of all matters are concerned, the spirit and procedure in the Provincial Government should conform as far as possible to those prevailing in an ordinary harmonious Cabinet in this or any other country. Duality should be practised only when the issue has been threshed out, and, in spite of all efforts at compromise, a divergent decision cannot be avoided. I trust that in every Province in India, from the very beginning, this rule, namely, unity in deliberation and duality only in decision, will prevail; only by such a convention as this can, the traditions of collective deliberation essential to the Cabinet form of Government, be evolved.

It is my opinion that during the transitional period, however long or short it may be, the officials in control of the reserved subjects will scarcely be able to escape from the influence of the constitutional system introduced in respect of the other subjects. The old autocratic methods, even in regard to subjects expressly reserved for official control, will, from the very nature of the new situation created in India, have to be modified, and in future, all official decisions will have to be made in a much more constitutional spirit than has been the case hitherto. The greater the regard paid to constitutional usages and public opinion the less will be the friction and the more rapid the progress.

The new constitution, in my judgment, lays the foundations of a federal system; the intention of the framers of the Government of India Act was to make each Province in India autonomous and self-contained as regards the control of its own local affairs, and, to confine the attention of the Central Government, more and more, to matters of general or national concern. Much, indeed, has already been done to make the Province autonomous, though complete autonomy is not possible until, in the fulness of time, the subjects now reserved for administration by the official wing are handed over and an entirely constitutional government established in each Province.

Such beginning towards the federal system as has been made is, however, a move in the right direction; for the Indian Provinces, each with its own characteristics and peculiarities lend themselves in a greater degree to a federal system than do even our Dominions which are governed on a federal principle of one description or another. I expect, of course, that the federal system which will develop in India will differ appreciably from those systems which prevail elsewhere, for the Indian system must conform to India's special characteristics and peculiarities.

Only by studying Indian conditions, and designing special machinery for dealing with Indian requirements, can Indian interests be adequately safeguarded, and progress be ensured.

---

### INDIA'S ECONOMIC PROGRESS.

---

A MESSAGE FROM SIR WILLIAM MEYER, G.C.I.E.,  
*India's High Commissioner in London.*

---

[Sir William Meyer belongs to that small band of Englishmen who have had the moral courage to champion India's interests, even though such championship exposed them to attacks from their own people. His record in this respect, while Finance Member of the Government of India, is

well known, but it is not sufficiently realized in India that as India's High Commissioner in London, the policy which he considers it his duty to carry out—to buy Indian stores in the cheapest market—has been assailed by British manufacturers and merchants interested in the Indian trade and their partisans. Sir William's ideas on the industrial and commercial reconstruction of India deserve, therefore, sympathetic and earnest consideration.—EDITOR.)

I heartily welcome the appearance of this book, which deals with India's part in the war and post-war problems. India took a splendid share in the war, both on the military side and also in rendering financial and economic assistance, and has every reason to be proud of her great effort.

Now we have come to the even more difficult period of post-war reconstruction. Other messages have, I understand, dealt with the new political situation which gives India such great opportunities for advance to a splendid position in the Empire. Politics must, however, be a means to an end, promoting the prosperity and contentment of the people and a more even-distribution of wealth. These are the problems which are now confronting Great Britain and other Western countries, and they have also to be faced in India.

In spite of material advance in prosperity during the last generation, India remains relatively a poor country. She has now the opportunity of taking further steps towards the goal I have indicated, and has the advantage of large potential resources.

One great essential is the development of Indian industry, so that India shall cease to be a mere exporter of raw material to foreign countries, and shall make up a larger part of her material herself. That, however, must be a gradual process, at any rate in the early stages, and it requires the utmost endeavour on the part of those concerned. When you once get your foundations well and truly laid, you can make much more rapid progress on the superstructure.

The task requires not mere rhetoric, but active and continuous labour, carefully thought-out plans, and the practical training of the

workers and captains of industry of the future. It implies the welcome into India of all capital which will be employed in India itself, and the co-operation of all races and classes of society.

A mere policy of protection would simply impose fresh burdens on the people. A tariff to assist the development of industries is a different matter, but it requires the most careful thought. You have, for instance, to make sure that what you would devise for the benefit of one industry shall not react prejudicially on another. You have also to consider whether, in particular cases, a guarantee of Government custom, or possibly a subsidy, may not be more efficacious than mere tariff adjustments. My present position requires me to stand aloof from political controversies, so I make these remarks, merely in a general way and as indicating matters which require consideration. Much help in these respects will be obtained from the very full and illuminating Report of the Indian Industries Commission which was presided over by my friend, Sir Thomas Holland.

A necessary essential is that educated Indians should cease to regard manual labour as derogatory, and I am glad to think that progress is being made in this direction. India must also provide not merely wider, and better, general education for all classes, but more complete technical training for industrial workers. By drawing upon the experience of the West, she can avoid many of the conflicts which have taken place here between labour and capital. It should also be borne in mind that technical training is required for foremen and supervisors as well as for engineers, chemists, and the higher directorate.

Indians must continue to come over to the West for courses of study and training which they cannot get at home, but, as India advances, the necessity for these should be materially diminished. It is also necessary that there should be more sympathy between the capitalists in India and the labourers they employ. Let the latter have reason to feel that their employer does not regard them as mere producing machines, but has a real interest in their welfare.

In these matters, as in others, the all-important thing is goodwill

and co-operation, and constant endeavour, when controversies arise, to understand the position of the other party and give him credit for good motives and honest purposes.







# INDIA'S SERVICES IN THE WAR.

## VOLUME I.

### GENERAL.

#### INDEX TO NAMES.

**NOTE.**—The names in this Index are arranged alphabetically, and not in accordance with the order of precedence.

#### A.

#### PAGE.

|                                 |     |     |                      |               |
|---------------------------------|-----|-----|----------------------|---------------|
| Africa, South                   | ... | ... | ...                  | 41, 42        |
| Akalkot, Raja of                | ... | ... | ...                  | 138, 164, 168 |
| Alam Singh Negi, Havildar       | ... | ... | ...                  | 15            |
| Albert, King of Belgium         | ... | ... | ...                  | 113, 114      |
| Albert, Prince                  | ... | ... | ...                  | 83, 84        |
| Allah Dad, I. O. M., Lance Naik | ... | ... | ...                  | 29            |
| Atot, siege of                  | ... | ... | ...                  | 159           |
| Arisa Khan, O. B. I., Subadar   | ... | ... | ...                  | 11            |
| Armistice, the                  | ... | ... | ...                  | 60            |
| "Asiaticus"                     | ... | ... | ...                  | 139           |
| Asquith, Mr.                    | ... | ... | 46, 91, 92, 104, 133 |               |
| Australia                       | ... | ... | ...                  | 41, 42        |
| Ayub Khan, Naik                 | ... | ... | ...                  | 16            |

#### B.

|                     |     |     |     |         |
|---------------------|-----|-----|-----|---------|
| Banerjee, Mr. S. N. | ... | ... | ... | 128     |
| Bariya, Raja of     | ... | ... | ... | 164     |
| Barnes, Mr. George  | ... | ... | ... | 99, 100 |
| Baroda, Gaekwar of  | ... | ... | ... | 138     |
| Barwani, Rana of    | ... | ... | ... | 104     |

|                        | PAGE.           |
|------------------------|-----------------|
| Basra                  | 43              |
| Beaconsfield, Lord     | 145             |
| Belgium                | 112, 113, 125   |
| Bernhardi, General Von | 140             |
| Bhan Singh             | 16              |
| Bharatpur, Maharaja of | 138             |
| Bhopal, Begum of       | 136             |
| Bikaner, Maharaja of   | 130, 164 to 166 |
| Birrell, Mr. A.        | 101, 104        |
| Boots, Army            | 42              |
| Bucharest              | 117             |
| Burns, Mr. John        | 102             |

## C.

|                          |                             |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Cabinet, the British     | 101, 102                    |
| Canada                   | 41, 42                      |
| Candler, Mr.             | 25                          |
| Carson, Sir Edward       | 100, 103                    |
| Chamberlain, Mr. Austen  | 108                         |
| Chelmsford, Lord         | 30, 40, 48                  |
| Chitnavis, Mr.           | 127                         |
| Chitral, Mehtar of       | 137                         |
| Churchill, Mr.           | 30, 45, 104                 |
| Clarence, Duke of        | 52, 54                      |
| Clive                    | 159                         |
| Clothing, Army           | 42                          |
| Compulsory service       | 104                         |
| Cooch Behar, Maharaja of | 169                         |
| Cotton                   | 38                          |
| Crewe, Marquis of        | 132 to 136, 149             |
| Currimbhoy, Sir F.       | 128                         |
| Curzon, Lord             | 12, 22, 98, 141, 144 to 148 |

## PAGE.

**D.**

|                                       |       |
|---------------------------------------|-------|
| "Daily Express" ... ..                | 156   |
| Dalai Lama of Tibet ... ..            | 137   |
| Dalip Singh, Sapper ... ..            | 12    |
| Dalton, Canon ... ..                  | 52    |
| Darwan Singh Negi, V. C., Naik ... .. | 8, 15 |
| Delhi ... ..                          | 40    |
| DePass, Lieut., V. C. ... ..          | 8     |
| Derby, Lord ... ..                    | 106   |
| Dhan Singh Negi, Rifleman ... ..      | 15    |
| Dost Mohammad, Havildar ... ..        | 15    |

**E.**

|                                   |            |
|-----------------------------------|------------|
| Economic Progress of India ... .. | 187 to 190 |
| Edward VII, King-Emperor ... ..   | 115        |

**F.**

|                                    |                       |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| France .. ...                      | 115                   |
| Francis Ferdinand, Archduke .. ... | 117                   |
| "Frankfurter Zeitung" ... ..       | 156                   |
| French Establishments ... ..       | 47                    |
| French, Lord ... ..                | 16, 19, 142, 153, 154 |

**G.**

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Gandhi, M. K. ... ..                        | 41  |
| Ganesh Ram, I. O. M., Col. Havildar . .     | 29  |
| Ganga, O. B. I., Havildar... ..             | 11  |
| Gaselee, General ... ..                     | 145 |
| George, Prince ... ..                       | 87  |
| German Emperor ... ..                       | 146 |
| Ghantu Rawat, Rifleman... ..                | 15  |
| Gobar Singh, V. C., Rifleman ... ..         | 8   |
| Gopal Singh Rawat, Subadar, 2nd Gurkhas ... | 13  |

|                      | PAGE.    |
|----------------------|----------|
| Grey, Viscount       | 101, 104 |
| Gurkhas, the 2nd     | 12       |
| Gurkhas, the 2-3rd   | 18       |
| Gwalior, Maharaja of | 136      |

## H.

|                       |            |
|-----------------------|------------|
| Haldane, Lord         | 47, 103    |
| Hardinge, Lord        | 4, 46, 124 |
| Hayat Khan, Malik     | 130        |
| Hari Sawant, I. O. M. | 29         |
| Henderson, Mr. Arthur | 99, 108    |
| Henry, Prince         | 86         |
| Hewart, Mr. Gordon    | 107        |
| Hides                 | 32, 36     |
| Holland, Sir Thomas   | 34, 189    |
| Hyderabad, Nizam of   | 137, 138   |

## I.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| Idar, Maharaja of  | 164 |
| Ima Rawat, I. O. M., Havildar                                | 29  |
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund                                  | 138 |
| Indian Expeditionary Forces, numbers and casual-<br>ties     | 23  |
| Indian Industrial Commission                                 | 181 |
| Indian Non-combatants, number sent to different<br>countries | 24  |
| Indore, Maharaja of  | 136 |
| Innes, Lieutenant  | 12  |
| Iron and Steel Works   | 38  |
| Islington, Lord  | 185 |
| Italy  | 116 |

## PAGE.

## J.

|                                 |     |     |          |
|---------------------------------|-----|-----|----------|
| Jairam Delbi, I. O. M., Private | ... | ... | 29       |
| Jamkhandi, Raja of              | ... | ... | 164, 168 |
| Japan                           | ... | ... | 118      |
| Jodha Jang Bahadur of Nepal     | ... | ... | 170      |
| Joshito, Emperor of Japan       | ... | ... | 119      |

## K.

|                               |     |   |         |
|-------------------------------|-----|---|---------|
| Kapur Singh, Jamadar          | ... | ...   | 11      |
| Kashmir, Maharaja of          | ... | ...   | 136     |
| Kenu Singh, I. O. M., Sepoy   | ... | ...   | 29      |
| Khairpur, Mir of              | ... | ...   | 138     |
| Khodadad Khan, V. C., Sepoy   | ... | ...   | 8, 12   |
| King-Emperor, the             | ... | 15, 20, 40, 47, 49, 51, 52, 53, 56 to<br>65, 121 to 124, 150 to 152 |         |
| Kipling, Rudyard              | ... | ...   | 115     |
| Kishengarh, Maharaja of       | ... | ...   | 164     |
| Kitchener, Lord               | ... | ...   | 92, 102 |
| Kulbir Thapa, V. C., Rifleman | ... | ...   | 8, 18   |
| Kut, the Siege of             | ... | ...   | 26      |
| Kwaja, I. O. M., Driver       | ... | ...   | 30      |

## L.

|                                |     |                                     |                  |
|--------------------------------|-----|-------------------------------------|------------------|
| Lachman Singh, I. O. M., Sepoy | ... | ...                                 | 29               |
| Lal Singh, Lance-Naik          | ... | ...                                 | 29               |
| Lancers, Bengal                | ... | ...                                 | 155              |
| Latif, I. O. M., Havildar      | ... | ...                                 | 29               |
| Law, Mr. Bonar                 | ... | ...                                 | 47, 99, 106, 107 |
| Leopold, King of Belgium       | ... | ...                                 | 114              |
| Lloyd George, Mr.              | ... | 34, 47, 48, 93 to 98, 104, 105, 107 |                  |
| Loharu, Nawab of               | ... | ...                                 | 136, 164         |
| Lovett, Sir Verney             | ... | ...                                 | 24               |

**M.**

|                                 |     |     |               |
|---------------------------------|-----|-----|---------------|
| Macaulay, Lord                  | ... | ... | 157, 159      |
| Macdonald, Mr. Ramsay           | ... | ... | 108           |
| Madras, Zamindars of            | ... | ... | 138           |
| Mahmudabad, Raja of             | ... | ... | 128           |
| Malaviya, Pandit                | ... | ... | 128           |
| Marine, Royal Indian            | ... | ... | 44            |
| Marwar, Maharaja of             | ... | ... | 164, 167, 169 |
| Mary, Princess                  | ... | ... | 84, 85, 86    |
| Mayurbhanj, Maharaja of         | ... | ... | 164           |
| Mesopotamia, Campaign in        | ... | ... | 24            |
| Messines                        | ... | ... | 154           |
| Meyer, Sir William              | ... | ... | 40, 187       |
| Mir Dost, V. C., Subadar        | ... | ... | 8, 16         |
| Mohammad Din, I. O. M., Jamadar | ... | ... | 20            |
| Molony, Lieutenant              | ... | ... | 10            |
| Monro, Sir Charles              | ... | ... | 42            |
| Montagu, Mr.                    | ... | ... | 48, 175, 178  |
| Morley, Lord                    | ... | ... | 102           |
| Mudhol, Chief of                | ... | ... | 164           |
| Munitions, Indian Board of      | ... | ... | 42            |
| Mysore, Maharaja of             | ... | ... | 136, 159      |

**N.**

|                             |     |     |          |
|-----------------------------|-----|-----|----------|
| Natha Singh                 | ... | ... | 12       |
| Natha Singh, I. O. M., Naik | ... | ... | 129      |
| Natha Singh, Subadar        | ... | ... | 14       |
| Nawanagar, Jam Sahib of     | ... | ... | 164, 169 |
| Nepal, Maharaja of          | ... | ... | 130, 137 |
| Nepal, Prime Minister of    | ... | ... | 170      |
| Nestor of Europe            | ... | ... | 114      |
| Newfoundland                | ... | ... | 41, 42   |
| New Zealand                 | ... | ... | 41, 42   |

## PAGE.

|                       |     |     |     |    |
|-----------------------|-----|-----|-----|----|
| Nikka Singh, Havildar | ... | ... | ... | 14 |
|-----------------------|-----|-----|-----|----|

## O.

|                   |     |     |     |    |
|-------------------|-----|-----|-----|----|
| Oils and Oilseeds | ... | ... | ... | 37 |
| Opium             | ... | ... | ... | 38 |

## P.

|                                 |     |                    |          |
|---------------------------------|-----|--------------------|----------|
| Partab Singh, Maharaja Sir      | ... | 129, 161, 165, 167 |          |
| Patiala, Maharaja of            | ... | ...                | 130, 165 |
| Peace Day                       | ... | ...                | 61       |
| Persian Gulf, expedition to the | ... | ...                | 29       |
| Peter, King of Servia           | ... | ...                | 117      |
| "Pioneer," the                  | ... | ...                | 150      |
| Poincare, Monsieur              | ... | ...                | 115      |
| Pope, the poet                  | ... | ...                | 116      |
| Pudukotta, Raja of              | ... | ...                | 138      |

## Q.

|                    |     |     |            |
|--------------------|-----|-----|------------|
| Queen Alexandra    | ... | ... | 74, 75, 76 |
| Queen Empress, the | ... | ... | 65 to 74   |

## R.

|                                    |     |     |                |
|------------------------------------|-----|-----|----------------|
| Railway Department                 | ... | ... | 43, 44         |
| Rait Kerr, Lieut.                  | ... | ... | 12             |
| Rajas, Indian                      | ... | ... | 162, 163       |
| Rajkot, Thakur of                  | ... | ... | 164            |
| Ramaswami Naidu, I. O. M., Jamadar | ... | ... | 29             |
| Ramlal Singh, I. O. M., Sepoy      | ... | ... | 29             |
| Ram Parshad Thapa, Naik            | ... | ... | 13             |
| Ram Singh, Jamadar                 | ... | ... | 11             |
| Ratlam, Maharaja of                | ... | ... | 164 to 169     |
| Rewa, Maharaja of                  | ... | ... | 136 to 162 171 |
| Reynardson, Captain                | ... | ... | 25             |

|   | PAGE.    |
|---|----------|
| Rhoda, I. O. M., Driver ... ..            | 30       |
| Roberts, Lord ... ..                      | 13, 157  |
| Russia ... ..                             | 117      |
| Roumania ... ..                           | 117      |
| <b>S.</b>                                 |          |
| Sachin, Nawab of ... ..                   | 164      |
| Sakaram More, I. O. M., Lance-Naik ... .. | 29       |
| Sankaru Gusain, Lance-Naik ... ..         | 15       |
| Savantvadi, Sar Desai of ... ..           | 164      |
| Savanur, Nawab of ... ..                  | 164      |
| Sen, Lieutenant ... ..                    | 170      |
| Servia ... ..                             | 117      |
| Shakespeare ... ..                        | 120      |
| Sher Beg, I. O. M., Lance-Naik ... ..     | 30       |
| Sher Singh Maharaj ... ..                 | 169      |
| Sher Singh, Subadar ... ..                | 12       |
| Sidhar Singh, I. O. M., Jamadar ... ..    | 29       |
| Simon, Sir John ... ..                    | 104      |
| Sinha, Lord ... ..                        | 130, 131 |
| Smith, V. C., Lieutenant ... ..           | 8        |
| Smuts, General ... ..                     | 100      |
| Srimutty Sarojini Naidu ... ..            | 1, 2     |
| Suchet, I. O. M., Driver ... ..           | 30       |
| <b>T.</b>                                 |          |
| Tek Bahadur Gurung, Subadar ... ..        | 13       |
| "Temps", the ... ..                       | 153      |
| Turner, Major-General Sir Alfred ... ..   | 5        |
| <b>U.</b>                                 |          |
| United States ... ..                      | 119      |
| Usman Khan, I. D. S. M., Sepoy ... ..     | 10       |



## PAGE.

## V.

|                                |     |     |     |
|--------------------------------|-----|-----|-----|
| Vankaner, Raja of              | ... | ... | 164 |
| Victor Emmanuel, King of Italy | ... | ... | 116 |
| Vithu Kadam, I. O. M., Private | ... | ... | 29  |

## W.

|                           |     |     |              |
|---------------------------|-----|-----|--------------|
| Walcott, Lieutenant       | ... | ... | 12           |
| War Committee             | ... | ... | 103          |
| Watson, Sir William, Poet | ... | ... | 114          |
| Wheat                     | ... | ... | 37           |
| Willcocks, Sir James      | ... | ... | 56, 132, 141 |
| William the Silent        | ... | ... | 114          |

## Y.

|                        |     |     |     |
|------------------------|-----|-----|-----|
| Yarak, I. O. M., Sepoy | ... | ... | 29  |
| Yonghusband, Sir F.    | ... | ... | 143 |



# Wyss & Roy Bros.,

THE PROFESSIONAL DIPLOMAED SWISS WATCHMAKERS



Practical Jewellers,  
Engravers, Gold and  
Silversmiths.

Fully Jewelled, best Lever Wrist-watches.

Nickel Case, Rs. 20.

Silver Case, Rs. 24.

With Radium Dial and Hands, Rs. 2 extra.

Pocket Watches from Rs. 10.

*Orders of all descriptions are carefully  
executed and guaranteed.*

REPAIRS TO WATCHES AND CLOCKS BY EUROPEAN.

For enquiries apply—MANAGER,

**Wyss & Roy Bros.,**  
66, Hazratganj, LUCKNOW.

**WHERE  
TO STAY ?**

The question naturally confronts  
Every intending Visitor to a City  
Where he has no obliging friend  
To put him up.

**FOR VISITORS TO LUCKNOW**

The question will instantly be solved if they  
Drive straight to No. 20, La Touche Road,

**The Great Indian Hotel**

FOR COMFORTS & ECONOMY IN COST

**IS THE PLACE TO STAY AT.**

EXCELLENT SITUATION

FREE FROM DIN & NOISE

SELECTED DISHES BOTH FOR THE ORTHODOX  
AND THE COSMOPOLITAN

Well-appointed Drinking Bar on the Premises.

TERMS MODERATE.

FINAL SETTLEMENT.



WELL-VENTILATED SUITES

ELECTRIC INSTALLATIONS



HOTEL GUIDES

MEET ALL REQUISITES.

Unrivalled Trade Experience.

**S. GOUDINEHO & SONS,**

**TAILORS - - -**

**OUTFITTERS - -**

**BREECHES - - -**

**AND**

**HABIT MAKERS -**

**22, HAZRATGANJ,**

**LUCKNOW.**

*Satisfaction Guaranteed*

**Messrs. JOHN & Co.,**

**CHEMISTS,**

**Aminabad Park,**

**LUCKNOW.**

**Prescriptions Carefully Dispensed ;**

**Medicinal orders promptly executed.**

**Charges Moderate.**

TELEPHONE No. 255.

By Special  
to the S. E. the  
U. P. of



Appointments  
Governor  
Raj & Co.

**J. H. CHANDLER & Co., Ltd.,**

**Pharmaceutical Chemists.**

22, Hazratganj,

LUCKNOW.

22, Hazratganj,

NAINI TAL.

## British Pharmacy, DISPENSING CHEMISTS.

**Best and Cheapest Depot**

FOR  
Fresh Drugs, Chemicals, Patent Medicines,  
Perfumery, Toilet Requisites,  
AND  
PHOTOGRAPHIC GOODS OF ALL DESCRIPTIONS.

**29, Hazratganj, LUCKNOW.**

**Dr. B. K. Mukerji, M.B.E.N. (London),**

THE KING-EMPEROR'S MEDICAL HALL,  
66, La Touche Road, LUCKNOW, U. P. India

Practises "Electro-Homœopathy"—the scientific, non-poisonous, and innocent system of treatment. He is a specialist in private male and female diseases and all other diseases pronounced incurable by other systems. Try it when you are dejected of all other treatments.

**S. P. MUKERJI, M.B. (E.N.),**  
*Manager and Co-worker*

Taken on the "KIDD" trademark.

**W. C. KIDD & Co.,**  
DISPENSING CHEMISTS,  
LUCKNOW.

**THE ENGLISH PHARMACY,**  
WHOLESALE AND RETAIL

*Importers of Drugs, Chemicals, Medical and Surgical Appliances,*

*Articles for the Sick-Room and Toilet Sundries.*

PHOTOGRAPHIC REQUISITES.

Developing and Printing a Speciality.

Prescriptions accurately prepared at any hour,  
day or night.

Apply "ZUBU" liquids to your  
Roots and Shoes.

**J. N. & JON,**

30, Hewett Road,

**LUCKNOW.**

Established 1862.

**GURDEEN & SONS,**

Sculptors, Furniture Dealers, etc.,

No. 378, SADAR BAZAR,

LUCKNOW.

*Proprietor:—RAI SAHIB DURGA PERSHAD.*

*Manager:—BABU HITKARI LAL.*

Gold Medalist in Architecture

**SWADESHI PURE WOOL**

HAND-MADE WARM AND DURABLE BLANKETS

OF

*All qualities and sizes*

FOR

The RICH & POOR and for SOLDIERS.

*Can be had from—*

**Messrs. ANAND SARUP AND BROTHERS,**

Blanket Manufacturers,

**MUZAFFARNAGAR, U. P.**

Telegraphic Address:—"GUPTA," LUCKNOW.

ESTABLISHED 1811.

**Gupta & Sons,**

WHOLESALE AND RETAIL

CHEMISTS, DRUGGISTS,

AND

Manufacturing Opticians.

29, AMINABAD PARK,

**LUCKNOW.**

Branch:—LAKHIMPUR.

# Eduljee & Co.,

MOTOR ENGINEERS & MEDALLIST CARRIAGE BUILDERS,

Telegrams—EDULJEE'S FACTORY, LUCKNOW.

**LUCKNOW, U. P.**



Largest and the most up-to-date  
Workshop in U. P.

Motor Repairs of all Description

Under Expert European Supervision.

CHARGES MODERATE.

➤ TRIAL SOLICITED ➤

SHOW ROOMS—*The Exchange,*

**WORKSHOP, NEW CIVIL LINES.**

---

Landaus, Landaulettes, Phaetons, Vis-a-vis,  
Office-Johns, Lady's and Cab Buggys, Tongas,  
Ralliets, Curzon Carts, District Carts, etc., etc., of  
the latest designs and finish ready in stock.

**HARNESSES**

Black, Brown, or of Patent Leather—Cawn-  
pore as well as British Make—also stocked  
for immediate delivery.

REPAIRING & UPHOLSTERING TO CARRIAGES  
**A Speciality.**

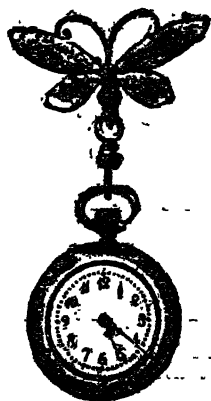
ESTABLISHED OVER HALF A CENTURY

**Nowrojee & Co.**

CARRIAGE BUILDERS AND MOTOR ENGINEERS

**THEM, LUCKNOW.**

# MOHAMMAD NASIR-UD-DIN.



All goods including West End Watches are imported directly and disposed of after a careful examination.

*Orders are Promptly Executed.*

**Repairs—A SPECIALITY.**

**TRIAL SOLICITED.**

**No. 1, Amin-ud-daulah Park,**

**LUCKNOW.**

**[Small Profit.] [Quick Return]**

**Established 1847.**

**THE OLDEST AND WELL-KNOWN FIRM OF**

**LALA SANWAL DASS,**

**Jeweller and Banker,**

**GOLD AND SILVER SMITH.**

**Pure Gold Ornaments and Silverware, Art Embroidery (Kardoz), Special Address & Casket Manufacturer,**

**(LALITA BANAN), BAHORANTOLA, CHOWK, LUCKNOW.**

**DR. PURSHOTTAM DASS KACKAR,**  
**Proprietor.**

**Prime, Medal and Our House Holder, Melbourne International Exhibition (Australia) 1880-1881.**

**Calcutta International Exhibition, 1883-1884**

**Colonial and Indian Exhibition, London, 1883-1884.**

**A Trial Order Respectfully Solicited.**

**The Indian Daily Telegraph**

**A DAILY PUBLISHED**

**AT**

**48 Hazratganj, LUCKNOW**

**And which enjoys an Ever Increasing Circulation**

**Best Advertising Medium**

**IN THE**

**United Provinces**

**For rates, apply to—**

**THE ADVERTISEMENT MANAGER.**

**Established 1858.**

**THE NEWOL KISHORE PRESS**  
**LUCKNOW**

**Telegrams—"UKHEAR"**

**Telephone—No. 5.**

**One of the Oldest Printing Houses in India and the Best Printers in Lucknow.**

**Undertakes all kinds of work—**

**LETTER PRESS**

**LITHOGRAPHY**

**EMBOSSING**

**ENGRAVING and**

**OFFSET PROCESSES**

**Finish and Expedition Guaranteed.**

**For rates, apply to—**

**THE SUPERINTENDENT,**

**N. K. Press, LUCKNOW.**

INDIA'S SERVICES  
IN  
THE WAR.

---

VOLUME II.

---

INDIAN STATES.

PRINTED BY K. D. SETH,  
AT THE  
NEWUL KISHORE PRESS, LUCKNOW.

---

1922.







## FOREWORD.

---

WE regret this is not a complete record of the War Services of the Indian States. Some of them failed to send us the necessary information.



# INDIA'S SERVICES IN THE WAR.

---

## VOLUME II.

---

### THE INDIAN STATES.

---

#### TABLE OF CONTENTS.

|   | PAGE. |
|---|-------|
| Introduction ... ..                               | 1     |
| The Indian States, Historical and Descriptive ... | 8     |
| The British Government and the Indian States.     |       |
| Part I. The British attitude till 1812 ..         | 24    |
| Part II. The period of Subordinate isolation      | 30    |
| Part III. Under the Crown (after 1857) ...        | 36    |
| The future of Indian States ... ..                | 44    |
| The States and the War Conference ... ..          | 57    |
| The War Services of Indian States ... ..          | 74    |

(*Note.*—For names see Index at the end of this Volume).

---



# INDIA'S SERVICES IN THE WAR.

## CHAPTER I.

### INTRODUCTION.

THIS day do Maharaja and Zamindar  
Show forth the Orient's most Imperial mood,  
Satrapies old and Kingdoms that were food  
For ravening Time already in years afar:  
Long ere Hydaspes' tide disdained to bar  
The hosts of Alexander, bring unwooed  
Their offerings, and the East forgets to brood  
And leaps to follow in tempest England's star.  
For there, where first it bloomed, still wisdom flowers  
And Hindustan knows well her friends, being wise!  
Hither, with smouldering empires in her eyes,  
~~She pours unasked her tributary gold,~~  
~~Pouring therewith her heart's goodwill in showers~~  
~~Richer than all Golconda an hundredfold.~~

In these words has Sir William Watson, one of our foremost living English poets, tried to pay an adequate tribute of praise to the splendid services of India in the War, with special reference to the work of the Ruling Princes. An attempt is made in this volume to chronicle the War Services of the various Indian States: services which have met with appreciation everywhere in the Empire and caused not a little distress to enemies who, in their ignorance of India and the nature of the relationship between the Government and the Ruling Princes, had not counted on the exhibition of such fine loyalty, accompanied by such spirited action.

Soon after the outbreak of the War, His Excellency Lord Hardinge, the then Viceroy of India, was able to acknowledge in terms of the highest praise the splendid response of the country and the Ruling

Chiefs of the Indian States. In the course of his statement he said that, from the knowledge that practically all the Ruling Chiefs placed their military resources of their States at the disposal of the Government, it was clear that the Government was not anywhere at the end of its resources. He made the welcome announcement: "Several of the Ruling Chiefs have, in accordance with their desire, been selected to accompany the Expeditionary Force, whilst all who have had any military training have expressed a desire to serve. Amongst these selected are Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh, Regent of Jodhpur, and the Maharajas of Bikaner, Patiala, Rutlam, Kishengarh, and Jodhpur, the Nawabs of Jatra, Sachin, and Bhopal, and several other leading Indians of rank and distinction, amongst those being our friend Malik Umar Hayat, who never misses an occasion to go to the front and whose cheery presence at the Council we shall all miss. I should like to add at the same time that our ally the Maharaja of Nepal has also very generously placed his forces at the disposal of Government."

Speaking in the House of Commons, so soon after the outbreak of the War as on the 9th September, 1914, Mr. Robert, M. P., Under-Secretary of State for India, acknowledged in handsome terms the valuable offers of service and help made by the Princes and Ruling Chiefs of India: "The rulers of Native States in India, who number nearly seven hundred in all, have with one accord rallied to the defence of the Empire, and offered their personal services and the resources of their States for the War. From among many Princes and Nobles who have volunteered for active service, the Viceroy has selected the Chiefs of Jodhpur, Bikaner, Kishengarh, Rutlam, Sachin, and Patiala, Sir Pratap Singh, Regent of Jodhpur, the Heir-Apparent of Bhopal, and a brother of the Maharaja of Cooch Behar, together with other Cadets of noble families. The veteran Sir Pratap would not be denied his right to serve the King-Emperor, in spite of his seventy years, and his nephew, the Maharaja, who is but sixteen years old, is with him. (Loud cheers.) The Chief of Gwalior, in addition to sharing the expenses of the hospital ship, the idea of which originated with himself and the Begum of Bhopal, has offered to place large sums of money



at the disposal of the Government of India and to provide thousands of horses as remounts. From Loharu in the Punjab and Les Bela and Kelat and in Baluchistan come offers of camels with drivers, to be supplied and maintained by the Chiefs and Sirdars. Several Chiefs have offered to raise additional troops for military services should they be required and donations to the Indian Relief Fund have poured in from all States. The Maharaja of Rewah has offered his troops, his treasury, and even his private jewellery, for the service of the King-Emperor. (Cheers). H. H. the Maharaja of Kashmir, not content with subscribing himself to the Indian Fund, presided over a meeting of 20,000 people held recently at Srinagar, and delivered a stirring speech, in response to which large subscriptions were collected. The Maharaja of Holkar offers free of charge all the horses in his State which may be suitable for Government purposes. Horses have also been offered by the Nizam's Government, by the Jam Sahib of Navnagar and other Bombay States. Every Chief in the Bombay Presidency has placed the resources of his State at the disposal of Government, and all have made contributions to the Relief Fund. Loyal messages and offers have also been received from the Mehtar of Chitral and the tribes of the Khyber Agency, as well as from the Khyber Rifles. Letters have been received from most remote States in India, all of them marked by the deep sincerity of desire, to render some assistance, however humble, to the British Government in its hour of need. (Cheers.) Last but not least, from beyond the borders of India have been received generous offers of assistance from the Nepal Durbar. The military resources of the State have been placed at the disposal of the British Government and the Prime Minister has offered a sum of three lakhs of rupees to the Viceroy for the purchase of machine guns or field equipment for British and Gurkha regiments proceeding overseas, in addition to large donations from its private purse to the Prince of Wales' Fund and the Indian Imperial Relief Fund. To the 4th Gurkha Rifles, of which the Prime Minister is Honorary Colonel, the Prime Minister has offered Rs. 30,000 for the purchase of machine guns in the event of their going on service. The Dalai Lama of Tibet has

offered a thousand Tibetan troops under the British Government. His Holiness also states that Lamas innumerable through the length and breadth of Tibet are offering prayers for the success of the British Army, and for the happiness of the souls of all victims of the War. \* \* \*

"Twenty-seven of the larger States of India maintain Imperial Service Troops and the services of every Corps were immediately placed at the disposal of the Government of India on the outbreak of the War. The Viceroy has accepted from the twelve States contingents of cavalry, infantry, sappers, and transport, besides the Camel Corps from Bikaner, and most of them have already embarked. As particular instances of the generosity and eager loyalty of the Chiefs, the following may be quoted: Various Durbars have combined together to provide a hospital ship to be called the *Loyalty* for the use of the Expeditionary Force. The Maharaja of Mysore has placed fifty lakhs of rupees at the disposal of the Government of India for expenditure in connection with the Expeditionary Force."

It will be remembered that the War situation was not particularly encouraging early in 1918, and at the War Conference called by H. E. the Viceroy Lord Chelmsford at Delhi, in April, the Ruling Chiefs of India were once more prominent in their offers of help and service, as will be seen from a report of part of the proceedings elsewhere, and magnificent offers of gifts for War purposes were also added to the long list of contributions made during the four preceding years of strenuous War activity. The Viceroy acknowledged once more the great assistance which the cause of the Empire in the War had received from the Ruling Chiefs of India.

When the din of War subsided and Victory was assured to the Allies and the nations met to usher in an era of peace on a War-worn world, the Princes shared the responsibilities also, and H. H. the Maharaja of Bikaner was at the Peace Conference as one of the representatives of India to assist in the deliberations of what will be handed down in history as probably one of the most weighty and complicated of peace negotiations known to the nations of the world. The signature of one of the Ruling Chiefs of India is thus affixed to

all the important documents of this great peace and it is symbolic in itself of the services of the Indian States.

At a banquet given to H. H. the Maharaja of Bikaner by his brother Princes in India, on the occasion of his departure to England in connection with meetings of the Imperial War Council, he had the privilege of making the following reference to the service of the Indian States and the people in the War: "And most of all we may indeed be proud," said His Highness, "when we regard the sacrifices in blood or treasure that have been cheerfully made by prince and peasant alike in this colossal struggle, when our countrymen have fought shoulder to shoulder with our English and Colonial brethren for God, King, and Country and in the cause of freedom and humanity without any idea of reward or recompense but glad, firmly to grasp the hand of comradeship and friendship extended to them by their brethren of Great and Greater Britain. For whether we come from the territories of British India or from those of the Indian States, we are all Indians who are entirely one in loyalty and attachment to our King-Emperor; in our affection for our Mother Country and in our **deep and genuine solicitude for our brethren of all creeds and communities throughout India.**"

The Indian States have been powerful Allies of the British on several critical occasions in the course of their mutual connection in recent Indian History; their active support played, for instance, no small part in saving the authority of the British in India on the occasion of the Great Indian Mutiny, when it was seriously imperilled, but the recent War has furnished striking opportunities for drawing closer the ties of cordial friendship existing between the Government and the States. "We are not the same kith and kin with you," said His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner in one of his speeches in England, delivered on the 1st May, 1917, "but India is attached to Great Britain and the Empire, and they to her by very real and firm ties (Applause.) In the last three years, these have been cemented and consecrated with the blood of your sons and brothers and of ours in this Titanic struggle. Out of the crucible of common

danger and of mutual sacrifice you and we will emerge with closer and better comprehension of one another, linking us in stronger bonds of understanding, brotherhood, and affection (loud applause) than were ever dreamt of by our ancestors on either side."

Recognition has been accorded by the Government, in various ways, to the splendid services of the States in the War. The recent enquiry of the Rt. Hon'ble the Secretary of State for India and His Excellency the Viceroy into the question of Indian Constitutional Reform in India took into consideration the position of the States and the relation to the Government of India, and the paragraphs relating to the subject, extracted from the Montagu-Chelmsford Report on Indian Constitutional Reform will be found elsewhere in this volume. On the occasion of the ensuing visit of His Royal Highness the Duke of Connaught, there will be inaugurated at Delhi the Chamber of the Princes. It will be the visible embodiment of the recognition of the splendid services of the Ruling Chiefs of India.

It is hoped that the following pages constitute a worthy record of this glorious episode in the story of India's connection with the British. An attempt has been made to make it as comprehensive as possible and the figures and statistics are based on information mostly supplied by the States themselves or found in various Government Reports. Only brief biographical notices have been furnished of the Ruling Chiefs and the reader is referred for a fuller account of biographical sketches to the admirable volume of *Who's Who in India*, brought out a few years back by the publishers responsible for this volume. It is a matter of regret for the Editor that the absence of response from some of the States has prevented the inclusion of their activities or has made the accounts concerned somewhat inadequate.

It only remains to thank the numerous gentlemen who have kindly helped in the composition of this volume, the officials of various Indian States and the Princes themselves, the Residents and other Political officers of the British Government and Provincial and Imperial Government authorities who have all furnished the

information necessary for chronicling the events on which this volume is based.

Apart from its interest as chronicling the War Services, it has been endeavoured to make the volume of some permanent and general value, by furnishing a descriptive account of the Indian States and also an historical sketch of the relationship between the British Government and the Indian States. Thanks are also due to the contributors of the articles on these subjects. It is hardly possible to mention all the books and official publications which have been laid under contribution in the preparation of these pages, but we should be failing in our duty if we did not make reference to the great help we have received from the admirable *Indian Year Book* issued by the *Times of India* of Bombay. It is hoped that this record of the War Services of Indian States, chronicling one of the greatest events in recent Indian history, will be read with interest and pleasure by the Princes and by the people of India and by the citizens of the Great Empire of which this country is proud to be a member.

---

•



## CHAPTER II

---

### THE INDIAN STATES.

THE eighteenth century in Indian History marks the transition from the Mediæval to the Modern age. It witnessed the dismemberment of the Moghul Empire and the disruption of the Mahratta Power. The whole century at first sight presents a spectacle of unprecedented political chaos and confusion. Yet behind this apparent chaos, half-conscious forces were at work which were destined in the long run to evolve a calm world and a long peace and to suppress the insurrections of the brute nature of man. Viewed in this light, this century was also a period of constructive effort in the History of India, culminating in the final establishment of British supremacy. By a law of political gravitation, the jarring fragments of the disorganized Moghul Empire and of the Mahratta confederacy were brought together under the suzerainty of the well-organized British Power.

With the establishment of the British overlordship over the vast continent of India, there begins a period of social and political reconstruction on a much more magnificent scale than was ever dreamt of by the great Emperors of Ancient or Mediæval India. The presence of a common sovereign has tended to weld together the heterogeneous elements of the Indian population into the political unity of a nation. The British Raj has ensured the protection of law to all alike; has checked the incursions of the foreign races, and guaranteed immunity from plunder and aggression to the Indians. The blessings of the British Raj to India may be summed up in three phrases, namely, political unity, assured peace, and the reign of law.

In this chapter, we are only concerned with the history of the Native States in their relations with the Paramount Power. No Empire, except that of the British, has afforded a striking illustration of

good faith and political sagacity in its treatment of the feudatory allies. The statesmen who built up the fabric of British Dominion in India have consistently followed a generous and magnanimous policy towards the Native States—a policy which has preserved the integrity of about 680 principalities. The Roman Empire, which offers many parallels to the general course of British Rule in India, failed in its attempts to maintain the treaty rights of its allies. But this cannot be said of the British Raj. It is only in rare cases of misrule and oppression on the part of the Indian Princes that the British have resorted to a policy of intervention or annexation, as it is incompatible with the existence of a sovereign paramount power to suffer misrule and oppression outside the territories under its direct jurisdiction. The map of British India, studded as it is with principalities in subordinate alliance with the Empire, bears eloquent testimony to the magnanimity, good faith, and noble policy of the British people. The British Empire is a living emblem of Imperial unity. The policy of trust and good faith followed by the British towards the Indian Princes accounts for the marvellous success of the experiment of Imperial solidarity and fellowship. The Great Akbar who anticipated by nearly four centuries the broad, imperial outlook of the British, noble in conception and execution alike, was vouchsafed only a brief glimpse of the Promised Land. His noble vision which Lord Tennyson has beautifully summed up in "Akbar's Dream," has, at last, been realized under the Pax Britannica:—

"I watched my son, . . .

And those that followed me, loosen, stone from stone, . . .

All my fair work; and from the ruin arose

The shriek and curse of trampled millions, even

As in the time before; but while I groaned,

From out the sun-set pour'd an alien race,

Who fitted stone to stone again, and Truth,

Peace, Love, and Justice came and dwelt therein."

Like Akbar, English statesmen have converted the Indian Princes into the props and pillars of their splendid Empire, by the shaping



of an august decree when occasion arose. Great Empires and, little minds, said Edmund Burke, go ill together, and, indeed, the consolidation of the British Indian Empire is the crowning achievement of the broadminded political wisdom of the Britisher who "builted better than he knew."

The political relations of the British Government with the Indian Princes are based on the principle of divided sovereignty. The generally accepted view is that sovereignty is divisible, and that its attributes, such as the right to make war or peace, the right of foreign negotiation, the right to legislate, the right to administer civil and criminal justice, and so forth, are capable of division. Accordingly no Indian Prince is vested with full sovereign rights within his territorial jurisdiction. While the British Government has reserved to itself the right to regulate, in the larger Imperial interests, those affairs of State which legitimately fall within the jurisdiction of a Paramount Power, the Indian Princes enjoy a substantial immunity from interference in nearly all functions of internal administration. The States are practically autonomous as regards their internal affairs. The continuance of the ruling houses has been guaranteed by solemn pledges, and the right of adoption in default of natural heirs has in most cases been expressly recognized. The relation of the States with the Imperial Government is, in words that are now classic, embodied in no constitution. It represents a series of relationships that have grown up between the Crown and the Indian Princes in widely differing historical conditions, but which in process of time have gradually conformed to a single type. The sovereignty of the Crown is everywhere acknowledged. It has laid down the limitation of its own prerogatives. Conversely, the duties and the service of the States are implicitly recognized, and as a rule faithfully discharged. "The links that hold the Indian Empire together are not iron fetters that have been forged for the weak by the strong; neither are they artificial couplings that will snap asunder the moment that any unusual strain is placed upon them; but they are unique strands that have been woven into a strong cable by mutual trust, co-operation, and friendliness."

The area covered by the Native States is more than 824,000 miles with a population numbering 68,000,000. Some States occupy the arid tracts of Rajputana and Baluchistan, while others are embedded in the mountainous tracts of Northern and Central India. At the same time, some of the fairest portions of Indian territory lie within the Native States. Mysore possesses a fertile soil and valuable mineral ores. Hyderabad is considerable in area and rich in iron and coal fields. Baroda is the garden of Gujerat. Kashmir is one of the most favoured spots on earth. If the collective extent of the Native States strikes the eye, the multiplicity of separate sovereignties is even more noticable. Many of them are very small, some of the Chiefs exercising authority over only a few villages. There are other States like Hyderabad, Mysore, and Gwalior which fill a large space in the map of India.

In Southern India, Hyderabad and Mysore are the premier States of the Indian Empire. Hyderabad was the most important satrapy of the Moghul Empire. In the general confusion that followed the dissolution of the Moghul Empire, it shook itself free from the Imperial authority of Delhi after the death of Aurangzeb. In the latter half of the eighteenth century it became a scene of awful confusion owing to the depredations of the Mahrattas and the struggle of the French and the English for supremacy in Southern India. However, the Nizam, after much vacillation, threw in his lot with the British, and finally accepted the treaty of subsidiary alliance as proffered by Lord Wellesley. Those who follow the current of events in Southern India during this disturbed period, are struck by the fact that it was the Nizam's active co-operation and close alliance with the British which enabled his kingdom to survive the hurricane of Mahratta depredations. Hyderabad owes a deep debt of gratitude to the British Raj—a gratitude which, of course, has been amply repaid by the magnificent loyalty of the reigning House of that kingdom.

Mysore, the next largest principality in the South, is a modern creation, in so far as it was restored by the British in 1779, after the

capture of Seringapatam, and again in 1881, when the regular succession had failed. It was restored to the ancient Royal House of the Hindu Wodeyars, whose dynasty dates back from the fifteenth century, although suppressed during the usurpation of Haider Ali and his son Tippu. Haider Naik rose to power by the sheer force of his military genius after deposing his Hindu Master. His son Tippu organized a formidable force, tore away large strips of territory from Hyderabad and entered into a long-drawn contest with the British until his day of doom at Seringapatam. No land in India can compare with Mysore in productiveness—coffee, sandal wood, and gold, all contributing to the State coffers. The forests are famous for their elephants. The State possesses some very remarkable monuments of Jain art. The most remarkable of the Jain statues is the celebrated colossus at Sravana Belgola in Mysore which commands respectful attention by its enormous mass and expression of dignified serenity. Under a brilliant succession of gifted monarchs and ministers, the kingdom has developed an efficient and enlightened administration which also includes a representative Assembly and a residential University.

We again meet with a group of important Mahratta States covering large tracts of Central and Western India, Gwalior, Indore, and Baroda. The foundation of the Mahratta power was laid broad and deep in the hills and dales of the Sahyadri range in the Maharastra by the mighty genius of Shivaji. The death of Aurangzeb in 1707, after a prolonged and weary warfare with the Mahrattas, uncovered the Pandora's box of political evils. The gateways of India in the North-West having been left unguarded, invited Nadir Shah, the Persian soldier of fortune, to deal a deadly blow to the weakened power of Delhi. Meanwhile from the South-West the Mahrattas spread over Central India like a devastating flood. A brilliant succession of gifted Peshwas contributed to the extension and consolidation of the Mahratta confederacy at the expense of the moribund Moghul Empire. Eventually, after overrunning Central India and Rajputana, the various Mahratta generals, who had risen

to territorial sway, began to quarrel among themselves and carved out independent kingdoms for themselves which are now represented by the three leading Houses of the Gaikwar of Baroda, the Scindia of Gwalior, and the Holkar of Indore. The British were locked in a deadly conflict with the Mahratta powers, until the magnificent triumphs of Lord Wellesley and Lord Hastings brought them within the sphere of the British Protectorate. The establishment of the British Protectorate over Central India and Rajputana led to the general pacification of the country where hitherto rapine and violence reigned supreme. But no sooner was the scheme of India's political unification under the ægis of one suzerain Power put into force, than there broke in the thunderstorm of revolt upon our visions of peace and on the prospects of unclouded calm. The Sepoy Mutiny of 1857 shook for a moment the Empire's foundations, but it cleared the area for reconstruction and improvement. After the suppression of the Mutiny, a final change took place in the relations of the Native States with the Paramount Power. The British supremacy was proclaimed, the Queen's assumption of direct Government restored confidence a new set of engagements were concluded between the British Empire and the Protected States which brought to light the common purpose of working hand in hand to promote works of public utility and participate in the common defence of the country.

---

#### CENTRAL INDIA AGENCY.

*Gwalior.*—The founder of the Gwalior House was Ramoji Scindia, who is said to have been a personal attendant on the Peshwa Baji Rao. Mahadajee Scindia, a man of great ambition, political capacity, and talent for War, made large conquests in Upper India, and obtained the title of the Vicegerent of the Empire from the Moghul Emperor. The power of Gwalior was at its zenith under this gifted man. The Treaty of Salbai (1782) made the British arbiters in Mahratta affairs, and recognized Mahadaji Scindia as an independent chief and not as a vassal under the Peshwa. Subsequently Scindia's military power,

developed by the French Commander De Boigne, was completely destroyed by the British victories of Ahmadnagar, Assaye, and Laswari.

Among the States grouped together as the Central India Agency, \*Gwalior is the most populous and prosperous and covers a very large area.

Next comes *Rewah*. Its Chiefs are Baghel Rajputs, descended from the Solanki Clan which ruled over Gujrat from the tenth to the thirteenth century. In 1812, a body of Pindaries raided Mirzapur from Rewah territory and the Chief who had previously rejected overtures for an alliance, was called upon to accede to a treaty acknowledging the protection of the British Government. During the Mutiny, Rewah offered troops to the British, and in recognition of these services various parganas which had been seized by the Mahrattas were restored to the Rewah Chief. The State is famous for its archæological remains and is rich in mineral.

*Indore*.—Among the States of the Central India Agency Indore occupies a no mean place. The Founder of the House of Holkar at Indore was Malhar Rao Holkar. His soldierly qualities brought him to the front under the Peshwa who took him into his service and employed him in his conquests. After the battle of Panipat in 1761, the Holkar House broke away from the control of the Peshwa who represented the joint force of the Mahratta Confederacy. Malhar Rao left to his successors vast territories stretching from the Deccan to the Ganges. The name of Ahalya Bai, whose administration is looked upon as that of a model ruler, is that of one of these Indian heroines who have so often shed lustre on the imperishable scroll of Indian history. Disputes as to the succession and other causes weakened this powerful State, and, when it assumed a hostile attitude on the outbreak of War in 1817, between the British and the Peshwa, the Holkar was compelled to come to terms. The treaty of Mandasore in 1818, still governs the relations existing between the State and the British Government.

---

\*Since this was written, Gwalior has been removed from the control of the Central India Agency, and now is in direct relationship with the Government of India.

The principal Mussalman State in Central India which ranks next to Hyderabad among the Muslim States of India is Bhopal. The ruling family was founded by Dost Mohammad Khan, an Afghan in the service of Aurangzeb. He succeeded in eventually establishing his independent authority in Bhopal and its neighbourhood. In the early part of the nineteenth century, the Nawabs successfully withstood the inroads of Scindia and Bhonsla, and by the agreement of 1817, Bhopal undertook to assist the British with a contingent and to co-operate against the Pindari bands.

The present ruler of the State, Her Highness the Begum of Bhopal, has endeared herself to all scholars of Indian Antiquity by bestowing her vigilant care on the conservation of the local memorials of India's ancient greatness. Sanchi in the Bhopal State is remarkable for some of the finest specimens of Buddhistic art. The four wonderful gateways and the surrounding railing round the Great Stupa, are covered with masses of sculpture so intricate as almost to defy description in detail. The beautiful decorative details of the Sanchi monuments testify to the accuracy of the statement made by such connoisseurs of Indian art as Sir John Marshall and Dr. V. A. Smith that no nation has surpassed the Indians in the variety and delicacy of the floral designs enriching their sculpture and pictures.

Besides these four Central Indian States there are a multitude of petty States held by their rulers under the immediate guarantee of the British Government but having feudal relations with one or other of the larger States. The number of States amounts to 153. The territories of the different States are much intermingled, and their political relations with the Government of India and each other are very varied. Eleven Chiefs have direct Treaty engagements with the British Government.

Rajputana is the name of a great territorial circle with a total area of about 130,462 square miles, which includes nearly 20 Native States. It is bounded on the west by Sind, on the north and north-east by the Punjab, on the east by the United Provinces and Gwalior, while the southern boundary runs across the central region of India, in

an irregular zigzag line. Of the Native States 17 are Rajput, 2 (Bharatpur and Dholpur) are Jat, and one (Tonk) is Mahomedan. The Aravalli hills intersect the country almost from end to end. The tract to the north-west of the hills is, as a whole, sandy, ill-watered and unproductive, but improves gradually from being a mere desert in the far west to comparatively fertile lands to the north-east. To the south-east of the Aravalli hills, lie higher and more fertile regions which contain extensive hill ranges and which are traversed by considerable rivers.

Rajasthan has found in Colonel James Tod its Thucydides, who has invested the narrative of its annals and antiquities with the charm of a romance. As we pass through the picture-gallery of the Rajput heroes, as depicted in Tod's *Rajasthan*, we feel that we are in the presence of men who are made of the stuff of which martyrs are made. Who does not know Rana Kumbha's greatness of soul in setting his enemy at liberty without ransom or gifts? Who has not heard of the redoubtable warrior Rana Sanga so lovingly described by Tod as the "finial on the pinnacle of Mewar's glory?" Who does not cherish the recollections of the splendid exploits of Maharana Pratap, flying from rock to rock, arrayed almost single-handed against the mighty Moghul Empire in the heroic defence of his motherland? The brave defenders of the fortress of Chitor, the Rajput sanctuary of freedom, Jaisal and Patta, have carved their names deep in the annals of India by their superb act of self-abnegation. In the brilliant galaxy of the heroes of Rajasthan it is not one or two figures only that arrest our imagination. There is not a pass in the Alpine Aravalli that is not sanctified by some deed of Pratap and his handful of followers—some brilliant victory or more glorious defeat. Huldighat is the Thermopylæ of Mewar: the field of Dewair is her Marathon. The date of the foundation of Mewar, "trailing clouds of glory" behind as it has come to modern times, is traced as far back as the middle of the sixth century A. D. The capital city is Udaipur, which is beautifully situated on the slope of a low ridge, the summit of which is crowned by the Maharaja's palaces, and to the north and west, houses extend to the banks of a

beautiful piece of water known as the Pichola Lake, in the middle of which stand two island palaces. The Maharana of Udaipur is the head of the Sesodia Rajputs and is the premier Chief in Rajasthan.

The largest State in Rajasthan is Jodhpur, also called Marwar, which consists largely of desolate country. The ruling house of Jodhpur is the head of the Rathor clan of Rajputs and claims descent from Rama, the King of the Solar Dynasty. The earliest-known King of the clan lived in the sixth century, from which time onwards their history is fairly clear. The foundation of Jodhpur dates from about 1212. The State came under British protection in 1818, during the general pacification of Central India undertaken by Lord Hastings.

Jaisalmer State covers a large, arid region with an area of 16,062 square miles. The rulers of Jaisalmer claim descent from Krishna. This State also entered into an alliance of perpetual friendship with the British Government in 1818.

Jaipur State is the fourth largest State in Rajputana. It consists for the most part of level and open country. The Maharaja of Jaipur is the head of the Kachwaha clan of Rajputs which also claims descent from the Solar Dynasty of the Epic age. The Dynasty in eastern Rajputana dates from about the middle of the twelfth century, when Amber was made the capital of a small State. The princes of that dynasty entered into matrimonial alliance with the Moghul Emperors during whose reigns they figured as great generals of the Empire. In the eighteenth century, Sawai Jai Singh acquired great fame for his scientific knowledge and skill. The Man Mandir observatory of Benares and four other observatories elsewhere in India are noble monuments of his devotion to Hindu Astronomy. It was he who moved the capital from Amber and built the present city of Jaipur and elevated the State above the principalities around. It accepted the offer of British protection in 1818. Jaipur city is the largest town in Rajputana and is one of the few eastern cities laid out on a regular plan. It contains, in addition to the magnificent palace, many fine buildings. The active patronage afforded to artists by the rulers of Jaipur and Alwar have kept art alive in Rajputana.



The State of Alwar is a hilly tract of land in the east of Rajputana. Its rulers belong to the Kachwaha clan, the genealogy of which has been traced back to the Solar dynasty. This ruling family is descended from Raja Udai Karan, who was the common ancestor of both Alwar and Jaipur. The Prince of Alwar co-operated with Lord Lake in the war of 1803, and an alliance was concluded with him in that year, when the boundaries of that State as now recognized were fixed.

Sirohi State is much broken up by hills of which the main feature is Mount Abu. Two temples at Mount Abu, built wholly of white marble, are famous as unsurpassed models of the Jain style of architecture. The beauty and delicacy of the carving, and the richness of the design in both these temples have extorted admiration from all lovers of India's artistic antiquity. The chiefs of Sirohi represent a branch of the famous Chouhan clan which furnished the last Hindu Kings of Delhi.

The two States of Kota and Bundi represent the Hara sect of the great Chouhan clan. Bundi State was founded in the early part of the fourteenth century and constant feuds with Mewar and Malwa followed. In later times, it was ravaged by the Mahrattas and Pindaries, and finally came under British protection in 1818. The reigning house of Kotah is an offshoot of the Bundi family.

Among the great Rajput clans, none has played a more important part than the Rathors, renowned in Rajasthan for their prowess in the field, and for the great generals they gave to the Moghul Empire. The parent State is that of Jodhpur whence sprang Bikaner, Kishangarh, Rutlam, and Idar. The rulers of Jodhpur have always been conspicuous for devotion to the British Crown. The Maharaja of Bikaner yields to none in his loyal devotion to the Crown. His Highness has made a mark both as a general and as an administrator. He has achieved remarkable progress in developing the resources of the State, and may be truly credited with having made the desert blossom as the rose.

---

#### RUTLAM.

The founder of the house of Rutlam was Ratan Singh Maheshdasot, a scion of the Ruling House of Jodhpur. He had been

placed by the Moghul Emperor Shah Jehan in charge of a Rajput principality including 12 large pargannahs and then worth 53 lakhs of rupees on the west of Malwa to ward against any hostile advances of the Subadars of the Deccan and Gujerat, with whom Aurangzeb was intriguing. From Inayat Khan's "Shahjehan Nama," as also from Sadu Kumbhakaran's "Ratan Rasa" and Khiriva Jagaji's "Vachanika," it appears that Ratan Singh Maheshdasot had previously rendered conspicuous service against the Persians in Khurasan and the Uzbeks in Bukhara, the frontier Provinces of the Moghul Empire. Ratan Singh, who had received the title of Maharaja and the Royal insignia of the "Mahi-Maratib," had not been long in the enjoyment of his newly-acquired eminence, when he was summoned to join Maharaja Jaswant Singh of Jodhpur, then marching at the head of an Imperial army to check the advance of the combined forces of the Princes Murad and Aurangzeb. A great battle was fought at a spot afterwards called Fatehabad, some 50 miles distant from Rutlam, on 20th April, 1658. The French traveller, Bernier, who witnessed this sanguinary fight, gives a graphic account of it in his "Travels." In this fight fell 1,700 Rathors, besides many Gehelots, Haras, Gauris, and, indeed, some of every clan of Rajwara. Tod has pronounced the following eulogy on Ratan Singh in his *Rajasthan*: "Of all the deeds of heroism performed on this day, those of Rutna of Rutlam, by universal consent, are pre-eminent and are 'wreathed into immortal rhyme by the bard' in the *Rasa Rao Rutna*. He also was a Rathor, the great-grandson of Ude Singh, the first Raja of Maru; and nobly did he show that the Rathor blood had not degenerated on the fertile plains of Malwa." This brave founder of the Rutlam State, after performing prodigies of valour, fell fighting on that field of carnage and a cenotaph to this day marks the spot where his body was burnt on a pile of broken spears.

Since Ratan Singh's day the extent of his Raj has been reduced, owing to various causes, to its present limits; but its Rulers have always maintained their hereditary supremacy over all the Rajput

Chiefs in Malwa. This fact is testified to by such high authorities as Malcolm, Achison, and Luard. The latter in the "Rutlam Gazetteer," published a decade ago, states: "The Raja of Rutlam being the head of the Rathor Rajputs of Malwa, important clan questions, even between persons who do not belong to the Rutlam State, are referred to him for decision.

When hostilities were announced in August, 1914, against Germany, Colonel His Highness Maharaja Sir Sajjan Singh Bahadur, K.C.S.I., was one of the foremost of the Indian Rulers in offering all the resources of his State and his personal services for active service. His Highness was the first Ruling Chief who joined the Imperial Cadet Corps on its formation in 1901, and it was the military training received by him whilst serving as an Imperial Cadet that stood him in such good stead during the long period of his service overseas, which lasted (3 years and 2 months) longer than that of any other Ruling Prince who proceeded to the front.

That the services of His Highness were much appreciated is evidenced by the fact that he was a Major when he joined the Indian Expeditionary Corps in France in April, 1915; he was promoted to be a Lieutenant-Colonel in June, 1916, "in recognition of his very valuable services in connection with the War," and in January, 1918, His Highness was granted the rank of Colonel in the Army by His Imperial Majesty the King-Emperor, who also sanctioned an addition of two guns, increasing His Highness's salute to 13 guns permanently.

Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig, G.C.B., Commander-in-Chief of the British Forces in France, mentioned His Highness's name in despatches, bringing him to notice "for gallant and distinguished conduct in the field." The President of the French Republic, M. Poincare presented His Highness with the "Croix d'Officier" of the Legion of Honour "for distinguished services rendered during the course of the campaign."

His Highness was accompanied to the front by Thakur Raghunath Singh of Poncher, Rutlam's Premier Jagirdar, and Captain Rajkumar Sirdar Singh of Shahpura. The former unfortunately died of

pneumonia in France, the latter—a devoted friend of His Highness—served throughout the long campaign as his A.-D.-C., and now holds the office of Senior Member of His Highness's Council.

His Highness, on the outbreak of the Indo-Afghan War, again proceeded on active service, accompanied by Captain Rajkumar Sirdar Singh, but the Afghans having come to terms, His Highness and the Rajkumar returned to Rutlam.

The State lent the services of the Rutlam Despatch Riders who are mentioned in the following letter addressed by the Viceroy to His Highness on the signature of the Peace Treaty: "On behalf of His Majesty the King-Emperor and myself I thank Your Highness most warmly for the staunch support and substantial aid rendered by the Rutlam State during the whole period of the War. Your Highness personally proceeded on active service to France, where you served with much distinction from April, 1915, to May, 1918. The Rutlam Despatch Riders also did good work for the Egyptian Expeditionary Force. Your Highness materially assisted with generous donations to various funds for the relief of those who have suffered in the War, joined the scheme for the Hospital Ship *Loyalty* and equipped and maintained a War Hospital at Indore. Your Highness has thus manifested the depth of your steadfast loyalty and devotion to His Imperial Majesty the King and the British Empire, and has shared in the great struggle for justice and freedom in which India has so nobly borne her part."

---

#### BHARATPUR.

The ruling families of both Bharatpur and Dholpur States in eastern Rajputana are Jats. Bharatpur figured largely in the history of the decline and fall of the Moghul Empire. Bharatpur was the first State in Rajputana that made alliance with the British Government in 1803 and helped Lord Lake in the battles of Agra and Laswari. In 1804, however, Bharatpur sided with Jaswant Rao Holkar against the Government which involved it in a tussle with the British. Peace was re-established in 1805 under a treaty of alliance which continues in force. The State being usurped by Durjan Sal in 1825,

the British Government took the cause of the rightful heir, Maharaja Balwant Singh Saheb. Lord Combermere captured the capital and restored the principality to its rightful heir. Bharatpur rendered valuable service to the British Government during the Mutiny.

The smaller principalities of Dholpur, Tonk, Jhalawar and Dongarapur and Kishengarh, all form part of that extensive group of States known as Rajputana.

From the Central and Western regions of Hindustan, we pass on to the States embedded in the Himalayan ranges. The kingdom of Nepal extends for about 520 miles along the southern slope of the central axis of the Himalayas. Above these is a rugged broken wall of rock leading up to the chain of snow-clad peaks which culminate in Mount Everest and others of slightly less altitude. The country before the Gurkha occupation was split up into several small kingdoms. The Gurkhas under Prithivi Narayan Shah overran and conquered the different kingdoms. Ever since the conclusion of the treaty of 1816, the friendly relations with the British Government have been steadily maintained. The State is of considerable antiquarian interest and many of the sites connected with the scenes of Buddha's life have been identified in it by the remains of inscribed pillars.

There are the two principalities of Sikkim and Bhutan along the southern slopes of the central axis of the Himalayas, adjacent to the northern border of Eastern Bengal and Assam.

British relations with Bhutan commenced in 1772, when the Bhutias invaded the principality of Cooch Behar and British aid was invoked by that State. After the conclusion of a treaty, the Bhutanese Government bound itself to be guided by the advice of the British in regard to its external relations, while the British Government undertook to exercise no interference in the internal administration of Bhutan.

Kashmir lies to the east of the Indus and to the west of the Bari. It is a mountainous country with just a strip of level land along the Punjab frontier, and intersected by valleys of which many are of surpassing beauty and grandeur. The beautiful vale of Kashmir

with its salubrious climate and picturesque scenery, nestling as it does in the bosom of the external Abode of Snow—the Himalaya—is, indeed, a terrestrial Paradise. This lovely vale was once the resort of the Moghul Emperors who must have hummed that beautiful lyric—

'Agar firdaus bar ru-i-zamin ast  
 Hamin ast, wa hamin ast, wa hamin ast.  
 [If there be on earth an elysium of bliss,  
 It is this, it is this, and oh! it is this]

or,

[This verdant field, this fountain of water, this  
 flower garden, this limpid stream,—  
 A terrible dust-storm, if it may happen to move here,  
 is converted into a morning zephyr.]

This beautiful country has passed through all the vicissitudes of political fortune, having attracted to itself conquerors and adventurers time and again. In the general dismemberment of the mighty Moghul Empire, the Sikhs of the Punjab established their sway over this lovely valley. Under the feeble successors of the Maharaja Ranjit Singh, the militant Sikh church had outgrown all restraints of law and order. The recalcitrant Sikh soldiery now drifted into a War with the British whose sphere of influence had extended by the year 1845, as far as the Sutlej River in the Punjab. Not without supreme effort and after four pitched battles were the heroic Sikhs driven back across the Sutlej. By the negotiations of peace that followed, Kashmir was granted to Raja Gulab Singh of Jammu which he had received from Ranjit Singh as a reward for an act of bravery. In 1849 the Maharaja Dhulip Singh resigned all claim to sovereignty, and the Punjab was annexed to the British Empire. Yet a residue of Native States was left by the Company in the Punjab. Kashmir, as we have just noticed, was created from the wreck of the Sikh Empire. In 1809, the Cis-Sutlej States had been rescued from the grasp of Ranjit Singh, and the principalities of Patiala, Nabha, Jind, Faridkot, etc., still bear testimony to the enduring efficacy of the British protection. The only other State which claims notice in the

Punjab is that of Bahawalpur, whose ruler had sought protection against Ranjit Singh. In 1833, the Nawab had been granted a treaty of alliance in which his control over the internal administration was guaranteed.

The peninsula of Kathiawar has unique attractions of its own. It is a medley of Native States, great and small. It contains many varieties of territorial tenure, and within its borders, the complex system of Native State administration can be studied in miniature. In one corner sits the Jam of Jamnagar, in another the Maharaja of Bhavnagar. Far to the south lives the Nawab of Junagarh. In the great Gir Forests the stranger may at night hear the roar of lions; he may climb the wondrous temple-crowned Girnar mountain, and gaze in a pellucid atmosphere through vast distances over the little towns glittering on the plain, to the shining sea beyond; he may stand on the yellow sands of Somnath, and look pensively on the last remnants of the great shrine which Mahmud of Ghazni shattered for ever; he may rest in a green glade before the mighty rock on which Asoka engraved his immortal edicts. The Native States under the direct Government of the Bombay Presidency number 377. Kathiawar alone contains nearly 200 separate States. The characteristic feature of the Bombay States is the great number of petty principalities.

The Madras Presidency includes five Native States, of which Travancore and Cochin represent ancient Hindu dynasties. There are a number of small chiefships interspersed in almost all the provinces under the direct control of British Provincial Satraps.

Lord Curzon in a memorable speech beautifully summed up the reciprocal relations of the British Crown and the Indian Princes, saying: "Their rank is not diminished, but their privileges have become more secure. They have to do more for the protection that they enjoy, but they also derive more from it, for they are no longer detached appendages of the Empire but its participators and instrument. They have ceased to be the architectural adornments of the Imperial edifice, and have become the pillars that help to sustain the main roof." This precisely represents the angle of vision of the Crown

towards the Indian Princes, and it has been the avowed policy and endeavour of each successive Viceroy to associate the Princes of India more closely and uniformly with the responsibilities of Imperial defence. Out of the same desire arose Lord Dufferin's scheme of Imperial service troops, consisting of forces maintained by the Princes, trained by British Officers and available for Imperial service. Another institution, the Imperial Cadet Corps, was constituted in 1901 by Lord Curzon to give young men of noble and princely rank an opportunity of training in their hereditary profession of arms. The opening of Chiefs' Colleges also marks a step in the same direction and enables the scions of ruling families to receive the kind of education their prospective career requires. The Viceroys have made the Maharajas feel that they are active partners in a great Imperial organization by breaking down the tendency to isolation on the part of the British Government. One striking illustration of this policy was the appointment of His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner to the Indian Delegation to the Peace Conference at Paris. It was a unique distinction conferred by the Crown upon the representative of the Ruling Chiefs of India, and a mark of signal recognition by the British Empire, of the great services rendered by the Indian Princes during the terrible cataclysm of the European War which overwhelmed the Empire in 1914. The British policy towards the Native States stood self-vindicated in a most imposing way to which History does not furnish any parallel. The British Empire has always stood for the protection of the rights of minor nationalities, for the vindication of the sanctity of treaty obligations ; it, therefore, descended into the arena of conflict with a majestic array of allies bound to it by bonds of steel and inspired by the faith that the cause for which England stood was one of right as against might."

---



## THE BRITISH GOVERNMENT AND THE INDIAN STATES.

---

PART I.

---

## THE BRITISH ATTITUDE TILL 1813.

The territories of the Feudatory States, or, to use a more common phrase, Native States, occupy an area of more than 824,000 square miles. But their population is far less than that of British India proportionately, and has even suffered a diminution in recent years. The arid regions of Rajputana and Baluchistan, the numerous States embedded in mountainous tracts on the Himalayas and the North-West, and many small principalities in the forests and hills of Central India account for this sparseness of population. Excluding the frontier States of Kashmir and Baluchistan, Nepal and Bhutan and the Shan States of Burma, we have five considerable blocks of Native State territory. The Rajputana Agency, that of Central India, the Nizam's Dominions, the Madras block of Mysore, Travancore, and Cochin, and lastly Baroda and the neighbouring Kathiawar Agency, may be remembered besides various States scattered through the Punjab, the United Provinces, Bihar and Orissa, and Bengal. "The relegation of so many States to inhospitable and unproductive regions was the natural consequence of the pressure of invasion and conquest, as each successful invader drove back those who opposed or fled before him into tracts which were sufficient to support existence and yet not rich enough to afford plunder." But there are also fertile and fair regions in the territory of these States. Mysore possesses a fertile soil and valuable mineral ores; Hyderabad is rich in iron and coal; Baroda is the smiling garden of fertile Guzerat; and Kashmir is the beauty-spot of all India. Thus "the territories not under British dominion are often valuable and their geographical position frequently lends them importance."

The geographical distribution of the principalities is very irregular and even in the case of a solid territory like Hyderabad, the frontier line is frequently cut up by or cuts into British villages. "The explanation of these irregularities lies partly in the policy pursued by the British

at various times and partly in the course of events over which they had no control. In some parts of India, a stronger power had made a clean sweep of upstarts and even of ancient petty dynasties before the British advanced. There was no general inquiry into titles, nor was pause given for the consolidation of the States by the will of the strongest. Existing acquisitions were recognized once for all, and the political situation, ruffled as it was by the storms of war and aggression, was in a moment petrified. On the other hand, in parts of India which were at the time regarded as beyond the British sphere, the process of natural consolidation went on.\*

The great majority of the States are of modern origin, though their beginnings or duration are no longer questions of vital interest either to them or to the suzerain power. The chiefs are descended from many different races, Mahratta, Rajput, Jat, Pathan, Turk, and even Shan and Tibetan. They obtained their power by very various means. Many claimed the formal recognition of their rights by the Delhi Emperors, or had rebelled and ousted by their greater might the more lawful claimants. In Cutch, the nobles were powerful when the chief was practically reduced to a mere name. Elsewhere, as in parts of Central India, civil war had reduced the whole of society to one low level of helpless poverty, before the British arrived on the scene. As in Mysore, where a resolute adventurer sprang into power, or in Rajputana, where the proud Rahtors and Sesodias, claiming descent from the sun and the moon, lay helpless and crushed between the Mahrattas and the Mahomedans, there were heterogeneous elements out of which the suzerain power could not evolve any uniformity nor establish immutable principles of organization and government. Thus frequent changes of policy were pressed upon the attention of successive Governors-General; and the great variety and diversity in area and situation, wealth and culture of the States have always precluded the possibility of the British committing themselves to a body of rules and formulæ in their relations with the Chiefs. In size the States vary from the giant stature of Hyderabad with its 83,000

---

\* *Imperial Gazetteer of India*, (1907), Vol. IV, pp. 62 and 63.

square miles to the States in the Kathiawar Agency, many of which cover no more than a handful of villages and hamlets.

The relations which are at present maintained by the Surzerain Power with the Feudatory States, are the resultant of the operation of three distinct ideas which dominated successively the mind of the English Government during the last century and a half. The intervention of the English East India Company in the affairs of the Native Princes was created by the action of European politics and was the result of the rivalries with the French and the Dutch. The so-called Carnatic Wars (1746-61) forced the English Presidency of Madras, in sheer self-defence, to take up sides in the quarrels of the princes of the land. The Treaty of Pondicherry (1754) left the English ally, Mohammad Ali, in the undisputed possession of the Carnatic; and a few years after the fall of Pondicherry, in 1761, saw the English firmly controlling the affairs of the Carnatic and enjoying a dominant voice in the diplomacy of the Nizani's Court. The subsequent conduct of Mohammad Ali led to the virtual absorption of his dominions by the Company. At the end of the Mysore Wars (1767-99) Mysore was restored to its legitimate ruling family, and admitted like Travancore and Cochin into the British protectorate. About the same time a treaty was concluded with Hyderabad on the basis of its subordinate co-operation and a guarantee of its internal autonomy.

In Bengal, after a long course of apprenticeship and a preliminary trial of strength with the Moslem power in 1686-90, the Company asserted its mastery in the field of Plassey (1757) and in the subsequent destruction of French and Dutch pretensions in this quarter. The victory of Buxar (1764) over the forces of the Vazier of Oudh and the nominal Emperor completed the task begun at Plassey and laid the regions of Oudh and Allahabad at the feet of the English. The Emperor became a pensioner, dependent on English bounty, and the Vazierate of Oudh was converted by Clive into a buffer State to serve as a barrier against the forces of anarchy which surged around. When the Mahrattas threatened Rohilkhand on the

Frontiers of Oudh, Warren Hastings, the Governor-General, helped the Vazier to annex the Rohilla territory to his own dominions and thus he continued Clive's policy of preserving and strengthening the buffer State beyond which "Mahratta tempest might rage, the rapid process of the decay of the imperial rule might go on, or the striking genius of the then infant Ranjit Singh might found a new Empire." It was only in 1803-4, when the great Mahratta wars were fought, that Wellesley broke down the splendid edifice which the astute Mahadaji Scindia had so carefully reared; and British expansion proceeded rapidly along both the banks of the Jumna right up to Delhi and this policy of a ring-fence was reversed.

On the Bombay side, the Company entered early into treaties with the small maritime States of the coast for the suppression of piracy which was then rife in the Arabian Ocean. The unfortunate English interference in the dynastic succession at Poona, brought on the Company the first Mahratta War (1778-82), ended by the treaty of Salbai, which left Salsette and Elephanta in English occupation. Thereafter the English were compelled on account of their wars with Tipu to enter into closer relations with the Peishwas, who, jealous of the growing power of the Scindia and other confederate Mahratta Chiefs, began to turn more and more to the Company for support. In 1802, the Gaekwar of Baroda came under British protection by virtue of a treaty which he signed at Cambay; and soon after, the English ensured their permanent influence at Poona and established a subsidiary force there by the treaty of Bassein. The Scindia, the Bhonsle, and the Holkar had no desire to see the sovereignty of the Peishwa pass into British hands, and the first two of them began a war which was prosecuted with great success by General Wellesley and Lord Lake. The treaties which were entered into with Gwalior and Nagpur and the treaty of Rajpur Ghat which closed the subsequent war with Holkar, were remarkable for their moderation. As Sir William Lee Warner remarks, the Mysore and the Mahratta wars, though their result was to build up British rule in Madras and Bombay, were "merely wars of defence, and their consequences

were neither contemplated nor at the outset desired ; while the terms exacted by the victors after inflicting crushing defeats on their adversaries, were conspicuous for their generosity. \*

While the Peishwa was secured against his turbulent feudatories and the latter themselves were isolated individually and rendered impotent for active mischief, the English occupation of Delhi (1803), the growing power of Ranjit Singh, the advance that he threatened on the Cis-Sutlej Sikh States, and rumours of Napoleon's projects on India through Persia and the North-West Frontier, caused great disquietude to Lord Minto, the Governor-General (1807-13), and Sir Charles Metcalfe persuaded the Lion of the Punjab, by the treaty of Lahore of 1809, to recognize the inclusion of the Cis-Sutlej States in the protectorate map of the Company. The treaty, however, was one of equal alliance and left Ranjit Singh free to work his will North of the Sutlej, thus continuing to give faithful expression to the policy inaugurated by Clive in 1765.

Thus in reviewing the course of English relations with the rulers of the country, between the battle of Plassey and the accession of Lord Hastings in 1813, one might see that the Company exercised the greatest possible self-restraint and frequently refused to include States in its treaty-map. In fact the excessive zeal for non-interference that Sir George Barlow displayed—the necessary reaction against Lord Wellesley's aggressive imperialism—laid down the principle that a certain extent of dominion power and revenue would be cheaply sacrificed for tranquillity and security within a contracted circle ; and the Rajput States and most of the small principalities of Central India rent by intestine feuds and exposed to attack by the trained bands of the Mahrattas and Pindari Chiefs, were refused admission into the British protectorate which they claimed as a matter of right. During the whole period the Company was drawn into wars and annexations only through the necessities of self-defence and protection. It avoided alliances as long as possible and extended its liabilities no further than the absolute necessities of the case

---

\* The Native States of India, page 85.

demanded. It has always treated its allies as if they were independent States in accordance with the principles of international law. The terms and forms of negotiations were largely reciprocal. But gradually the Company advanced from the position of *primus inter pares* to an assertion of superiority. It required its allies to surrender their rights of negotiation with foreign nations and with States in alliance with the Company. But it still left them with full powers of dealing with certain other States, recognized, except in a few cases, their right to maintain such armies as they pleased, and formally disavowed any concern whatever with their internal sovereignty. But as yet the principle of subordinate isolation and co-operation—the watchword of the English for the next forty-five years—was not unreservedly asserted. The sovereignty of the native States was impaired, but not formally destroyed. The scheme of subsidiary alliances which marked Lord Wellesley's administration illustrate the pressure of common defence as a condition of protection and the contrast between a policy of non-intervention and a policy of union.

Four central transactions may be studied as the "pivots upon which their (English) leading treaties and the main results of their contests turn." The treaty of Oudh (1765) was the first step in the Company's policy to enclose British interests within a ring-fence and to remain unconcerned as to what might go on beyond. The Triple Alliance of the English, the Peishwa, and the Nizam against Tipu in 1790 was contrary to the policy of the ring-fence, but was indispensable. The Treaty of Bassein (1803) was a necessary corollary to the subsidiary relations of the Company with Hyderabad and Baroda. And lastly the treaty of Lahore (1809) was entailed on the Company owing to the arrangement with Oudh having become obsolete and the extension of the English territory right up to Delhi.

---

## PART II.

## THE PERIOD OF SUBORDINATE ISOLATION, 1813-1858.

FROM the time of Lord Hastings, we come upon a definite change in the policy of the Company. Changes of policy are, of course, a matter of gradual growth; but an examination of treaties and engagements with the Princes and a survey of the well-known views of the Governors-General will justify the selection of the year 1813 as making the beginning of a period when the theory of the independence of the Native States and the corollary policy of non-intervention definitely gave way and were superseded by a new conception of the Imperial and suzerain character of the British power and the doctrine of the subordinate isolation of the feudatory States. It is true that Lord Wellesley perceived the imperative need for this change and introduced into his treaties phrases of obedience as well as alliance; but the settlements of Lord Cornwallis during his second term of office and of Lord Minto dissolved some of these engagements and left large underlimited blocks of foreign territory in the midst of British provinces with their external frontiers undefined and their mutual relations undetermined. Cornwallis found fault with the extension of British alliances as "retarding the natural development of stronger organizations," and he would have been content to see "the absorption of the smaller chiefships in large Kingdoms ruled by independent sovereigns in international relations with the British Government." This policy appears to be dictated by enlightened self-interest and by public morality; but in reality it only favoured the growth of loose tribal chiefships and ephemeral despotisms which spring up and by their mutual scramble increase the general confusion. Not only indeed is the check afforded by this to the progress of English expansion temporary, but the subsequent reaction, as events showed, is apt to "produce a rebound." "A halt is followed by a great stride forward, a few steps taken backward look like preparation for a longer leap, so that masterly inactivity is attributed to astute calculation;

and we are often unjustly accused in India, of allowing the pear to rot that it may drop the easier into our hands.”\*

The outbreak of Pindari savagery, dignified by the name of war in history, was intimately a product of the policy of the ring-fence and could not be suppressed without the Company abandoning the policy of non-intervention. “It was the product at compound interest of the Company’s repression of disorder within its own border and of its policy of unconcern beyond its own possessions.” The open disowning and secret encouraging of the Pindari Chiefs by the Mahrattas led to the fourth Mahratta War (1816-18), to the wreck of the Peishwa’s sovereignty, to the creation of Satara and the careful demarcation of the States of Indore, Gwalior, and Nagpur. Soon followed the settlement of Rajputana and Central India; and a host of States like Karauli, Kotah, Jodhpur, Udaipur, Bundi, Pratabgarh, Dungarpur, Jaisalmer, etc., were taken under protection. By 1818, there was no room left in the country for the consolidation of strong organizations to which Lord Cornwallis looked forward, except in Sind and the remote Punjab. Lord Hastings was a Treaty-maker as well as a King-maker, and saved several States from annexation. In 1819 he raised the Vazier of Oudh to the dignity of King and thus announced that “the British Government which had pensioned the Emperor and suppressed the sovereignty of the Peishwa could bestow a kingly title also.” His settlements built up Rajputana Agency, divided Central India into blocks and preserved the Gujarat chiefs. When he left India in 1823, he had everywhere established the principle of subordinate isolation and military co-operation as the accepted bases of action towards the States. To him was due the phrase ‘subordinate co-operation’ though he limited the co-operation of the States to military requirements and insisted on their complete isolation from one another.

The Nepal War of Hastings and the First Burmese War ended by the Treaty of Yaudalem (1826), brought Frontier politics within

---

\* A. Lyall—*The Rise and Expansion of the British Dominion in India* (1907). pp. 279-80.



the field of the Company's control. Jaintia and Manipur were added to the British protection by Amherst. In Bharatpur (1826) and Indore (1844) the English asserted their right of interference in a case of disputed succession. Lord William Bentinck annexed Coorg in accordance with the unanimous wish of the people and terminated gross misrule in Mysore by taking it up under direct control and administration (1831). He also insisted that the principle of British protection involves the abandonment by the feudatory States of all inhuman and barbarous practices, like *sati*, condemned by all civilization. The Afghan politics of Auckland and Ellenborough are beyond our present purpose; but the latter's annexation of Sindh on Imperial grounds in 1843 cut "a knot that diplomacy had failed to unravel." If Sindh had not fallen to the Company it would have been annexed either by the Sikhs or by the Afghans; and the English could not possibly allow the danger of divided control and misgovernment to continue to prevail in a region which possessed enormous strategic importance as the Afghan War had just proved. The rapid collapse of the Sikh dominion after Ranjit Singh's death into storm, anarchy, and systematic assassination and the arrogance of the Army of the Khalsa forced upon Lord Hardinge the First Sikh War. This and the succeeding final struggle of Dalhousie were very bitter and "The absorption by Ranjit Singh of the principalities, the tyrannical oppression of the Hindu and Mahomedan population of the Punjab, and the uncontrollable licence of the Army when General Ventura resigned in 1843, were the bitter fruits of the policy of isolation pursued in the North as they had been in Central India. Non-intervention eventually produced a death struggle between the British and the Sikhs to which neither the Mahratta Wars nor the Pindari War bore any resemblance." When the Punjab was annexed by Dalhousie it was too late to correct the evils without annexation and the consequent entire change of administration. Dalhousie also added Pegu as the fruit of the Second Burmese War, annexed Satara where the Raja died without male issue in 1848, Nagpur in 1853, where there was a similar situation, and Oudh, whose Kings had

failed to act up to their treaty-engagements, and whose administration was "fraught with suffering to millions" (1856).

These and other annexations were inevitably connected with non-intervention in the internal affairs of the subordinate States. The English exaggerated the risk and the expense of attempting to reform abuses in the States of the native Princes; while the latter claimed the right of governing their subjects as they pleased and did not like to surrender a single attribute of their authority. In 1835, when there was a serious rising of the people in India against their ruler, Hari Rao Holkar, the Government of India did not care to interfere, as "interference would require a prolonged treatment of the internal affairs of the State, and this, it was asserted, was inconsistent with the position of His Highness and the policy of the Government." A similar instance of Government's inactivity was furnished in 1853 in Bahawalpur. More frequently the Princes themselves were to blame for the failure to seek intervention in season. "Until annexation was recognized as the rock on which vicious and despotic rulers would inevitably drive the ship of State, and when as yet that danger was not finally removed by the new policy introduced by the Viceroy, the subordinate allies of the Company tenaciously clung to the phrases of the earlier treaties and resisted any sort of enquiry or assistance in their internal affairs." \* Sindh and Punjab were annexed on ground of imperial reasons; and Coorg and Oudh were brought under British control on account of continued misgovernment on the part of their rulers. The Company, however, took care to see that whenever and wherever they proceeded to annex, their action was strictly correct from an international point of view. War was declared upon Coorg in 1834; and in the case of Oudh, His Majesty Wajid Ali Shah, its last King, was deposed for persistent breach of his engagements. The mission of Sir William Sleeman, "the missionary of a foregone conclusion," who found Oudh "a country blessed by God and metamorphosed into a hell" †

---

\* The Native States of India, pp. 131 and 132.

† Edwardes and Merivale—Life of Sir Henry Lawrence, p. 547.

and the final demand presented by Major Outram which was ignored, led to the assumption by the Company of the direct administration of the kingdom by proclamation in February, 1856.

Thus military considerations first opened the door of annexation; and "conceptions of improved administration" widened the passage, when the failure of treaties led to no improvement. Lord Dalhousie welcomed *lapses* on account of failure of heirs as cutting the knot which political practice had failed to untie. The doctrine of lapse according to which "in States owing their origin to our grant or gift, if heirs fail, according to the terms of our grant, we annex,\* provided an opportunity for securing better Government without recourse to war and without waiting for the failure of treaties. Lord Dalhousie would not, therefore, bolster up Native States by adoptions; he was opposed to permitting "far-fetched adoptions in order to defeat a lapse." Such was the policy that Dalhousie pursued in the case of seven States. Annexation by lapse was not his personal discovery and was one of the solutions by which the evils connected with non-interference might be got rid of. Sir John Strachey says that Lord Dalhousie's policy rendered the extinction of nearly all the Native States of India only a question of time; but Sir William Lee-Warner, in his two-volumed biography of the great Pro-consul, labours hard to prove that his scheme was one of rectification and consolidation and that in carrying out that great plan, he annexed but about half-a-dozen principalities.† Of these acquisitions Nagpur was by far the largest and richest; but it was also the one to the acquisition of which the least exception could be taken. Dalhousie limited the application of lapse to dependent States; and, except in case of Karauli, his proposals were subjected to the fullest discussion and approved by all authorities.

It was Hastings' rigid marking off of the internal administration of each prince as outside the sphere of British action that brought about the era of annexations by conquest, by lapse of heirs, by

---

\* Sir Charles Wood's Despatch to the Governor-General—9th August, 1854.

† Life of the Marquis of Dalhousie, Vol. II, p. 157.

failure of treaties, etc. Dalhousie departed from the general rule of inactivity and unconcern on the part of British power; he only attempted to reduce the area of protection and of consequent possible misrule to which that area might be subjected. The lessons of the Mutiny made the suzerain power drop the fiction of non-interference and ensured the continuance of native rule by means of timely interference and control. Thus, after a bitter experience, both Ruling Princes and protectors realized the element of personal responsibility and the necessity of co-operation in all matters and they were convinced that a change of system which assured them of timely intervention and guidance and at the same time perpetuated their rule was to be welcomed.

---

## PART III.

---

### UNDER THE CROWN (AFTER 1857.)

---

THE century of storm and convulsion, annexation and a suspicious isolation of the feudatory States which followed the victory of Plassey and ended with the cataclysm of the Mutiny, was now succeeded by a period of quiet and rest during which the treaty-map has remained almost unaltered, unless we take into consideration the expansion of the British protectorate outside the natural frontiers of India. With the Royal Proclamation of 1858, and the *sanads* of adoption issued by Lord Canning, the first Viceroy of the Queen, a new spirit of co-operation and union, and a consciousness of their own dignity as members of the British Empire and vassals of the Imperial Crown, have been steadily growing in the minds of the protected Princes. They were now recognized as "partners with the Government of India not only in the defence of the Empire and in the output of its foreign treaties and its international activity, but also in the material and the moral progress of the united country." The transfer of the Government of India to the Crown in 1858 meant a parting of the ways; and the Queen assured to the Princes, through her Viceroy, an

indefeasible hereditary title to their States. Her proclamation in 1858 did for the feudatory Princes throughout all India, what the permanent settlement had done in 1793 for the landholders of Bengal. It assured to them the Queen's deep personal concern in their welfare and frankly relinquished the right which the Company had lately enforced, of resuming their fiefs on the failure of natural heirs. "It took a vast heterogeneous collection of powerful men, whose rights varied widely both in extent and in origin and it united them into a body of firm supporters of the British rule by placing them on a common basis of permanent title derived from the British Government." The sole conditions of this large grant were fidelity to their engagements and loyalty to the Crown.

Lord Canning's Adoption *sanads*, supplemented later by those of Lord Lawrence and the Marquis of Lansdowne, announced in clear terms this new policy, associated the grant of permanence of possession with the conditions of loyalty and subordination and created "a basis of mutual trust and confidence upon which the partnership might be established." The concession was in theory personal and did not debar the Government from interference or even from annexation; but the grants have been interpreted and acted upon as moral pledges and the customary treatment accorded to the Princes to whom *sanads* have been granted, has also been meted out to others who have not received any pledge or guarantee of adoption. In cases of misconduct by a Chief, Government proceeds against him as an individual, and takes the utmost care to preserve his dynasty; and such instances have become happily very rare and infrequent. Thus have been accentuated the duty of the Princes to display loyalty and devotion to the Imperial Throne and the corresponding obligation accepted by the latter to uphold their honour, dignity, and political status.

"It would, however, be a poor policy which contemplated only cases of misconduct. The whole relations of the Indian Foreign Office are now more cordial and more forbearing towards the Feudatory Chiefs. It interferes with them less, it respects their native methods

of doing business more; it is the channel of honours from the Sovereign to those who govern well. It has become almost a fixed rule of practice that the Viceroy should be his own Foreign Minister, retaining in his own hand the Foreign Office portfolio, with no member of Council between himself and the Feudatory Chiefs. He is in direct and friendly contact with them and takes every opportunity to gather them around him at solemn State functions as the visible representative of the Queen. Above all, he labours by precept and example for the education of their sons. The greater Native States or group of States have now their Indian Etons, personally inaugurated by the Viceroy or under his direct auspices, where the future Princes of India receive a manly and liberal training, as nearly on the lines of an English public school as the pomp and exclusiveness of the Indian feudatories permit.”\*

Towards producing these results, each succeeding Viceroy has laboured in his own measure; and they succeeded in producing the feeling in the minds of the Chiefs that they are “no longer passive units in an irresistible organization of political skill and military force, but living members of an Empire under a living head.” The tour of the Duke of Edinburgh, the first Royal Prince to visit India bearing messages of motherly love from the Queen to her Princes and peoples, awakened in the hearts of the Chiefs “chords which had lain mute since the overthrow of the Mughal dynasty.” The visit of the Prince of Wales in 1876 strengthened the bonds of personal affection and loyalty between the Crown and the Chiefs. Lord Mayo, who stands conspicuous among the Viceroys as the *Conciliator of Indian Princes*, fully realized that beyond pageants and ceremonials there was an interior region of intercourse and kindly interest which the Viceroy might feel for them; and he led them to see that his private friendship was only to be won by the personal merits of their character and had nothing to do with greatness of their territory, the degree of their political independence or the number of the jealously counted guns which saluted them from British Batteries. He gathered

---

\* W. W. Hunter—*The India of the Queen and other Essays*, pp. 24-25.

round him a circle of rulers whose character elicited his personal admiration and the excellence of whose administration contributed to his pride in them—among these being the Nawab Shah Jahan Begam of Bhopal (1868-1901), of whom the Viceroy wrote, "this little Begam would lead the way and set a good example." In only one case, that of Alwar, was he driven to the necessity of superseding the Prince by Council of management on account of his misgovernment. On the Princes, Mayo's assassination came like a personal bereavement; and the Scindia's exclamation, "I have made and lost a friend," is touching evidence of how the Viceroy won the hearts and moulded the policy of the Chiefs. Under Northbrook, the next Viceroy, there was a single exception of the good things reported from most of the States. Early in 1875, Mulhar Rao, the Gaekwar of Baroda, was deposed for his misconduct and his continued disregard of all warnings; he was also tried before a mixed commission of Englishmen and Indians on a charge of attempting to poison his Resident, Colonel Phayre, but was acquitted owing to a verdict of 'Not Proven.' In the same year, a College for the children of the Chiefs was opened at Ajmere, under the appropriate title of 'Mayo College,' the late Viceroy having planned the institution. In many States an imitation of European institutions was being raised, like courts of law, defined codes of procedure, regular administrative rules, etc. The city of Jaipur became thus early a model for public works and sanitation under its enlightened ruler.

Lord Lytton desired, in connection with the plans for the proclamation of the Queen as the *Kaisar-i-Hind*, to establish "an Indian Privy Council, forming a distinct and separate institution, restricted at all events in the first instance to the great Chiefs and empowered to consult with and advise the Viceroy from time to time on general matters of State."\* Lytton also proposed at the same time to initiate a native peerage for the Empire of India and establish a Heralds' College at Calcutta. His imposing pageantry at Delhi proclaiming the Queen, Empress of India, gave a certain amount of

---

\* Lady Betty Balfour—*Lord Lytton's Indian Administration*, p. 111.

satisfaction to the Chiefs who attended it. Scindia received a Grand Cross of the Bath; he and the Maharaja of Kashmir were gazetted Generals in the British Army. The Khan of Khalat and his wild-looking Sardars returned home thoroughly satisfied. Writing to Disraeli, Lord Lytton was of the opinion, referring to the feudatories: "Here is a great feudal aristocracy which we cannot get rid of, which we are avowedly anxious to conciliate and command, but which we have as yet done next to nothing to rally round the British Crown as its feudal head." A little later in a letter to Lord Salisbury he harps upon the same theme: "But the Indian Chiefs and Princes are not a mere *noblesse*. They are a powerful aristocracy. To secure completely and efficiently utilize the Indian aristocracy is, I am convinced, the most important problem now before us."

The Rendition of Mysore (1881) by Lord Ripon to its old native dynasty, which Lord William Bentinck had to all seeming dethroned for ever, was practically a re-grant and not a mere restoration of native rule after a temporary interruption. The value of this great event cannot be easily over-estimated. Another prominent landmark in the relations of the suzerain power with the feudatory States is the interference of Lord Lansdowne in Manipur (1892), which led to the deposition of the reigning Chief and his brother, the *Senapati*, and to a temporary occupation of the State. Both he and his predecessor, Lord Dufferin, promoted cordial relations with the Chiefs who now offered large sums of money in free gift towards the cost of frontier defence and granted loans on liberal terms to Government. Towards the close of Lord Lansdowne's Viceroyalty, some thousands of picked troops from the armies of the feudatory Princes were enrolled for purposes of Imperial Defence as Imperial Service Troops; and they have since then played their part with high credit in camps of exercise as well as in the field of battle. The idea was Lord Dufferin's; and many of the important States came to maintain Imperial Service Troops, and Lord Curzon sent detachments of them to China and Somaliland. Lord Curzon saw that the Imperial Service scheme was unequal and desired that these troops should be placed



more definitely under British control, but no systematic organization was reached on these lines. He also instituted the Imperial Cadet Corps, formed of the young sons of noble families who desired military training, under the sanction of King Edward. He greatly interested himself in the Chiefs' Colleges at Ajmere, Lahore, Indore, and Rajkote, and laboured to persuade the Princes that these Colleges would render their sons and relations better and more useful men. Many instances could be given of his personal interest in the Chiefs; and the most important of these was the final settlement of the long-delayed matter of Berar with the Nizam. According to Lord Fraser, "the bargain was a fair one and did reasonable justice to both parties."\* His policy towards the Princes may be summed up in his speech at the investiture of the young Nawab of Bahawalpur in 1903: "Now their sympathies have expanded with their knowledge and their sense of responsibility with the degree of confidence reposed in them. They recognize their obligations to their own States, and their duty to the Imperial Throne. The British Crown is no longer an impersonal abstraction, but a concrete and inspiring force. They have become figures on a great stage instead of actors in petty parts. In my view, as this process has gone on, the Princes have gained in prestige instead of losing it. They have ceased to be the architectural adornments of the Imperial edifice, and have become the pillars that help to sustain the main roof."†

The visit of King George, then Prince of Wales, in 1906, to the Courts of Mysore, Hyderabad, and Gwalior, and the proclamation of the King-Emperor in 1908, which was read to the Princes assembled at Jodhpur by Lord Minto, eulogising the services of the Chiefs and renewing the promises of Queen Victoria, further strengthened the existing bonds. Lord Minto, in a speech at Udaipur in 1909, deprecated excessive interference with the feudatories and preferred, unlike Lord Curzon, that reforms in the Native States should be

---

\* *India under Curzon and After*, p. 216.

† *India under Curzon and After*, p. 224.

*native-born* and should grow up in harmony with the traditions of the States themselves. He did not want administrative efficiency on Western lines introduced in those States at the expense of their traditions. In 1910 he announced the recognition of the Maharaja of Benares as one of the Ruling Chiefs of India.

The great Darbar of the King-Emperor at Delhi had a momentous effect on the attitude of the Chiefs.

The War with Germany has acted as a new and totally unexpected factor in the development of these States. Personal stables of horses, elephants, and camels of the Princes were given over by them for the War Department. The Maharaja of Gwalior fitted out the hospital ship *Loyalty* to accompany the Indian Expeditionary Force. The Darbars of Mysore and Hyderabad gave splendid donations; and even the Chiefs of the wild border tribes sent messages of loyalty and support. The ruler of Bikaner and Sir Pratab Singh of Jodhpur personally fought in European battlefields. The King-Emperor, in an imperial message, announced that "nothing had moved him more than the passionate devotion to my throne expressed by my Indian subjects and by the feudatory Princes and Ruling Chiefs of India and their prodigious offers of their lives and their resources in the cause of the Realm." The Imperial War Council included the Maharaja of Bikaner. Lord Chelmsford's summoning of the Chiefs Conferences at Delhi and the proposal to establish a Council of Princes—these and others are of too recent occurrence and of too palpable significance to need more than passing mention.

Lord Chelmsford described in 1916, the Princes as the "pillars of the Empire." How far they would like the new Reform Scheme remains to be seen. They are becoming self-conscious even as the Indian people are and are no more inclined to give up tamely their rights and privileges. The Maharaja of Bikaner actively co-operated with Lord Sinha and Mr. Montagu in getting the Reform Bill through. Babu Govinda Das in his recent book, "The Governance of India," proposes a federation scheme in which the feudatory Princes are to be admitted on fulfilling certain conditions. This is,

however, to be regarded rather as an ideal of the future than as an urgent need. Much should be left to the cause of evolution of the Council of Princes and to the progress of constitutional advance in the States—in many of which institutions of a representative character have been created and are working efficiently. But this again is a matter in which the suzerain Government cannot be expected to exercise any kind of pressure, direct or indirect, and in which the political consciousness of the Native States people will play a prominent part. As regards the legal status of the Native States, a word ought to be mentioned. The position of the British suzerain is not *primus inter pares* but paramount; it has never lacked the strength to maintain its rights and compel obedience. Each State has to fulfil obligations towards the common defence of the country, in regard to external relations and internal administration and the duties of loyalty to the Crown. Each of these obligations forms a limitation on the sovereignty of the States. The channels which contribute to the rights and duties of the Chiefs are five—(1) the Royal Prerogative of recognizing successions, assuming guardianship of minors, giving or withdrawing titles, etc., usually exercised by the Viceroy; (2) acts and resolutions of Parliament which are felt only indirectly and which influence by their example; (3) the law of natural justice as a source of obligation; (4) direct agreements in the forms of treaties, engagements, and *sanads*; and (5) usage and custom-forming precedents. All the duties imposed must rest on clear evidence, like treaties, engagements, well-established usage, and legitimate inference. But the responsibilities of Government are large enough without making unnecessary demands on the hereditary rights of the feudatory Princes.

---



## CHAPTER III.

### THE FUTURE OF THE INDIAN STATES.\*

As we have said already it is impossible to deal with the constitutional position in British India without also considering the problems presented by the Native States. India is in fact, as well as by legal definition, one geographical whole. The integral connection of the States with the British Empire not only consists in their relations to the British Crown, but also in their growing interest in many matters common to the land to which they and the British Provinces alike belong.

Although compared with the British Provinces the States are thinly populated, they comprise among them some of the fairest portions of India. The striking difference in their size, importance, and geographical distribution are due partly to variations of policy, partly to historical events, which no Government could control. Wherever consolidating forces were at work before the British advance occurred we find that large units of territory were constituted into States; wherever disorder or other disintegrating factors were at work longer, as in Bombay and Central India, we find a large number of fragmentary territories. "Political, as well as physical, geography bears witness to the stress of the destructive forces through which a country has passed." The policy of the British Government towards the States has changed from time to time, passing from the original plan of non-intervention in all the matters beyond its own ring-fence to the policy of "subordinate isolation" initiated by Lord Hastings; which in its turn gave way before the existing conception of the relation between the States and the Government of India, which may be described as one of union and co-operation on their

---

\* From the Montagu-Chelmsford Report on Indian Constitutional Reform.

part with the paramount power. In spite of the varieties and complexities of treaties, engagements, and *sansads*, the general position as regards the rights and obligations of the Native States can be summed up in a few words. The States are guaranteed security from without; the paramount power acts for them in relation to foreign powers and other States, and it intervenes when the internal peace of their territories is seriously threatened. On the other hand, the States' relations to foreign powers are those of the paramount power; they share the obligation for the common defence; and they are under a general responsibility for the good government and welfare of their territories.

Now let us consider what factors have been at work to bring the Ruling Princes into closer relations with the Government of India. Foremost is the War. No words of ours are needed to make known the services to the Empire which the States have rendered. They were a profound surprise and disappointment to the enemy, and a cause of delight and pride to those who knew beforehand the Princes' devotion to the Crown. With one accord the rulers of the Native States in India rallied to fight for the Empire when War was declared; they offered their personal services and the resources of their States. Imperial Service Troops from over a score of States have fought in various fields, and many with great gallantry and honour. The Princes have helped lavishly with men and horses, material and money, and some of them have in person served in France and elsewhere. They have shown that our quarrel is their own quarrel; and they have both learned and taught the lesson of their own indissoluble connection with the Empire, and their immense value as part of the polity of India.

For many years, however, influences more persistent, though less forceful, than War have been at work to increase the range of matters in which the States realize their solidarity with British India. A perceptible process of infiltration has been going on. We have helped the States in times of famine; we have lent them officers trained in British India to revise or supervise their revenue or financial.

administration, or to improve their agriculture and irrigation. Many of them have adopted our Civil and Criminal Codes. Some have imitated, and even further extended, our educational system. Co-operation in matters of Police and Justice has been developed. Our Railway and Telegraph systems have been carried through and serve many of the States. The Indian customs tariff is a matter of concern to all States including those which have ports of their own. It is, of course, true that external influences have not affected the States equally. They have not all been equally able to assimilate new principles. They are in all stages of development, patriarchal, feudal, or more advanced, while in a few States are found the beginnings of representative institutions. The characteristic features of all of them, however, including the most advanced, are the personal rule of the Prince and his control over legislation and the administration of justice. Nor have any changes which have occurred in the least impaired the validity of the treaties which assured to the States their powers of internal administration. Indeed, it may be said that in a composite society like India's and in times when ideas are changing rapidly, the existence of States in which ideals of chivalry and personal devotion survive as the motive principle of government has been the more clearly seen to have an abiding value. The independence of the States in matters of internal administration carries with it the counter-obligation of non-interference in British Indian affairs. If the Princes were to intervene, either informally or formally, in the internal affairs of British India, such action would, we think, be reasonably questioned, unless the representatives of British India were given a corresponding right of influencing the affairs of the States. On either hand, we believe, there is no desire to cross the frontier. Rulers and politicians alike recognize that they are best employed in attending to their own progress. The obligation of mutual abstention must be always borne in mind in estimating the future position of the Native States in a changing Indian Empire.

We know that the States cannot be unaffected by constitutional development in adjoining Provinces. Some of the more enlightened

and thoughtful of the Princes, among whom are included some of the best-known names, have realized this truth, and have themselves raised the question of their own share in any scheme of reform. Others of the Princes—again including some of the most honoured names—desire only to leave matters as they are. We feel the need for caution in this matter. It would be a strange reward for loyalty and devotion to force new ideas upon those who did not desire them; but it would be no less strange if, out of consideration for those who perhaps represent gradually vanishing ideas, we were to refuse to consider the suggestions of others who have been no less loyal and devoted. Looking ahead to the future we can picture India to ourselves only as presenting the external semblance of some form of "federation." The Provinces will ultimately become self-governing units, held together by the Central Government, which will deal solely with matters of common concern to all of them. But the matters common to the British Provinces are also to a great extent those in which the Native States are interested—defence, tariffs, exchange, opium, salt, railways, and posts and telegraphs. The gradual concentration of the Government of India upon such matters will, therefore, make it easier for the States, while retaining the autonomy which they cherish in internal matters, to enter into closer association with the Central Government, if they wish to do so. But, though we have no hesitation in forecasting such a development as possible, the last thing that we desire is to attempt to force the pace. All that we need or can do is to open the door to the natural developments of the future.

In this respect the trend of recent events has helped. The desire to give greater reality to the consciousness of common interests is stirring among the Princes, and it is now possible and desirable to turn it to more practical account than our predecessors were able to do. Lord Lytton's proposal to constitute an Imperial Privy Council, which should comprise some of the Great Princes, resulted only in the ephemeral and purely honorific body known as the Councilors of the Empire. Lord Dufferin's institution of Imperial Service Troops



was of much greater value in giving actual and useful expression to the feeling of community of interests. Lord Curzon's plan for a Council of Ruling Princes and Lord Minto's schemes, first for an Imperial Advisory Council and then for an Imperial Council of Ruling Princes, were suggestions only a little in advance of the time. The idea which attracted his two predecessors gained fresh life as a result of the conferences which Lord Hardinge held with the Princes to consider questions of higher education in the States. Lord Hardinge made no secret of his desire to seek the collective opinion of the Princes as trusted colleagues whenever possible on matters affecting their Order, and in responding to His Excellency's invitation Their Highnesses the Maharajas of Gwalior and Indore also laid stress upon the essential identity of interest between the two halves of India. Lord Chelmsford carried the system of conferences further by utilizing them for the purpose of discussing general questions affecting the States as a whole, and His Highness the Gaekwar in welcoming the new development expressed the hope that what had by that time become an annual conference would develop into a permanent Council or Assembly of Princes. Moreover, only last year, the claim of the States to be heard in matters of Imperial concern were signally recognized by the deputation of His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner to the Meeting of the Imperial Conference and the War Cabinet.

In view of the fact that the constitutional changes in British India may react in an important manner on the Native States we have carefully considered their present relations with the Government of India. We became aware at the outset that, although the policy which has been followed for more than a century towards the States has been amply vindicated by the trust and confidence which the Princes as a body repose in the British Government, yet in some quarters uncertainty and uneasiness undoubtedly exist. Some Rulers are perturbed by a feeling that the measure of a sovereignty and independence guaranteed to them by the British Government has not been accorded in full, and they are apprehensive lest in process of

time their individual rights and privileges may be whittled away. We ascribe this feeling to two causes. In the first place, the expression "Native States" is applied now, and has been applied during the past century, to a collection of about seven hundred rulerships which exhibit widely differing characteristics, which range from States with full autonomy over their internal affairs to States in which Government exercises, through the agents, large powers of internal control and even down to the owners of a few acres of land. Uniformity of terminology tends to obscure distinctions of status, and practice appropriate in the case of the lesser Chiefs may be inadvertently applied to the greater ones also. We are convinced that it would improve and assist future relations between the Crown and the States, if a definite line could be drawn separating the Rulers, who enjoy full powers of internal administration from the others. Our own proposals assume that such classification can and will, after due inquiry, be effected, and are intended to relate only to States of the former class.

In the second place, we cannot disregard the fact that the general clause which occurs in many of the treaties to the effect that the Chief shall remain absolute Ruler of his country has not in the past precluded, and does not even now preclude, "interference with the administration by Government through the agency of its representatives at the Native Courts." We need hardly say that such interference has not been employed in wanton disregard of treaty obligations. During the earlier days of our intimate relations with the States, British agents found themselves compelled, often against their will, to assume responsibility for the welfare of a people, to restore order from chaos, to prevent inhuman practices, and to guide the hands of a weak or incompetent Ruler as the only alternative to the termination of his rule. So, too, at the present day, the Government of India acknowledges, as trustee, a responsibility (which the Princes themselves desire to maintain) for the proper administration of States during a minority, and also an obligation for the prevention or correction of flagrant misgovernment.

Moreover, we find that the position hitherto taken up by Government has been that the conditions under which some of the treaties were executed have undergone material changes and the literal fulfilment of particular obligations which they impose has become impracticable. Practice has been based on the theory that treaties must be read as a whole, and that they must be interpreted in the light of the relations established between the parties not only at the time when a particular treaty was made, but subsequently. The result is that there has grown up around the treaties a body of case-law which anyone who is anxious to appreciate the precise nature of existing relations must explore in Government archives and in text-books. The Princes, viewing the application of this case-law to their individual relations with Government, are uneasy as to its ultimate effect. They fear that usage and precedent may be exercising a levelling and corroding influence upon the treaty rights of individual States.

It is thus clear that some ambiguity and misunderstanding exist as to the exact position. The Government of India has already taken cognizance of this, and is affording opportunity for the verification of any specific complaints that may be made. We do not desire to say anything that might prejudice the issue of these inquiries. In the meanwhile, however, we suggest that the time has come when it would be well to review the situation, of course, only by consent of parties, not necessarily with a view to any change of policy, but in order to simplify, standardize, and codify existing practice for the future. Before we pass on to state our own proposals we wish to say that we think that the Princes should be assured in the fullest and freest manner that no constitutional changes which may take place will impair the rights, dignities, and privileges secured to them by treaties, *samads*, and engagements, or by established practice.

We have explained how, on various occasions in recent years, the Princes have met in conference at the invitation of the Viceroy. These conferences have been of great value in assisting in the formulation of the Government's policy on important matters like

minority administration and succession and promoting interest in such questions as scientific agriculture and commercial and agricultural statistics. The meetings have given the Princes the opportunity of informing the Government as to their sentiments and wishes of broadening their outlook, and of conferring with one another and with the Government. But although the meetings have in the last few years been regular they depend upon the invitation of the Viceroy; and our first proposal is to replace them by the institution of a Council of Princes. We wish to call into existence a permanent consultative body. There are questions which affect the States generally, and other questions which are of concern either to the Empire as a whole or to British India and the States in common, upon which we conceive that the opinion of such a body would be of the utmost value. The Viceroy would refer such questions to the Council, and we should have the advantage of their considered opinion. We think it is all-important that the meetings should be regular, and that ordinarily the Council should meet once a year to discuss agenda approved by the Viceroy. Any member of the Council, or the Council as a whole, might request the Viceroy to include in the agenda any subject on which discussion was desired. If questions of sufficient importance arose in the intervals between the annual meetings the Princes might suggest to the Viceroy that an extraordinary meeting should be held. We contemplate that the Viceroy should be President, and should, as a rule, preside, but in his absence one of the Princes should be Chairman. The rules of business would be framed by the Viceroy, after consultation with the Princes, who might perhaps from time to time suggest modifications in the rules. We believe that most of the Princes desire to see such a Council created, although some of the most eminent among them have not taken part in the conferences in 1916 and 1917. The direct transaction of business between the Government of India and any State would, of course, not be affected by the institution of the Council. We have used the name "Council of Princes" to describe the body which we desire to see instituted. We had difficulty, however, in finding a name appropriate

to such a unique assembly. We wish to avoid a designation associated with other institutions and to find one which will connote the real position of this body of rulers, with the representative of the King-Emperor as Chairman. From both these points of view the terms Council or Chamber, or House of Princes, are open to criticism. There is much to be said in favour of the Indian name for an Indian body which, from the circumstances of the case, would exist nowhere else; but it would be necessary to choose one not peculiarly associated historically either with Hindus or with Mahomedans. While, therefore, we have adopted the term Council for temporary purposes, we hope that discussion may produce some happier alternative.

It has been represented to us that difficulties have occurred in the past by reason of the fact that the Political Department comes to decisions affecting the Native States without being in a position to know from their own personal experience or from the history of the states the right course to pursue. On matters of custom and usage in particular we feel that such advice would be of great value, and would help to ensure sound decisions. Our second proposal, therefore, is that the Council of Princes should be invited annually to appoint a small Standing Committee, to which the Viceroy or the Political Department might refer such matters. We need hardly say that no reference affecting any individual State would be made to the Committee without the concurrence of its ruler. The Council of Princes might appoint to the Standing Committee not only Princes, but also Dewans or Ministers, who were willing to place their services at the disposal of the Viceroy when called upon for advice. This machinery is based on the principle of consultation which in so many matters underlies our recommendations in regard to British India.

Our next proposal is concerned with disputes which may arise between two or more States, or between a State and a local Government or the Government of India, and with a situation caused when a State is dissatisfied with the ruling of the Government of India or the advice of any of its local representatives. In such cases there exists at the present moment no satisfactory method of

obtaining any exhaustive and judicial inquiry into the issues, such as might satisfy the States, particularly in cases where the Government of India itself is involved, that the issues have been considered in an independent and impartial manner. Whenever, therefore, in such cases the Viceroy felt that such an inquiry was desirable, we recommend that he should appoint a Commission, on which both parties would be represented, to enquire into the matter in dispute and to report its conclusions to him. If the Viceroy were unable to accept the finding, the matter would be referred for decision by the Secretary of State. The Commission that we have in mind would be composed of a Judicial Officer of rank not lower than a High Court Judge and one nominee of each of the parties concerned.

In another class of cases we have a similar proposal to make. It has happened, and we conceive that it may happen, though rarely in the future, that the question arises of depriving the Ruler of a State of his rights, dignities, and powers, or of debarring from succession a member of his family. If such cases occur in the future we think that they should be always referred to a Commission to be appointed by the Viceroy to advise him. It should consist of five members, including ordinarily a High Court Judge and two Ruling Princes. The names of the Commissioners should be intimated in advance to the defendant before they were appointed; and the proceedings of the Commission should be made public only if the defendant so desired.

Our two remaining proposals bear a direct relation to our constitutional scheme for British India. We recommend that as a general principle all important States should be placed in direct political relations with the Government of India. We feel that the necessity of communicating with the Central Government through two, or even more, intermediaries is an obstruction to good understanding and a great obstacle to business. The present position is that, while four large States and one small State deal directly with the Government of India through their Resident, there are in

the Central India Agency some 150 States and in the Rajputana Agency some 20 States and in Baluchistan 2 States under the Agents to the Governor-General. The remaining States are in Political relation with local Governments. Madras deals with 5 States, Bombay with over 350, Bengal with 2, the United Provinces with 3, the Punjab with 34, Burma with 52, Bihar and Orissa with 26, the Central Provinces with 15, and Assam with 16. We have already laid stress in our report upon the need for dividing matters of all Indian, from those of provincial, concern. Now on general grounds the relations between the States and Government are clearly a matter for the Central Government, and where this principle has been departed from it has been on grounds of history or convenience. It seems to us that the changing conditions of the time afford strong reason for affirming the principle, both because the institution of a Council of Princes will give greater solidarity to the views of the States, and also because the growth of responsibility in Provincial Governments will to some extent unfit them to act in political matters as mere agents for the Government of India. There will, we recognize, be difficulty in some cases where the territories of the States and British Provinces intersect, but such obstacles are not insurmountable. As a general principle, therefore, we recommend that all important States should be placed in direct political relations with the Central Government. We do not intend, of course, that the Durbars should write direct to the Political Secretary, but that there should, wherever possible, be only one Political Officer through whom the State would correspond with the Government of India. This is already the case with the States of Hyderabad, Baroda, Mysore, and Kashmir. In other cases, it will be necessary to revise the existing arrangements by which correspondence passes through a local Political Agent or Resident to an Agent to the Governor-General or a local Government and thence to the Government of India. Where the authority immediately subordinate to the Government of India is an Agent to the Governor-General, the choice lies generally between abolishing the offices of local Political Agents or Residents, while

transferring their functions to the Agents to the Governor-General with an increased staff of assistants, and abolishing the post of Agent to the Governor-General, while retaining Residents accredited to States, or groups of States. In other cases, instead of abolishing either the Agent to the Governor-General or the Resident, where both officers exist, the Residents of particular States might be allowed to communicate direct with the Government of India, sending a copy of such communications to the Agent to the Governor-General or the Resident, where both officers exist, the Residents of particular States might be allowed to communicate direct with the Government of India, sending a copy of such communications to the Agent to the Governor-General for his information. The future position of other States which were now in relation with Provincial Governments cannot be determined immediately since both the wishes of the Darbars, and also the administrative advantages must be considered. It may be that the Government of India will assume direct relations with these States, or that they may be left for the time being in relation with the Provincial Governments; but in the latter case it seems to us that the head of the Province should, in each case, act in his relations with the States as agent for the Central Government, and that relations with the Native States should not be matters of provincial concern in the sense that they are intended ever to be transferred to the control of the Legislative Council.

Our last proposal is intended to provide some means of deliberation between the Government of India and the Princes on matters of common interest to both, and so to ensure that, as far as possible, decisions affecting India as a whole shall be reached after the views of the Darbars have been taken into account. In the past it certainly has occasionally happened that the States were vitally affected by decisions taken without reference to them; and yet no machinery for such collective consultation with them has hitherto existed. It seems to us that they have a clear right to ask for it in the future. We have abandoned for the present all consideration of suggestions that the Ruling Princes, or some representatives of their Order, should



be members of the Council of State. Not only would this at the present stage infringe the doctrine of non-interference on the part of the Princes in the affairs of British India, but we are satisfied that few, if any, of the Princes themselves are ready for such a step. On the other hand, it seems to us that, when a Council of Princes has been established, and when a Council of State and Privy Council have been created, the machinery will exist for bringing the senatorial institutions of British India into closer relations when necessary with the Rulers of the Native States. Matters affecting the Native States generally, or the Native States and British India in common, or the Empire, might, as we have seen, be referred to the Council of Princes. It would thus be possible for the Viceroy, when he thought fit, to arrange for joint deliberation and discussion between the Council of State and the Council of Princes, or between representatives of each body. He might also invite members of the Council of Princes to serve on Committees of the Privy Council.

With these indications of the position to be occupied by the Native States in future we may rest content. We believe that the trend of events must draw them still closer into the orbit of the Empire; we think that the process need give rise to no alarm lest their internal autonomy be threatened. We need not conceal our conviction that the processes at work in British India cannot leave the States untouched and must in time affect even those whose ideas and institutions are of the most conservative and feudal character. But in that respect there can be no intention or desire to accelerate growth by artificial means. We believe that our proposals will afford satisfaction to the progressive Rulers, while respecting the legitimate desire of those less advanced to go forward at their own pace

---



## CHAPTER IV.

### THE STATES AND THE WAR CONFERENCE.

APRIL 1918.

At the War Conference summoned by H. E. the Viceroy in April 1918, to secure the active support of all classes of people in India, "in such measures as may be necessary for the successful prosecution of the War, with special reference to man-power and the development of India's resources," the Rulers of Native States played a very prominent part. The following Ruling Chiefs were present at the conferences\* :—

His Highness the Maharaja of Alwar.

His Highness the Gaekwar of Baroda.

Her Highness the Begum of Bhopal.

His Highness the Maharaja of Bikaner.

His Highness the Maharaja of Cooch Behar.

His Highness the Maharao of Cutch.

His Highness the Maharaj Rana of Dholpur.

His Highness the Maharaja of Gwalior.

His Highness the Maharaja of Indore.

His Highness the Maharaja of Jaipur.

His Highness the Maharaja of Kapurthala.

His Highness the Maharaja of Kashmir.

His Highness the Maharaja of Kolhapur.

His Highness the Maharaja Jam Sahib of Navanagar.

His Highness the Maharaja of Patiala.

The first of the two resolutions at the War Conference was moved by H. H. the Maharaja Gaekwar of Baroda and supported

---

\* The order is not of precedence, but is only alphabetical.

by their Highnesses the Begum of Bhopal, the Maharaja Scindia of Gwalior, the Maharaja of Bikaner, and the Maharaja of Patiala. The speeches made on the occasion are given below:—

---

HIS HIGHNESS THE GAEKWAR OF BARODA.

---

Your Excellency, we have all heard with profound respect the gracious message of His Majesty the King-Emperor, and I have now to request you to convey, on behalf of all my brother Princes and the people of India, an assurance of our unswerving loyalty and abiding attachment to His Majesty's person and throne, in this hour of the Empire's need.

His Majesty's stirring message has not fallen on deaf ears; his clarion call will evoke a sense of duty in all hearts throughout this land. His Majesty has generously appealed to our sense of patriotic unity, and I am confident that the results of this Conference will demonstrate that trust *will* beget trust; that India, feeling the identity of her interests with the rest of the Empire, will leave no stone unturned to play her rôle in a manner befitting her proud position as a partner in the greatest Empire history has ever chronicled.

With intimate mutual knowledge, common aims and objects and a concentration of identical purpose, our resources, which we have all placed at the disposal of His Majesty the King-Emperor, will assuredly be strengthened a thousandfold, and we can look forward to the ultimate end of this Great War with cheerful confidence and supreme faith in the final victory of right over might.

I have now great pleasure in moving the first resolution entrusted to me:—

"That this Conference authorizes and requests His Excellency the Viceroy, to convey to His Majesty the King-Emperor, an expression of India's dutiful and loyal response to his gracious message and an assurance of her determination to continue to do her duty to her utmost capacity in the great crisis through which the Empire is passing."

## HER HIGHNESS THE BEGUM OF BHOPAL.

My Lord, with your permission, I rise to say a very few words in support of the resolution moved in such eloquent terms by His Highness the Maharaja Gackwar. There are times when words are but a poor vehicle for one's thoughts, and I assure Your Excellency that I find it difficult adequately to express the feelings awakened in me by the gracious message from His Majesty the King-Emperor, feelings, which are shared by Princes and people alike throughout the country. Devotion to the British Crown is writ large on every page of Indian History. It is a heritage of imperishable glory, and every one of us is proud of it. Consecrated by a union which has brought India peace, prosperity, and happiness, the outstanding and imperative needs of this country, India has been rightly called the brightest jewel of the British Crown, and in this hour of supreme necessity, when the British Empire is stemming the onrush of forces of barbarism which threaten to shatter the whole fabric of human law and justice, it is only natural that the King-Emperor's words should evoke in this land a dutiful and loyal response. India, Your Excellency, will never fail the Empire in her hour of need. I trust that Your Excellency will, in the name of the whole country, assure His Imperial Majesty that in the development of our resources, in the fullest utilisation of our man-power, nay in response to any call, which the Empire may make at this fateful juncture in the history of the world, we will leave nothing undone to justify the confidence, the love, the sympathy with which the King-Emperor has always honoured us. The need of the Empire is undoubtedly India's opportunity. It is our opportunity for adding to our brilliant record, of proving once more in this ordeal of blood and fire, that we are really worthy of the message we have received from our King-Emperor. Now that the War has entered upon a more intense phase, we assure you that it will never be said of India, that in this supreme crisis India, when weighed in the balance, was found to be wanting. Of this bright jewel of the Crown we will never dim the lustre—may we wish to add to its brilliance.

HIS HIGHNESS THE MAHARAJA SCINDIA OF GWALIOR.

Your Excellency, Brother Princes, and Gentlemen, I rise to support the resolution which has just been seconded by Her Highness the Begum Sahiba of Bhopal.

Your Excellency, Brother Princes, and Gentlemen, although I am not speaking just now in a representative capacity, yet I feel sure that, in view of the terms of the resolution, I can confidently assure the rôle of a spokesman for all the Princes and people of India.

I am convinced that His Majesty the King-Emperor no more stands in need of assurances as to our loyalty to his cause or as to our determination to do our duty in the present juncture, than we do as to his gracious concern for our welfare. It is this concern for India's safety, her immediate need, and her future prosperity, that has impelled His Majesty to send the message which His Excellency the Viceroy communicated to us on April the 27th. And it is the natural complement and counterpart of that concern which makes us inwardly conscious of the feeling that an assurance of our sense of duty must be conveyed to His Majesty our Emperor, in words instinct with unaffected sincerity. However superfluous may be the assurances on either side, we should not be human, if they did not cheer and refresh in this hour of the Empire's ordeal. Let us, therefore, with one voice acclaim the message which proceeded from His Majesty's gracious solicitude for his people. And while blessing him silently for never forgetting us when in danger, let us also articulate our acknowledgments and suffer to come up to our lips, the gratitude which is deep down in our hearts.

Your Excellency, Brother Princes, and Gentlemen, permit me to say that in this country we may differ in politics, we may differ in religion, we may differ in one or the other detail, but as regards one matter there is, I believe, no difference of opinion. That matter is the resolve to perpetuate the Empire. To that end we must will, with all our heart and all our might, to come victoriously out of the present struggle, a struggle which was doubtless forced upon us with the deliberate intent to disintegrate the Empire or at least to jeopardize

its envied solidarity. If I am right in this opinion, and I believe it is the opinion which has found acceptance in most countries, then I say we ought to stick at no effort and spare no sacrifice to strengthen ourselves against that danger. To do so is not only our duty but also a matter of legitimate pride.

Let us not forget that the liberty of the world depends upon the issue of this War. As sure as the sun shines, that liberty is safe if we win it, and, by God's grace and under His divine guidance, we certainly shall win it.

When the British Empire, which stands for justice, for equal rights and righteous relations, has vindicated itself and its moral basis, then the world will behold a union of hearts which can only spring from equal rights and opportunities, and India's recognition as a partner in the joint family, will be the merited reward of her unflagging devotion and invaluable co-operation in the cause of the Empire in the hour of her need.

Your Excellency, Brother Princes, and Gentlemen, I heartily support the resolution to authorize and request Your Excellency to convey to His Majesty the King-Emperor an expression of India's dutiful and loyal response to his gracious message and an assurance of her determination to continue to do her duty to her utmost capacity in the great crisis through which the Empire is passing.

---

#### HIS HIGHNESS THE MAHARAJA OF BIKANER.

Your Excellency, it affords me the greatest pleasure to rise and support this resolution. The time is verily one for active deeds and not for mere words, and so I will try to be as brief as possible; and happily the loyalty of India needs no argument. Her achievements in the present War stand as witness. The services which India is proud to have rendered to the Empire in this most momentous and grimmest of struggles are the outcome of her unquestioned and wholehearted loyalty and devotion to the person and throne of His Imperial Majesty, our beloved King-Emperor, loyalty deeply instilled in the hearts of the Indians by our religion, traditional

characteristics and sentiment, dating to our ancient civilization thousands of years back, loyalty which has become the very essence of our life and soul, loyalty which has no price and is not for barter or for sale. The might of Great Britain and the unquestioned supremacy of the all-powerful Navy of our King-Emperor has kept the War away from our shores. The threat to India may consequently seem to some as a very distant one, but we have now to look ahead and to prepare ourselves in real earnest, not only to render the utmost possible assistance to the Empire, but also to defend, if need be, our very hearths and homes. Woe betide the country and the nation that is not capable of defending itself. The necessity of to-day is not an ordinary one, and it is essential that all our energy should be devoted to the one supreme question of the moment, before which all other questions, however vital, at once become, for the time being, of secondary importance. If every one will only try to realize what a successful invasion of India would mean in devastation of the country, chaos, rapine, anarchy, and the transportation and murder of even its civilian population, even its women and children, the horrors of which can only be realized by those who have witnessed the tragedy in Belgium and France, then there will be no fear of their failing to co-operate to their utmost with the British Government in preventing that danger from becoming a grim reality. And how much worse would such an invasion be by such an unscrupulous enemy as the Germans; who aim at world-domination and the subjection of all countries and nations; who regard sacred treaties as scraps of paper, and solemn promises as lightly to be violated to suit their convenience, excusing such outrage by advancing the plea that necessity knows no law. Are we not, therefore, justified in our confidence that the gracious and inspiring message from His Imperial Majesty, the earnest appeal from Your Excellency at the opening of this Conference, and the crisis with which we are face to face to-day, will evoke a hearty response throughout the length and breadth of India, and that the deliberations of this Conference will lead to redoubled efforts and yet further sacrifices on the part of the Princes



and people for India, not only for the good name and defence of our Motherland, but for the honour and glory of the Empire and for victory and the ultimate overthrow of Prussian tyranny and of Prussia, so that liberty and freedom may once again reign supreme !

As for myself personally and my State, I do not think it necessary at this stage to trouble Your Excellency with any details, but I would like to state only one or two important directions in which we have endeavoured loyally to serve our King-Emperor. My troops, nearly two and a half times their former sanctioned Field Service strength, have been continuously away on Active Service since 1914.

We have not only maintained them at full strength in the field, but kept a substantial standing reserve, and when a further reinforcement of men running into three figures was sent in March last, the deficiency was made good practically within a fortnight. Close on one thousand men have been enlisted in the Imperial Army from my State, almost wholly through the State War Board, since January 1st, this year, a record which, in spite of our comparatively limited number of fighting men, we hope to beat in the near future. In financial assistance too, our War expenditure and contributions have been, I hope, commensurate with our resources. My State headed the list in Rajputana in the War Loan subscriptions last year, whilst we secured the fifth place among all the States of India as regards Our-Day contributions. Subsequent to the exchange of telegrams between Your Excellency and the Prime Minister, I telegraphed some days ago to Your Excellency renewing the assurance, communicated at the outbreak of War, of our wholehearted and loyal support and once again placing my personal services and all my troops and resources of my State at the command of His Majesty the King-Emperor. We fully realize that the interests of the British Empire and of the States are so closely bound together that the States stand or fall with the British Empire, and, please God, they will stand. In short, we have always endeavoured to render the utmost service in our power to our King-Emperor, and, I can only say that the efforts of my people shall not be relaxed, but rather increased so far as is humanly

possible. Your Excellency, I feel confident that that will also be the attitude of all the Ruling Princes throughout India and that our constant care will be to prove ourselves worthy of our position as allies and friends.

HIS HIGHNESS THE MAHARAJA OF PATIALA.

Your Excellency, the day before yesterday we all listened with quickened pulses and with rapt attention to Your Excellency's address and the message of His Majesty the King-Emperor to the Princes and people of India. No one who had the honour of listening to the gracious message could help being struck with the tender solicitude which His Majesty expresses for all of us, and the kind appreciation of our services which every word of the message breathes is no small reward for whatever humble services we have been able to render to His Majesty and the Empire.

Our efforts have been spontaneous and born of our deeply-rooted sense of loyalty and duty. We have done nothing in a spirit of expectation of rewards. But the gracious way, so peculiarly his own, in which His Majesty has shown his appreciation, has not failed to touch our loyal hearts and will act as a vigorous incentive for us to re-double our efforts and to justify the expectations of His Majesty based on the noble traditions of India and her people. I consider it unnecessary to talk platitudes, but I shall say that whenever expression is given to the wholehearted devotion which the Indian Princes and the Indian people experience for the King-Emperor, that expression is not merely a formality, but the outcome of the most genuine feelings arising from the innermost recesses of loyal and devoted hearts. To be loyal, to be grateful, to venerate the King-Emperor, is a quality in the possession of which Indians are unsurpassed. I am sure I am voicing the opinion of the whole order of Indian Princes when I say that, as devoted allies of His Majesty and the sincere well-wishers and friends of the British Government, we are prepared to do our duty to our utmost capacity. The benefits which the British Raj has conferred on India are too well known and too clearly realized to need further emphasis from me on this occasion.

We have enjoyed undisturbed peace and prosperity, and now that these priceless boons are menaced by the Germans we should rise like one man to avert the menace and make it impossible for the enemy to venture to disturb the tranquillity of the country. I am sure that the Princes and people of India will most cheerfully give a hearty response to the stirring message of His Imperial Majesty and the appeal of Your Excellency, and with one heart do all that is humbly possible to help His Majesty and his brave allies to win a complete victory over the forces of darkness and aggressive militarism, a victory which will remain an important landmark in the history of nations.

I do not wish to say anything more. Words are too inadequate to express all that we feel. Let us like men prove our loyalty not by words but by deeds.

With these few words I beg to support the resolution.

The resolution was supported by various representatives of the people and carried unanimously.

The second resolution endorsing the recommendations submitted by Sub-Committees appointed to consider various questions with reference to India's share in the War was moved by H. H. the Maharaja of Kashmir and supported by Their Highnesses the Maharao of Cutch, the Maharaja of Alwar, the Maharaj Rana of Dholpur, and the Maharaja of Kapurthala. The speeches made on the occasion by these ruling Princes are given below :—

---

#### H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF KASHMIR.

Your Excellency, Your Highnesses, and Gentlemen, it gives me great pleasure to be called upon to move the following resolution :—

“That this Conference cordially endorses the recommendations submitted by the Sub-Committees and commands them to the early consideration of, and for adoption by, the Government of India and His Majesty's Government.”

There could be no situation more grave and hence no effort or sacrifice could be considered too great while compared with this

critical time. It is our *dharma* to protect our hearths and homes but it becomes still more sacred—*parama dharma*—to serve our King and Country. When the War broke out, I gave my humble, but solemn, word to do all that lay in my power; and it is a great satisfaction to me to say that I have been able to keep my word. I may be excused for mentioning that during the last three and a half years of the greatest struggle that the world has ever seen, my State stands second to none in the supply of man-power—the vital need of the day—both for the Indian Army and the State troops, and that the number of recruits supplied from my State exceeds ten per cent. of the male population of fighting age. Besides this the State has also been spending almost one-fourth of its whole revenue for military purposes.

Your Excellency, I have so far done my bit to the best of my power and ability, and allow me to further assure you that I and my people will flinch from no further sacrifice, however great, that we may be called upon to make, and, I hope, that my countrymen throughout India, from peasant to prince, will respond with equal enthusiasm as the occasion demands. India has already shown not only by words, but also by deeds her loyalty and devotion to His Majesty the King-Emperor. She has identified herself with the great cause of righteousness for which our King-Emperor and his allies are fighting, and I am sure that she will be further prepared to bear cheerfully any sacrifice to bring this War to a successful conclusion.

With these few words, I cordially move the resolution.

HIS HIGHNESS THE MAHARAO OF CUTCH.

Your Excellency, I have much pleasure in supporting the resolution which has just been proposed by His Highness the Maharaja of Kashmir.

The two reports submitted by the Sub-Committees reached me this morning, and after careful perusal of these two reports, I feel that I have no hesitation in saying that within the short time at the disposal of the sub-committee on resources they have placed before

us a well-considered and carefully planned scheme which covers much of the ground on which they had to deliberate.

The principal points dealt with in the recommendations of the Committee are the practice of economy by both Government and the people, relief of the congestion of traffic, development of food resources, cultivation of waste lands, the construction of rivercraft, etc., the control of prices to a limited extent, encouragement of local industry by all the reasonable means by Government and the formation of local and Provincial Committees to initiate, supervise, and control the effective carrying out of these proposals. These measures are so eminently practical and necessary at this juncture that they do not require any further words from me to commend them to this Conference. As has been so ably pointed out by so many eloquent speakers who preceded me, they are necessary, and what is required at this moment is that due attention should be paid to the maxim that deeds and not words will tell in this War. I would humbly beg that this maxim should not be lost sight of at this momentous crisis. Therefore, I would strongly urge that unnecessary destructive criticism should be avoided because it means disintegration and disunion and that we should show a united front and a genuine determination to work our hardest and do our duty in right earnest until our goal has been achieved. We are proud to know that we, the Princes and people of India, have acquitted ourselves in supporting our common cause in the past in a way that has won the approbation of our Sovereign, no less than that of his Government. It is incumbent upon us to outdo in every possible way our previous efforts to uphold the proud traditions of our Motherland. I would, therefore, urge in all humility, both my brother Princes and my fellow countrymen of British India, to give their unstinted support to these resolutions by personal exertions in the subsequent and successful carrying out of the measures recommended by this Conference.

HIS HIGHNESS THE MAHARAJA OF ALWAR.

On an occasion so solemn and unique in the destiny of the Empire as the present I rise to speak under a deep sense of

responsibility. We have eagerly responded to the trumpet call of the Empire at the present moment by assembling here, not because it is a privilege to assist in her hour of need the great country that has wished India well and has guided her destinies for 160 years. What is real friendship? What are the bonds of partnership? With the words of the gracious message of the Emperor of India ringing in our ears, with the Prime Minister's appeal fresh in our minds, is it likely, I ask, that the heart of India can lie dormant at this time? Is it possible to conceive that India is going to let this opportunity go by to prove, as she has proved in the past, that, according to her power and circumstances, she is true to herself and so is determined to be true to the Empire of which she forms an integral part?

It was truly put once by one of Your Excellency's predecessors when, talking to India, he said "You cannot do without us. We should be impotent without you." If this is so, and it is so, then let this sacred union be a consecration at the altar of divine love for the advance of both countries to the highest purpose of life. India is proud of her connection with the country whose love of justice and liberty is now being practically tested on the anvil of the battlefield and every blow is adding lustre and glory before the world, to the steel foundations on which her structure is built. With such a country our destinies are bound and with her we rise, with her we fall.

Our Motherland, like any other country in the world, has her domestic needs. She requires many adjustments of her present conditions. She aspires, and legitimately so, to strengthen, if possible, her position within the Empire so that she may no longer go forth before the world with bent head. India is now eager to raise her head on an equality with her sister dominions, but Your Excellency and your Government know her wants and you are aware of her urgent needs. If I like to think that, for the present, my country reposes these sacred charges in the trust of the British people, it is because we have a more urgent duty to fulfil. Trust

begets trust and we know that, if we can, with the mercy of Providence, succeed in doing what the occasion demands us to do, Old England, on whom we repose our confidence, will not be slow to respond to our needs. The responsibility at this moment is ours and when there is a silver lining to the clouds the responsibility will be hers. For the present India is enthusiastically bent on sharing the glories in the common cause of the Empire which is being fought out on the battlefield. In this vast gathering which readily assembled at Your Excellency's invitation I see no British India or Native States before me to-day. It is one India, a united India with a singleness of mind and purpose. Two busy days have been spent by the members of this Conference in devising the best means for the adoption of urgent measures to meet the situation arising out of the crisis through which the Empire is passing at the present time. There are certain remedies which I may mention, particularly such as the free granting of the King's Commissions to Indians, the raising of the pay of the Indian soldiers, the establishing of institutions in India as Military Training Colleges for its sons, which have to be dealt within the resolutions and which, if applied in a generous spirit of trust, are calculated to produce instant results in accelerating recruiting.

In cordially supporting the resolution which covers these and other points, I would join earnestly in commending it for the early consideration of, and adoption by, the Government of India and His Majesty's Government.

Before concluding I will say only a few more words. In this hall we hold the fair name and fame of India in our hands. Here we come to resolve to perform what we ought and hence we go to perform without fail what we resolve. Our countrymen have their eyes fixed on us. The people will ask, "what have you given" and "what have you asked for?" The answers can be summed up in one word, "trust." I may not be a British Indian, but I am an Indian, and as such I say that in this supreme hour of the need of the Empire, for the fair name of our mother country, this is the

opportunity to close our ranks and to prove to the world that we can respond to trust and confidence in a manner which can become the envy of others. Then when sunshine comes again and the clouds of war disappear we shall have reason to look back upon a past on which we can await the verdict of history with legitimate pride and confidence. In the dutiful message from the Throne we all combine in emphasizing once again the assurances of loyalty and attachment to the person of His Majesty and we send with it our prayers for victory.

---

HIS HIGHNESS THE MAHARAJ RANA OF DHOLPUR.

The report of the two Sub-Committees on Man-power and Resources have made it abundantly clear that India is capable of rendering even greater help to the Empire than she has had the privilege of doing so far. The Committees have pointed out the ways and means in their recommendations. As regards man-power, it is my firm belief that our joint efforts will very soon enable us to place at the disposal of His Majesty's Government all the man-power that India can raise. The more vivid realization of the crisis through which the Empire is passing will stir up India's manhood, and I trust that her sturdy gallant youths will flock in thousands to the standard of the Empire over which the sun never sets. With regard to resources, we are all aware that India possesses vast resources, many of which remain unexplored. This is India's opportunity and should not be lost. We must make up our minds that India shall produce more and allow no possible waste. We should resolve to practice strict economy, to encourage and stimulate agricultural industries, to give up the importation of luxuries, to lessen the strain on the railways and we shall be rendering valuable help to the cause of justice and righteousness and doing no more than our duty. Let everyone of us try to bring it home to as many people as we can influence that the supreme duty of every Indian in the present crisis is to try, in however humble a way, to do his little bit for the Empire. The consciousness of having done our duty will be an ample reward. With these few words I beg to support the resolution.



HIS HIGHNESS THE MAHARAJA OF KAPURTHALA.

Your Excellency, I beg cordially to support the resolution that has been moved by His Highness the Maharaja of Kashmir.

Man-power and the mobilization of our material resources are by common consent regarded as vital to the efficient and successful prosecution of the War.

India has, doubtless, ever since the fateful day when German callousness and arrogance plunged the unsuspecting world into the meshes of the most terrible War it has ever known, rallied to the British cause wholeheartedly and without reserve. Her people, both prince and peasant, have proved staunch and unflinching and have cheerfully responded to every call that has been made on their sense of patriotic duty. When the history of the past few years comes to be written, I anticipate with confidence that no inglorious page will be allotted to the part India has so far played in the great struggle.

But, alas! the end of the travails of mankind does not yet appear to be in sight. The doom of Prussian militarism has not so far been definitely sealed. On the contrary, gloating over the agonies of Russia and making full use of the opportunity her collapse offers, the legions of the Hun are making one last desperate attempt to break down the Allied resistance and to place themselves in a position to impose a peace that will lay the foundation of a bitterer and a more sanguinary clash of arms in the near future.

Your Excellency, it scarcely needs to be urged that to prevent such a catastrophe and to avert the possibility of another wanton interference with the clock of the world's progress, no sacrifice would be too great on the part of those who value the sanctity of their hearths and homes and the welfare of their country above every other conceivable consideration. To achieve this noble end an unstinted supply of man-power and a proper husbanding of other resources are undoubtedly a prime and urgent necessity. That this aspect of the situation is keenly realized by the Ruling Princes and the people of India is clear from the assurances of loyal and enthusiastic support Your Excellency has been receiving ever since the publication of the

stirring messages recently exchanged between yourself and the Prime Minister. Coming as I do from the Punjab, a province that can already boast of a brilliant record in its contribution in men and money, I may perhaps be pardoned for giving vent to a feeling of pride that it, including the States, has not lagged behind in affirming its determination to redouble its efforts to meet the grave emergency that has arisen. I may be allowed to say that my own Imperial Service Regiment of Infantry, which is already nearly double its peace strength, has been on active service in East Africa for over three years, taking its share in the overthrow of German colonial power in that country, and is now being refitted, and I have measures under consideration to increase its strength so that it may be of greater use and service to His Majesty's Government when it again proceeds to another theatre of War. I have not the least doubt that we, the Princes and people of this country, shall close our ranks in one supreme endeavour to combat effectually the forces of barbarism that menace our very existence and thereby render our response worthy of Your Excellency's trumpet-call and of the traditions of our Motherland.

After the adoption of the resolution, H. E. the Viceroy made the following announcements of offers of help from the Ruling Chiefs:—

“Ever since the Prime Minister's message came to me and I made my reply, the Ruling Princes have been rallying to the cause of the Empire. They have been sending offers of contributions and offers of men. I will only mention just a few of those which have come in and which have not already been published and which have been made by some of Their Highnesses who are present here to-day.

Rs.

His Highness the Gaekwar of Baroda ... 15 lakhs.

His Highness the Maharaja Scindia of 15 lakhs a year so  
Gwalior. long as the War  
continues.

His Highness the Maharaja of Kashmir ... 5 lakhs.

His Highness the Maharaja of Jaipur ... 5 lakhs,

|  |  |
|--|--|
|  | Rs.  |
| His Highness the Maharao of Cutch ...                | 1 lakh a year<br>for the period<br>of the War. |
| His Highness the Maharaja of Alwar ...               | 1 lakh.  |
| His Highness the Maharaja Jam Sahib<br>of Navanagar. | 3 lakhs a year<br>as long as the<br>War lasts. |

I have to thank Their Highnesses for having come here.

It has added lustre to the Conference. It has shown that we in India know of no real distinction between British India and the Native States when Imperial issues are at stake."

The Ruling Chiefs served on the various Sub-Committees and rendered valuable help.

No account of the proceedings of the War Conference can be complete without reference to the message of H. H. the Maharaja of Mysore offering to invest Rs. 30 lakhs in the War Loan and make a gift of Rs. 10 lakhs to be utilized in any manner H. E. the Viceroy thought fit. In consultation with H. E. the Commander-in-Chief, H. E. the Viceroy decided to spend the amount in the purchase of Ford Vans. An inscription in the vans indicated that they were the gifts of His Highness the Maharaja of Mysore.

---





H. E. H. THE NIZAM OF HYDRABAD.



## CHAPTER V.

### THE WAR SERVICES OF INDIAN STATES.

#### HYDERABAD.

THE assistance rendered by His Exalted Highness the Nizam's Government, in the prosecution of the War, is given below under the heads of Military, Financial, and Material :—

#### *Military.*

(a) The first Hyderabad Imperial Service Cavalry regiment was despatched to Egypt in 1914 and remained in Service in Egypt and Palestine throughout the War. The regiment was in action on several occasions and sustained a number of casualties. Special commendation was accorded to the regiment and to individual officers for their conduct in action.

(b) One hundred rough-riders and 2 officers were deputed to Muttra in 1915 to train horses for the Cavalry and were employed on this duty throughout the period of the War.

(c) In order to encourage recruiting within the Dominions, Assistant Recruiting Officers were appointed to work under the orders of the Divisional Recruiting Officer at Secunderabad. The salaries of these officers and their establishments, together with all expenditure in connection with recruiting, was borne by His Exalted Highness's Government. 5,000 men were recruited for the Indian Army within the Dominions up to June 1918. Owing to appointment of the Special establishment, the average number of recruits rose from 217 per month to 700.

(d) A number of European and Anglo-Indian Officers in Civil employ were allowed to join the Army. They had their lien on their

appointments, their service in the Army being counted for civil pension, and they received an allowance not exceeding half their pay in civil employ according to the circumstances of each case.

(e) Special concessions were also given in the matter of leave and pay to Government servants called up for general training in the Indian Defence Force.

(f) The 20th Deccan Horse, of which His Exalted Highness is an Honorary Colonel, were re-armed with new pattern swords at a cost of Rs. 10,000 before proceeding to the War. Chargers were also presented to the Officer Commanding and five other officers of the 20th Deccan Horse.

(g) 167 Mules, 150 cavalry horses, and 35 artillery horses belonging to His Exalted Highness's Army were sold to the Government of India to assist the work of mobilization and the State Army remained temporarily short of strength in consequence.

#### *Financial.*

The financial contributions to the prosecution of the War consist partly of subscriptions to the War loans and partly of free gifts.

(a) Subscriptions to the War Loans are as follows :—

|                                   | Rs.         |
|-----------------------------------|-------------|
| 4 % Loan of 1916-1917 ...         | 39,00,000   |
| 5 % Loan of 1929-1947 ...         | 75,00,000   |
| 5½ % War Bonds repayable 1921 ... | 50,00,000   |
| TOTAL ...                         | 1,64,00,000 |

(b) The free gifts amount to Rs. 1,93,19,600.

The major subscriptions are :—

|  |                     |
|--|---------------------|
| Towards the payment of the War charges<br>of the 20th Deccan Horse and the 1st<br>Hyderabad Imperial Service Cavalry | Rs.<br>1,53,00,000* |
| Prince of Wales's Relief Fund ...  | 1,00,000            |

---

\* This is exclusive of the pay of officers and men of the Imperial Service Cavalry.



|  | Rs.               |
|--|-------------------|
| Imperial Relief Fund of India ... ..   | 1,00,000          |
| To the Admiralty in aid of the Anti-Submarine Campaign ... ..  | 15,00,000         |
| "Our Day" collections to the "Red Cross" ... ..  | 1,00,000          |
| Special donation towards the prosecution of the War ... ..   | 15,00,000         |
| To Their Majesties for the relief of the sufferers from the War on the occasion of their Silver Wedding ... .. | 3,75,000          |
| Share of expenditure of Hospital Ship "Loyalty" maintained by the Princes of India ... ..                      | 2,00,000          |
|  | <hr/> 1,91,75,000 |
| Other subscriptions amount to ... ..   | 1,44,000          |
|  | <hr/>             |
| TOTAL ... ..   | 1,93,19,600       |

(c) His Exalted Highness's Government were further able to assist the financial situation in 1918 in British India by a loan of 50 lakhs in silver bullion, pending the arrival of the dollar silver ordered by the Government of India in the United States of America.

(d) In this connection, it may be mentioned that the Mint, Stamp Department have printed both the Madras War Fund Stamps and the Hyderabad Ladies' War Relief Association Stamps, and supplied them free of charge.

#### MATERIAL.

(a) The State Workshops were fully occupied from an early date on munitions work. The most important works being, construction of cordite boxes, shells, and transport carts. The total value of the work completed was Rs. 12,50,000 in round figures. This work was paid for by the Government of India, but, as far as possible, State aimed at charging only the cost price and making no profit.

(b) The supply of grass to the Remount Depot at Aurangabad In the year 1325 Fasli, all the expenses for cutting and carting grass for the Remount Depot were borne by His Exalted Highness's Government, amounting in all to Rs. 22,000. Four Rumnahs were made over, free of rent, to the Remount Department, involving a further loss of Rs. 22,000 per annum. Government bungalows were also placed at the disposal of the Remount Officers, for which no rent was charged.

Hyderabad in the Deccan is the premier Native State in India and has an area of 82,698 square miles with a population of nearly fifteen millions. The great State was carved out of the Moghul Empire during the days of its disruption, soon after the death of Aurangzeb, by one of his Viceroys, Asaf Jah. During the wars of the Carnatic, in which the English and French contended for getting a firm foothold in the country, the Nizam threw in his lot with the English and has stood faithfully by the British ever since. The crisis of the Indian Mutiny could not shake his allegiance and he earned by his firm attachment to the Government the distinction of "Our Faithful Ally." The signal services of the present ruler of Hyderabad in the recent war have earned for the Nizam the distinguished title of "His Exalted Highness," conferred by His Majesty the King-Emperor. His Exalted Highness Asaf Jah Muzaffar-ul-Mamalik Nizam-ul-Mulk Nizam-ud-Daula Nawab Mir Sir Osman Ali Khan Bahadur Fateh Jung, G.C.S.I., was born in 1886. His Exalted Highness carries on the administration with the help of a Council of Ministers presided over by Sir Ali Imam, K.C.S.I.

---

#### MYSORE.

Immediately on the outbreak of the War, His Highness the Maharaja placed his troops and the entire resources of the State at the disposal of the Imperial Government. His Highness also contributed a sum of Rs. 50 lakhs towards the cost of the Indian Expeditionary Force and the gift was acknowledged in the following terms by the then Viceroy, H. E. Lord Hardinge, at a meeting





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF MYSORE.

of the Imperial Legislative Council held on the 9th September 1914.

"Hon'ble Members would have seen the announcement in the Press, of the splendid offer of Rs. 50 lakhs as a contribution to the cost of the Expeditionary Force, made by His Highness the Maharaja of Mysore. I cannot sufficiently commend this striking and patriotic action on the part of His Highness, whose loyalty, generosity, and liberal views are so well known. The money so offered will be placed at the disposal of His Majesty's Government as an additional contribution, and has been ear-marked for meeting the cost of transport for taking our troops overseas. Any other similar offers that may be made will be treated in a 'like way.' The Marquis of Crew, the then Secretary of State, also made reference to it in one of his speeches before the House of Lords. Reference is made elsewhere to His Highness's support of the War Conference held at Delhi in April, 1918, for concerting measures to render more substantial help in the cause of the War. Though His Highness could not be present at the conference, he cordially telegraphed to the Viceroy, offering a gift of Rs. 10 lakhs towards the cause of the War, and also a sum of Rs. 30 lakhs for investment in the War Loan.

The Mysore Horse was mobilized for service in the War, in Egypt, so early as in September, 1914. It consisted of 29 officers, 444 non-commissioned officers and men, with 526 horses, 49 mules, and 132 followers. It was under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Sirdar Bahadur B. Chamaraj Urs, Major M. H. Henderson accompanying as Special Service Officer, and Colonel Desraj Urs, C.I.E., M.V.O., as the representative of the Durbar. Twenty-two drafts of reinforcements aggregating seven officers, 737 men of other ranks, and 70 followers were sent during the period of the War.

Six Troops of the Mysore Transport Corps, consisting of 12 officers, 321 men of other ranks, 49 followers, 210 carts, 2 ambulance waggons, 468 bullocks, 7 mules, and 35 ponies were also mobilized for service in transport at the theatres of War. Sixteen drafts of reinforcements consisting of five officers, 179 men of other ranks, and 70 followers were sent to the field later.

The Mysore troops received various commendations for distinguished service. The Mysore Imperial Service Troops had three engagements with the enemy in the Suez Canal Zone in November, 1915, and were also in action at the attack on Gaza in Palestine. Telegraphing to the Viceroy, the Commander-in-Chief in Egypt said that "the Imperial Service Troops from Mysore did excellent work both in the battle at Gaza and in the pursuit." Among the numerous distinctions received by members of the Mysore Army, for distinguished service in the field, the following may be mentioned:—

British rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, conferred on Colonel Desraj Urs, C.I.E., M.V.O., by His Majesty on the 11th August, 1917, and the Military Cross on Risaldar B. P. Krishne Urs, I.D.O.M.

Some of the members of the army were also the recipients of foreign decorations. Sirdar Bahadur Major B. Chamraj Urs got the White Eagle of Servia, fourth class; Jamadar B. P. Krishne Urs got the White Eagle of Servia, fifth class, and Major K. Kerserkar got the Cross of Kara George, Serbia, first class, with swords.

The two War Loans were a great success in the Mysore State. The amount invested in the first War Loan was Rs. 75,11,262, of which Rs. 19,88,590 was from the Civil and Military Station of Bangalore. The investments in the second War Loan amounted to Rs. 66,07,900, of which Rs. 19,76,400 was subscribed by the residents of the Civil and Military Station of Bangalore.

The supply of war material of various kinds was another important piece of activity on the part of the State. Among the articles supplied were 19,000 blankets of the value of Rs. 1,00,000, the number having been increased later; forest supplies of various kinds and some valuable materials for the manufacture of munitions.

The following is a comprehensive statement of the assistance rendered by the State in men, money, and material:—

#### I.—MILITARY.

1. Cavalry at front . . . One regiment consisting of 4 squadrons of Imperial Service Lancers in Force "E."

2. Transport ... Six troops of the Mysore Imperial Service Transport Corps consisting of 210 carts, 6 ambulance carts, 575 bullocks, 51 ponies, 8 mules with *personnel*.
3. Trained remounts ... (a) Twenty-one selected, trained remounts of the Mysore Horse were offered to the Hosur Remount Depôt at a concession price of Rs. 400 each in September, 1914.  
(b) Ten trained horses were also sold to the Madras War Fund in September, 1914.
4. Trained mules ... Sixty-four selected trained mules of the Imperial Service Lancers Depôt were sold to the British Government in 1916.
5. Training of Imperial Government remounts. Three hundred and five remounts belonging to the Imperial and Indian Governments were trained and returned from the Imperial Service Lancers' Depôt, Bangalore.
6. Ambulance .. (a) Six Ambulance carts with harness were supplied to East Africa.  
(b) Six Ambulance bamboo carts were specially constructed and supplied with ponies to the 26th K. G. O. Light Cavalry, Aden.  
(c) Five carts and ten mules were supplied to Hyderabad Lancers.
7. Recruits ... 1,883 enlisted in British Indian Regiments.  
1,127 enlisted in Mysore regiments in order to keep up the full strength in the field.

## II.—FINANCIAL.

|  | Rs.                | A.        | P.        |
|--|--------------------|-----------|-----------|
| Contributions by the State including Military charges, free gifts of money and help to Relief Funds. | 88,44,095          | 14        | 3         |
| Contributions by the people towards the same items of help.  | 2,11,599           | 9         | 8         |
| <b>TOTAL</b> ...   | <b>90,55,695</b>   | <b>7</b>  | <b>11</b> |
| Investments in War Loans by the State ...  | 65,08,400          | 0         | 0         |
| Investments in War Loans by the people ...   | 42,75,455          | 12        | 0         |
| <b>TOTAL</b> ...   | <b>1,07,83,855</b> | <b>12</b> | <b>0</b>  |

## III.—MATERIAL.

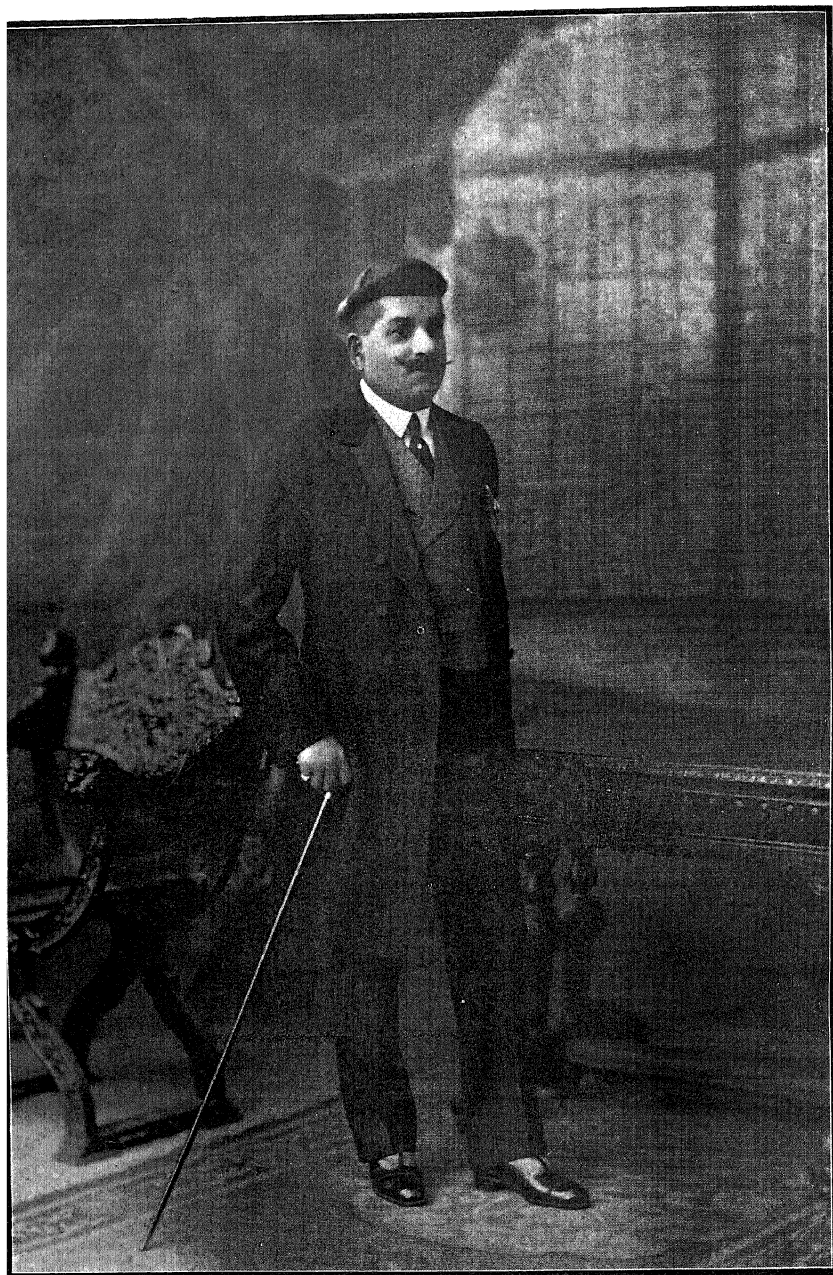
- 26,000 blankets supplied to order.
- 300 cubic feet of *houne* wood valued at Rs. 1-2-0 per cubic foot supplied free of charge.
- 15,000 cubic feet of rose wood supplied to order.
- 71 tons, 5 maunds, and 1 seer of Mahua flowers valued at Rs. 5,608.
- 90,000 *dindiga* pegs.
- 30,000 Teak metre-gauge sleepers for use in Mesopotamia.
- Control of tanning bark licences at a loss of Rs. 4,71,000 and supply of about 32,000 candies of bark to army contractors in Mysore and Madras.
- 15,000 tons of grass supplied to order.

(This statement, as well as much of the information on the War Services of the State is from the publication of the Mysore Government on *Mysore's Part in the War*.)

His Highness Maharaja Sir Krishna Wadiyar Bahadur, G.C.S.I., the present Ruler of Mysore, was born on the 4th June, 1884, and succeeded his father in 1895. His Highness was invested with full ruling powers by Lord Curzon in 1902. His Highness rules over a







H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF GAEKWAR BARODA.

State with an area of 29,444 square miles with a population of nearly six millions. With a progressive and enlightened administration and a succession of very able and distinguished Dewans, the State has made rapid strides of progress and is easily among the very best Native States in India. His Highness is ably helped in his efforts for the advancement of the State by his younger brother, Sir Kantirava Narasimharaja Wadiyar Bahadur, G.C.I.E., K.C.I.E., who takes keen interest in all matters affecting the welfare of the people.

---

#### BARODA.

On the outbreak of the Great War, His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar placed his troops and all the resources of his State at the disposal of the Government of India. His Excellency the Viceroy, while thanking His Highness for this patriotic offer, conveyed an assurance that should the cause of operations require the employment of the armed strength of India advantage would be taken of the said offer.

In pursuance of the above general offer the following contributions in men, money, and resources were made by the State from time to time:—

157 men from the State regular forces were allowed to join the British Army and the arrears of debt due by them to the State were wiped off by a special order. 200 Troopers and 6 officers were placed at the disposal of the British Government to train remounts at the Dépôt at Muttra. 1,417 Recruits (combatants and non-combatants) were supplied by the State. 4 European officers were granted special leave and pecuniary facilities to join the expeditionary force. The State Chief Medical Officer's services were lent to the Indian Medical Service and his pay was disbursed from the State Treasury in addition to the allowances given to him by the British Government. Another Medical Officer was given special leave to take up a temporary commission in the Indian Medical Service.

The Chief contributions in money were:—

|  | Ra.      |
|--|----------|
| A sum of five lakhs of rupees for the provision and equipment of aeroplanes. | 5,00,000 |

|  | Rs.                          |
|--|------------------------------|
| Another sum of rupees five lakhs towards the War gift fund.  | 5,00,000                     |
| A sum of 15 lakhs of rupees for the purchase of Ford Vans.   | 15,00,000                    |
| A monthly contribution of Rs. 12,000 from 1st January, 1916. | 5,16,000                     |
| Total contributions to the several War Relief Funds.         | 4,70,000<br>(approximately.) |

---

TOTAL ... 34,86,000

In addition to the above contributions, the State took War Loan Bonds by direct purchase and by conversion of the total value of Rs. 1,04,00,000 (one crore and four lakhs of rupees). The non-official subscriptions to the War Loan amounted to about 8 lakhs in addition.

As regards contribution in resources it may be mentioned that the Maharaja placed his fine palace in Bombay at the disposal of the Military authorities for use as an hospital for officers. He gave 154 horses valued at Rs. 56,000 for the British Cavalry, 157 horses were also given on payment. 13 tents valued at Rs. 9,000 approximately were given free for hospital use with the Expeditionary Force in France.

One steam-tug belonging to the State was placed at the disposal of the transport authorities during the War. 4 X Class Railway Engines, 35 open bogies, 4 brake-vans, 4 trollies, and 22 steel open 4-wheeled wagons from the narrow gauge lines of the State were made available on payment for use on Mesopotamian Railways.

Such is a brief record of the services of His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar to the cause of the Great War and they have elicited the warm appreciation of the Government of India.

Statement of contributions from the Baroda State towards the War.

#### (1) MEN.

(a) 157 men from the State Regular Forces were allowed to join

the British Army and Rs. 1,447 due by them to the State on account of loans advanced to them by the Podhi were written off.

(b) Three European Officers from the State Army were allowed to proceed to England on special leave to join the Expeditionary Force. A fourth Officer was also granted special leave to join the British Army at Muttra.

(c) The services of Dr. C. A. L. Mayer, M. D., (London), were placed at the disposal of the British Government and he was paid a salary of Rs. 1,200 per mensem from the Baroda Treasury, in addition to the salary drawn by him in British service.

(d) Dr. Y. V. Modak was granted special leave to take up a temporary commission in the Indian Medical Service.

(e) 200 Sowars and 6 Officers were deputed to Muttra to train remounts.

(f) The services of one State Officer were placed at the disposal of Government for appointment as I.A.R.O. for the Baroda State.

(g) Recruiting:

The number of subjects of the State who joined the British Indian Army up to the end of November, 1918, as combatants, non-combatants, skilled and unskilled labourers, was 1,417.      \*

## (II) MONEY GIFTS.

(i) *By His Highness the Maharaja Gekwar.*

|   | Rs.       |
|---|-----------|
| (a) For the provision and equipment of aeroplanes ...   | 5,00,000  |
| (b) For the War-Gift Fund ... ..  | 5,00,000  |
| (c) For the purchase of Ford Vans ... ..  | 15,00,000 |
| (d) Contribution of Rs. 12,000 a month from<br>January, 1916, to April, 1919, (it will<br>continue till the end of the War) ... | 4,80,000  |
| TOTAL ..  | 29,80,000 |

Rs.

(ii) *Contribution to Imperial Indian War Relief Fund.*

|       |                                      |        |          |
|-------|--------------------------------------|--------|----------|
| (a)   | By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar | ...    | 2,10,000 |
| (b)   | Other subscriptions                  | ... .. | 84,586   |
| TOTAL |                                      |        | 2,94,586 |

(iii) *Contribution to Prince of Wales's Fund.*

|  |                                      |     |        |
|--|--------------------------------------|-----|--------|
|  | By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar | ... | 30,000 |
|--|--------------------------------------|-----|--------|

(iv) *Red Cross Contributions.*

|       |   |        |        |
|-------|---|--------|--------|
| (a)   | By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar to |        |        |
|       | “Our-Day” Fund                          | ... .. | 35,000 |
|       | Red Cross Fund, Simla                   | ... .. | 5,000  |
| (b)   | Other subscriptions                     | ... .. | 27,464 |
| TOTAL |   |        | 67,464 |

|                                |     |           |
|--------------------------------|-----|-----------|
| Grand Total of all money gifts | ... | 32,74,050 |
|--------------------------------|-----|-----------|

Miscellaneous donations to several institutions and Relief Funds in Europe and India organized in connection with the War

... .. 75,937

NOTE.—The above figures do not include the sum of Rs. 8,454 spent in entertaining British Troops proceeding to the front *via* Baroda.

## (III) MATERIALS, ETC.

(i) *Free Gifts.*

(a) 154 horses from the State Cavalry valued at Rs. 55,786.

(b) 13 tents of the aggregate value of Rs. 8,722 from State Khangi Department for Hospital use with the Expeditionary Force in France.

(c) 12 sets of chessmen sent by His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar to Her Excellency Lady Willingdon.

(ii) *Loans.*

(a) The Jaya Mahal Palace in Bombay with bungalow attached lent as a hospital for Officers.

(b) One State steam tug, length 54 feet over all, lent for transport purposes.

(iii) *Supplied on payment.*

(a) 157 horses from the State Cavalry.

(b) Railway Stock :—

4 X Class engines.

35 open bogies.

4 trollies.

22 steel open 4-wheeled wagons.

(c) 3 Dumpey levels and 3 theodolites.

---

(IV) PURCHASES OF WAR LOAN BONDS.

(i) *By His Highness the Maharaja Gaekwar.*

|     |   |        | Rs.       |
|-----|---|--------|-----------|
| (a) | War Loan Bonds of 1917  | ... .. | 32,00,000 |
| (b) | War Loan Bonds of 1917 purchased by conversion of old G. P. Notes | .. ... | 38,00,000 |
| (c) | War Loan Bonds (1928) of the Second Indian War Loan               | ... .. | 30,00,000 |

(ii) *By Her Highness the Maharani Gaekwar.*

|   |     |          |
|---|-----|----------|
| War Loan Bonds of 1917 as a contribution to the Bombay Women's War Loan | ... | 2,00,000 |
|---|-----|----------|

(iii) *By Khan Sahib Framji Cowasji Contractor.*

|                               |        |          |
|-------------------------------|--------|----------|
| Baroda War Loan Bonds of 1917 | ... .. | 2,00,000 |
|-------------------------------|--------|----------|

---

|       |     |             |
|-------|-----|-------------|
| TOTAL | ... | 1,04,00,000 |
|-------|-----|-------------|

---

(iv) *Non-Official War Loan purchases.*

|                   |        |          |
|-------------------|--------|----------|
| By State subjects | ... .. | 8,24,180 |
|-------------------|--------|----------|

Baroda is one of the Major Native States in India, coming in order of precedence next only to Hyderabad and Mysore. Situated partly in Guzerat and partly in Kathiawar, Baroda has got a population of over four millions and an area of more than eight thousand square miles. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Farzand-i-Khas-i-Dowlat-i-Englishia Maharaj Sir Sayaji Rao Gaekwar, G. C. S. I. His Highness the present Gaekwar, who was adopted as heir of His Highness Kandeo Rao Gaekwar, assumed full powers as Ruler in 1881, and by his zeal and statesmanship, as exhibited in many a beneficent administrative reform all these years, has raised Baroda to a place among the leading Native States of to-day. The State has an annual revenue of more than two crores of rupees, and the Chief Administrative Officer of the State at present is the Dewan, Manubhai N. Mehta, Esq., M. A., LL. B., C. S. I.

---

#### JAMMU AND KASHMIR.

The following is a brief account of the valuable services rendered by the State of Jammu and Kashmir:—

Immediately on the outbreak of the European War in August, 1914, His Highness the Maharaja of Kashmir placed all the resources of his State at the disposal of the Government of India. This offer was accepted and the State sent on 27th September, 1914, the 2nd Kashmir Rifles to fight in East Africa. They were fully equipped and their full strength maintained by reinforcements for all the time they remained on Field Service. They returned in January, 1917, when the Durbar undertook to equip two battalions for service Overseas before the end of the year. A new Battalion of 2/2nd Kashmir Rifles was raised and despatched to Gilgit, to relieve the 1st Kashmir Infantry which was brought up to the revised field strength and a larger depôt having been formed, it was sent in December, 1917, to be mobilized and embarked for service in Egypt. These two battalions, 1,200 and 1,070 strong, respectively, took part in the final operations, which resulted in the utter defeat of the Turks in Palestine. They came back to the Headquarters in March, 1919.







H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF JAMMU AND KASHMIR.

Their strength was also maintained whilst on active service by reinforcements. Besides, in February, 1915, the Kashmir Imperial Service Lancers were sent off, one draft to fight in Egypt, and another in Mesopotamia, and remained there up to 1918. In addition to these troops No. 1 the Kashmir Mountain Battery (comprising 6 guns) was sent to East Africa, early in 1916, wherefrom it came back in the month of March, 1918, when in May again it was reformed and despatched to the N.-W. Frontier. It will be seen from the above that the State raised, equipped, and sent to the War an army comprising of all the three arms of service, cavalry, infantry, and artillery, a privilege unique to the State among the Indian States. But there is another feature quite peculiar and also quite onerous to this State, which should not be lost sight of. It has a long frontier bordering on foreign countries such as Tibet, China, Afghanistan, etc. In spite of their being affected by enemy intrigues, the State was able to maintain order on the frontier to the entire disappointment of enemy designs. The Kashmir armies acquitted themselves creditably and thus won a name for their gallant deeds. The services rendered by the Kashmir Armies in the War were duly appreciated by the Government. His Highness was consequently made a Lieutenant-General of the Indian Army, and the distinction of G. B. E. was conferred on him in 1918 by His Majesty the King-Emperor. His Highness was also awarded the degree of LL. D. by the learned Senate of the Punjab University in 1918. In the same year the personal distinction of 21 guns was conferred upon him.

During the recent Afghan disturbances the position on this frontier was equally if not more anxious, the evil designs of the enemy were frustrated and complete order maintained. Thus in addition to the Army sent overseas to take part in the Great War the State had to keep an army sufficient in strength to maintain peace and order on its long frontier. All the expenses connected with their troops sent both overseas and on the Frontier were borne by the State, and the Military expenditure incurred on troops sent overseas alone came up in round figures to Rs. 1,11,00,000.

His Highness subscribed liberally to the various War Funds and also invested large amounts in the two War Loans.

His Highness Lieutenant-General Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh, the present Ruler of the State, is the grandson of Maharaja Gulab Singh, and was born in 1850 A. D. During his childhood, he was the pet of his grandfather. He was educated in Sanskrit, and besides acquiring a general knowledge of law, science, and medicine he received a liberal education in English. After having completed his course of education he was given practical training in Revenue, Judicial, and Military Departments in all their details. Swimming, wrestling, and horsemanship were his chief recreation in his youth. Even now in his advanced age, he takes very keen interest in the game of cricket. Like his father and grandfather, His Highness is an orthodox Hindu and spends his mornings and evenings in religious devotions and prayers. He has scrupulous regard for the customs and traditions of his people and strictly observes the ceremonies enjoined by the Hindu religion and the traditions of his house. His Highness takes great interest in the education of Rajputs, as he recognizes that if the Rajputs are to play their part well and take their proper places in the history of the country, they must not neglect the advantages of education.

The insignia of the Order of G. C. S. I. was conferred upon the Maharaja in the year 1892 A. D., and subsequently in the year 1896 A. D. he was given the honorary rank of Major-General by the British Government. Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh sent his army to fight along with the British troops in the expeditions of the Black Mountain, the Tirah, and the Agror Valley. On each of these occasions the services rendered by the troops of His Highness the Maharaja were greatly appreciated. In the Tirah campaign, the Maharaja's battery gained a special name for its remarkable activity, vigilance, and valour. The Council which had carried on the administration from 1889 was abolished and the powers exercised by this body were transferred to His Highness the Maharaja Sahib Bahadur. His Highness was personally invested with the Order of Knight Grand





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF GWALIOR.

Commander of the Indian Empire, by His Imperial Majesty the King-Emperor at the investiture held in connection with the Coronation Durbar at Delhi in December, 1911.

The State Army consists of two Mountain Batteries, one Horse Artillery, and one Garrison Battery, one squadron of Kashmir Lancers, one troop Body Guard Cavalry, seven Regiments of Infantry and three Companies of Sappers and Miners. Out of this, the State maintained a force of 3,370 Imperial Service Troops which were raised to about 5,000, and this strength has since been kept up.

The total area of the State is 81,000 square miles with a population of about 30 lakhs and an average revenue of Rs. 1,48,00,000.

Lieutenant-General His Highness Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh Bahadur, G. C. I. E., G. B. E., LL.D., the present Ruler of Jammu and Kashmir States, is entitled to a salute of 21 guns.

---

#### GWALIOR.

Gwalior is one of the most important of the Native States. It was founded by Ranoji Scindia and has played a very important part in recent Indian History. The present ruler of the State is Major-General His Highness Maharaja Sir Madho Rao Alijah Bahadur Scindia, G.C.V.O., G.C.S.I., A.-D.-C., to the King and Honorary Colonel 1st (D. C. O.) Lancers. His Highness was born on the 20th October, 1876, and succeeded to the *gaddi* on June 21st, 1886. During the minority of His Highness, the administration was conducted by a Council of Regency and His Highness was invested with the full powers of a ruler in 1894. During these twenty-six years of administration, His Highness has acquired a high reputation as a ruler and has raised Gwalior to the position of one of the most advanced of the Indian States. His Highness holds the rank of Honorary Major-General in the British Army and has also received the distinction of LL.D. from Cambridge and of D. C. L. from Oxford. His Highness has also been the pro-Chancellor of the Benares Hindu University since its inception.

His Highness takes a very deep interest in the administration of his State, having a comprehensive grasp of the work done in each

department. He has inaugurated an Irrigation Department which has brought many thousands of acres of formerly barren land under cultivation. A Customs department was organized in 1902. The Public Works Department has been vastly improved since the present Chief's accession; the Victoria College and Memorial Hospital at Lashkar, the Madhava College and the Maharaja's Palace at Ujjain, the Gwalior Light Railway and the Ujjain Water Works are some of the principal achievements of that department under the Maharaja's direction.

The Maharaja has always shown a special interest in the spread of education among girls, as well as among boys. Besides the Arts Colleges at Lashkar and Ujjain, many special schools have been opened by His Highness. These include a school for training officials, a Sardar's school, a school for Sardars' daughters, a Military school and Engineering and other special schools. A Medical Department was inaugurated by the Maharaja's Darbar in 1887, and has since been much improved by the Chief in its organization. Hospitals and Dispensaries have been built all over the State. A Women's Ward has been established in connection with the Jayaji Hospital at Lashkar and a class for midwifery has been inaugurated there by His Highness. The Maharaja takes a deep interest in Military affairs and in 1900 served with the Expedition to China, where he became Orderly Officer to the General Officer Commanding the Expeditionary Force. For this expedition His Highness fitted out the hospital ship *Gwalior* at his own expense, and he had the satisfaction of seeing the vessel turn out of immense service to the troops during the campaign.

During the severe famine in 1899-1900, the worst experienced in Malwa, His Highness opened extensive Relief Works at a cost of over 38 lakhs; he also distributed some 14 lakhs in gratuitous relief.

The War Services of the State were of a particularly valuable character. Soon after the outbreak of the War, His Highness offered to place at the disposal of Government all the resources of the State and one of the earliest efforts of the State to help in the cause of the



war was the equipment of the hospital ship *Loyalty*, containing 300 beds, in association with the Nizam of Hyderabad, the Begum of Bhopal, the Maharajas of Jodhpūr, Rewah, and Datia, and the Rajas of Dhar, Sitamau, Jhabua, and Sailana. On the 13th August, 1914, His Highness was thanked by the Viceroy for this valuable offer. This was in addition to another hospital ship maintained by the State itself "The Gwalior."

The Imperial Service Troops of the State saw service in the various theatres of war and not only were all casualties renewed by fresh contingents but arrangements were made to increase their strength over the peace numbers of three Regiments of Imperial Service Cavalry, two battalions of Imperial Service Infantry and a Transport Corps. The State, besides, actively helped in the recruitment of sepoy to the Indian Army.

His Highness made liberal contributions in money and material for war purposes, mobilizing the entire industrial resources of his State for the latter purpose. One of the earliest contributions of His Highness for war purposes was a sum of seven thousand pounds sterling for the purchase of motor-cars for the war which was quickly followed by a further offer of fifteen thousand pounds for the purchase of motor transport and a contribution of five thousand pounds for Belgian sufferers. The State also subscribed liberally for the various War Funds and made heavy investments in the War Loan for which exact figures are unfortunately not available. At the War Conference held in April, 1918, His Highness made the magnificent offer of rupees three lakhs a year for the duration of the war.

---

•





H. H. THE NAWAB OF BANGALAPPALE.



## CHAPTER VI.

### MADRAS PRESIDENCY.

#### BANGANAPALLE.

THE present ruler of the Banganapalle State, Nawab Mir Ghulam Ali Khan Bahadur, son of the late Nawab Saiyid Fateh Ali Khan Bahadur, C.S.I., was educated at Banganapalle and Kurnool. He succeeded to the *guldî* of his ancestors and was installed formally by H. E. Sir Arthur Lawley, G.C.I.E., K.C.M.G., the then Governor of Madras, on the 19th December, 1908. He is 47 years of age. His father Saiyid Fateh Ali Khan Bahadur died on the 22nd April, 1905.

The present ruler was carefully trained in administrative work, by a European member of the Indian Civil Service, Mr. J. C. Molony, who took the keenest interest in the well-being of the State and its ruler. With regard to the attainments of the Nawab in statecraft, Mr. Molony, in his report for the year 1907-8, says: "Throughout this report will be found indications of the personal interest taken by the Nawab in the government of Banganapalle; commencing with the duties of a Sub-Magistrate he has gradually taken over the general superintendence of practically all executive and judicial work throughout the State."

Under this young and enlightened ruler the State has progressed to a considerable extent and many new reforms have been introduced. The finances of the State are in a most encouraging state and the balance is increasing year after year.

The Nawab was granted His Majesty's commission in the Indian land forces during the year 1918 and underwent military training in Madras for about two months from December, 1918. The

Nawab contributed towards the different War Funds Rs. 1,17,400 including the contribution of Rs. 350 per mensem to the hospital ship *Madrax* from the beginning of the War. Besides this, he purchased Rs. 10,000 worth of 5 per cent. War Loan Bonds and the State officials, ryots, and merchants invested Rs. 9,518 in the 5 per cent. War Bonds and Post Office Cash Certificates.

H. H. the Nawab Sahib has been granted a permanent salute of nine guns in the New Year's Honours List of 1921.

---

#### COCHIN.

The War services of the Cochin State may be briefly summarized as under :—

|  | Rs        |
|--|-----------|
| I.—Contribution to the various War Funds ...   | 3,06,150  |
| II.—Subscriptions to the War Loans to the<br>amount of ... ..  | 10,00,000 |
| III.—Supply of 581 combatants and 493 non-<br>combatants for the purposes of Military<br>recruitment in the British Army.  |           |
| IV.—The State also presented timber from its<br>magnificent forests for the purposes of<br>the war, to the value of ... .. | 76,000    |

His Highness Raja Sir Rama Varma, G.C.I.E., the present Ruler of the State, was born in 1858, and succeeded to the throne and was duly installed as Raja on the 21st January, 1915, on the abdication of his predecessor, H. H. Sir Rama Varma, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E. The Dewan of the State is Rao Bahadur T. Vijayaraghavacharya, M.A., whose services have been lent to the State by the British Government. The present Ruler has had the hereditary title of Maharaja conferred on him in the recent New Year's Honours List.

---

#### PUDUKOTTAH.

The day after England declared War with Germany, His Highness, who was then in London, placed his personal services and all that





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF PUDDAKOTTAI.



he possessed at the disposal of His Majesty the King-Emperor. After realising the Government's difficulty at that particular time in utilizing his personal services, owing to his unfortunate long illness and the several medical operations he had undergone, which had made him unfit for active service, His Highness took the earliest opportunity to return to the State, to see how he and his subjects could help the Government in that anxious time.

On November 23rd, 1914, His Highness addressed his subjects in a meeting, and explained to them the splendid work that England had done for India and exhorted all to help, each according to his means and limits. This met with a ready response. His Highness, adding example to precept, sanctioned as occasion arose, liberal contributions to the several War Funds and War Charities as detailed below :—

|  |     |     | Rs.      |
|--|-----|-----|----------|
| Madras War Fund  | ... | ... | 2,00,000 |
| Prince of Wales's Fund   | ... | ... | 15,000   |
| Imperial War Fund  | ... | ... | 15,000   |
| Imperial Relief Fund   | ... | ... | 10,000   |
| Y. M.'C. A. Emergency Fund, etc.                                   | ... | ... | 1,600    |
| Madras Hospital Ship (donation and monthly contributions included) | ... | ... | 1,21,500 |
| TOTAL  |     |     | 3,63,100 |

The State invested about 28·75 lakhs of rupees in the War Loan, 21·2 lakhs in the first War Loan, and 7·5 lakhs in the second War Loan.

His Highness proposed to raise a regiment in the State. His Excellency the Viceroy highly appreciated His Highness's desire but did not find it possible to consider the proposal then. It was only at a late stage of the War that the State was called upon to help in the matter of recruiting men for field service. With a view to stimulate men to enlist in the British Army the following instructions regarding the assignment of assessed wastelands were issued :—

- (1) Men who have enlisted whether before or after the outbreak

of the hostilities in the combatant ranks of the Indian Army will be given preference for purposes of *darkhasts* in their own villages or elsewhere.

- (2) Men newly recruited will be permitted to put in their *darkhasts* (applications) immediately on enlistment and the lands for which they apply, if available for assignment, will then be set aside and not assigned to any other applicant unless equity should require the land to be assigned to the latter.
- (3) When such a recruit has served for six months, his Commanding Officer will be asked whether his services have been satisfactory, and, if his report is favourable, the applicant's *darkhast* will then be granted.
- (4) Grants of land under these rules will be free of *kudiswamiyam* price and will be subject to the condition, which should be entered in the *patta*, that the land shall not be sold, mortgaged, or otherwise alienated within a period of ten years without the written permission of the Darbar. A breach of this condition will render the grant liable to cancellation.
- (5) An application from a soldier with less than six months' service at the date of application will be treated as in rules (2) and (3).
- (6) In the case of men who have already served for not less than six months in a combatant unit the *darkhast* (application) should be submitted through their Commanding Officer and, if it is forwarded with his support, the *darkhast* (application) will be accorded special preference as in rule (1).
- (7) Should a recruit or enlisted soldier be invalided from the Army permanently on account of disablement or sickness contracted during the war, his application, if supported by his Commanding Officer, will receive preference as in rule (1). The condition as to the rendering of at least six months' service need not be insisted on in such cases.
- (8) The concessions contemplated in these rules are confined to

*darkhasts* from recruits or soldiers themselves and do not extend to applications from their relatives or their wives; but in the case of a soldier dying on active service an application from his nearest male relative, if supported by the Commanding Officer of the deceased soldier's unit, will be treated as in rule (1).

- (9) Grants under these rules may be made under the orders of the Dewan Peshkar whose powers of grant to each applicant will be limited to five acres of wet land and ten acres of dry land as a maximum. The maximum area should, however, only be granted in special cases and for special reasons. Assignments proposed in excess of the maximum should be submitted for the sanction of the Darbar. The Dewan Peshkar is further authorized, in dealing with such cases, to waive the collection of the value of trees existing on the land up to a maximum value of Rs. 50.

The educational authorities in the State were instructed to afford facilities for the education of the children of Indian soldiers similar to those granted in British India.

A regulation, the Indian Soldiers' (Litigation) Regulation, was passed in order to provide for special protection in respect of the civil and revenue litigation of Indian soldiers serving under war conditions.

A few clerks who volunteered for field service were granted long leave and were permitted to retain a lien on their permanent posts.

A full-time Assistant Recruiting Officer was employed by the State for a time. But with all that the State was able to recruit only 33 combatants and 13 non-combatants.

The amount contributed by the public for War purposes was Rs. 93,343 as detailed below :—

|  |     |     | Rs.    |
|--|-----|-----|--------|
| Imperial War Fund                            | ... | ... | 65,188 |
| "Our-Day" collections                        | ... | ... | 16,137 |
| Subscriptions to the Madras Hospital Ship... |     |     | 12,018 |

---

TOTAL ... 93,343

Statistics for the amount invested by the public in the War Loan are not available; but it is understood that considerable sums have been invested by some subjects of the State prominent among whom are a few Nattukottai Chetties.

"The War Workers' League" was able to collect and send pickles, dried and salted chillies, mangoes, limes, sugar, pencils, and some other articles. The Ladies' Depôt prepared and supplied articles worth Rs. 1,728.

His Highness Raja Martanda Bhairava Todiman Bahadur, G.C.I.E., the present Ruler of Pudukottah, was born in 1875, and is entitled to a salute of eleven guns.

---

#### TRAVANCORE.

Immediately the War was declared, His Highness the Maharaja placed all the resources of his State for Imperial purposes. Those European Officers of the State who were willing to offer their services in connection with the War were permitted to do so, and they were granted concessions similar to those allowed to civil officers in British India. Of the four Assistant Engineers of the State who joined the Indian Army Reserve of Officers, *viz.*, Messrs. A. W. Thomas, J. H. Cameron, Alexander Slater, and C. N. Elliot, Mr. Thomas was killed in action and Mr. Cameron died of pneumonia while on service. Mr. Slater was relieved from war duty on the 20th September, 1919. Four other European Officers of the State (1) Mr. C. S. Gibson, Professor of Chemistry, (2) Mr. L. H. Jacob, Executive Engineer, (3) Mr. T. H. Cameron, District Superintendent of Police, and (4) Mr. H. S. Chatfield, Judge, High Court, were also allowed to take up war work on similar terms as the Assistant Engineers referred to above. Of these, Mr. Gibson resigned his appointment in the State and the others have rejoined their civil duties.

One Indian Officer, Mr. S. Christian, L. M., Assistant Surgeon in the State Medical Department, has been allowed to take a temporary commission in the Indian Medical Service on similar terms as the European Officers.





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF TRAVANCORE.

## MONEY CONTRIBUTIONS.

|    |                                     |     | Rs.      |
|----|-------------------------------------|-----|----------|
| 1. | <i>Madras War Fund—</i>             |     |          |
|    | By the Darbar                       | ... | 4,00,000 |
|    | By Darbar Officers, &c.             | ... | 50,168   |
| 2. | <i>Imperial Indian Relief Fund—</i> |     |          |
|    | By the Darbar                       | ... | 65,000   |
|    | By Darbar Officers, &c.             | ... | 49,783   |
| 3. | <i>Hospital Ship Madras—</i>        |     |          |
|    | By the Darbar                       | ... | 92,000   |
|    | By Darbar Officers, &c.             | ... | 39,218   |
| 4. | <i>Hospital Ship Loyalty—</i>       |     |          |
|    | By the Darbar                       | ... | 50,000   |

## WAR LOANS.

|    |  |     | Rs.       |
|----|--|-----|-----------|
| 1. | <i>First Indian War Loan—</i>                                    |     |           |
|    | By Darbar War Bonds 1920   | ... | 15,00,000 |
|    | By Darbar Officers and private individuals,<br>through the State | ... | 1,84,400  |
| 2. | <i>Second Indian War Loan—</i>                                   |     |           |
|    | By Darbar War Bonds 1925   | ... | 10,00,000 |
|    | By Darbar Officers and private individuals<br>through the State  | ... | 1,84,300  |

## MUNITION SUPPLIED.

|     |                                   |                           | Rs.   |
|-----|-----------------------------------|---------------------------|-------|
| I.— | Battened windows                  | 4' x 3' No. 100 at Rs. 20 | 2,000 |
|     | Battened windows                  | 3' x 2' No. 50 " " 14     | 700   |
|     | Glazed windows                    | 4' x 3' No. 100 " " 26    | 2,600 |
|     | Glazed windows                    | 3' x 2' No. 50 " " 17     | 850   |
|     | Packing and conveyance to station | ...                       | 120   |

TOTAL 6,270

|   | Rs.      |
|---|----------|
| II.—Baize topped office tables without drawers<br>6' x 4' x 2'-4". No. 24, black wood, at<br>Rs. 52-8 .. .. . | 1,260    |
| Baize topped office tables with drawers<br>5' x 3'-6". No. 50 at Rs. 36 .. .. .                               | 1,800    |
| Baize topped office tables with drawers<br>4' x 3' x 2'-6". No. 100 at Rs. 28-8-0 .. .. .                     | 2,850    |
| <hr/>   |          |
| TOTAL .. .. .   | 5,910    |
| III.—One million square feet of bamboo mats.  |          |
| IV.—Barrack room chairs. No. 1,000 at Rs. 5 .. .. .   | 5,000    |
| V.—Camp folding cots. No. 500.  |          |
| VI.—Fuse hole plugs. No. 250.   |          |
| VII.—Base plates for 13 pr. shell. No. 4,000.   |          |
| VIII.—Complete water carts. No. 20.   |          |
| IX.—Flag extending poles. No. 150, and Flag<br>distinguishing poles. No. 250.                                 |          |
| X.—Shells. No. 2967 .. .. .   | 9,627-12 |
| XI.—Cap or nose plugs. No. 687 .. .. .  | 343-8    |
| XII.—Bolts and nuts, No. 1947 .. .. .   | 414-8    |

#### TRANSPORT SUPPLIED.

A motor-boat belonging to the Darbar was handed over free of charge to the Military authorities for use on the Tigris.

#### RECRUITMENT.

The recruiting operations were started in Travancore in January, 1918, and continued till the end of November of that year. The number of recruits enlisted for the Indian Army during the eleven months from January to November, 1918, was 1,596 combatants and 1,422 non-combatants. Besides this, a party of 29 men from the Nayar Brigade joined the 73rd Infantry, Trichinopoly. These men acquitted themselves honourably and the Officer Commanding the



Regiment has written in very eulogistic terms about their capacity and knowledge of their duties.

---

#### LAND GRANTS.

Rules similar to those passed in British India have been issued by the Darbar in regard to the registry of Puduval lands in the names of the recruits and other soldiers of the Indian Army. Two hundred and twenty-five applications for the registry of lands from recruits have been received and they are being disposed of by the Division Officers concerned.

The present Ruler of the State, His Highness Maharaja Sir Rama Varma, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., was born in 1857, and ascended the *gaddi* in 1885. His Highness carries on the administration with a Dewan. There are also a Legislative Council and a Representative Assembly in the State.

---



## CHAPTER VII.

### BOMBAY PRESIDENCY.

#### CAMBAY.

FULL name and title of the Ruling Prince: His Highness Nazam-ud-daulah Mumtaz-ul-Mulk Mominkhan Bahadur Dilaverjang Nawab Husain Yavarkhan Bahadur (minor).

#### ASSISTANCE IN MEN.

I.—Number of recruits enlisted in 1917-1918 and prior to that

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| - - (a)- Through State Agency ... ..                  | 10  |
| (b) Through Recruiting parties of the Indian Army ... | 13  |
| for (1) State Imperial Service Troops ... ..          | ... |
| (2) Indian Army ... ..                                | 23  |

#### ASSISTANCE IN MONEY.

##### *State Expenditure.*

II.—State Contributions and donations for War Charities and War Relief objects, separately as far as possible, such as Imperial Relief Fund, etc.

|                                  | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|----------------------------------|--------|----|----|
| (a) Imperial War Relief Fund ... | 5,000  | 0  | 0  |
| (b) Other War Relief Funds ...   | 25,574 | 5  | 9  |
| TOTAL ....                       | 30,574 | 5  | 9  |

##### *Privy Purse Expenditure.*

|                                       | Rs.   | A. | P. |
|---------------------------------------|-------|----|----|
| III.—Privy Purse expenditure ... ..   | 6,000 | 0  | 0  |
| under Head II but not included there. |       |    |    |

*Miscellaneous*

## IV.—War Loan subscriptions per year from

(a) State:—

|   | <i>Year.</i> | <i>Amount.</i> |           |           |
|---|--------------|----------------|-----------|-----------|
|   |              | <i>Rs.</i>     | <i>A.</i> | <i>P.</i> |
|   | 1917         | ... 1,41,300   | 0         | 0         |
|   | 1918         | ... 1,50,000   | 0         | 0         |
| TOTAL   |              | ... 2,91,300   | 0         | 0         |
| (b) Privy purse of the Ruling Prince                        | .. 1917      | ... 3,000      | 0         | 0         |
| (c) Public subscriptions raised or contributed in the State | ... 1917     | ... 1,50,340   | 0         | 0         |
|   | 1918         | ... 2,31,415   | 0         | 0         |
| TOTAL   |              | ... 3,81,755   | 0         | 0         |

## V.—Other miscellaneous expenditure such as bonuses for recruits, etc., etc., (with details, but excluding liabilities for such items as pensions, etc.)

|       |   |        |       |       |     |
|-------|---|--------|-------|-------|-----|
| (a)   | Contributions by the State towards bonuses for recruits in the Government Recruiting depôt at Anand | ...    | 1,000 | 0     | 0   |
| (b)   | Contribution by a private gentleman of the State  | ...    | 1,000 | 0     | 0   |
| (c)   | Gift by the State of clothes to the above Depôt   | ... .. | 442   | 3     | 0   |
| (d)   | Special bonus to Cambay recruits and to recruiters enlisting them                                   | ...    | 325   | 0     | 0   |
|       |   |        | <hr/> |       |     |
| TOTAL |   |        | ...   | 2,765 | 3 0 |





THE RAO OF CUTCH.

## ASSISTANCE IN MATERIAL.

VI.—*Transport and other material supplied.*

The Steam Launch "Nawab," of the value of Rs. 30,274 (with a monthly cost of Rs. 110), was lent for war purposes from August, 1914, to December, 1915.

## VII.—Average Revenue of the State for the past four

|                 |     |    |     |              |
|-----------------|-----|----|-----|--------------|
| financial years | ... | .. | ... | Rs. 6,58,106 |
|-----------------|-----|----|-----|--------------|

Cambay at the head of the Gulf of Cambay has an area of 350 square miles and a population of 72,656. The present ruler was born on the 16th May, 1911, and is the son of His Highness Nawab Gaffar Ali Khan, who died on the 21st January, 1915. The Collector of Kaira in the Bombay Presidency is *ex-officio* Political Agent of the State for the British Government.

## CUTCH.

The Ruler of Cutch is Shri Mirza Raja Sawai Sir Khengarji Bahadur, G.C.S.I., and he rules over a territory of 7,616 square miles, containing 8 towns and 937 villages, with a population of about 5,00,000. The revenue of the State is about 20 lakhs a year.

The Maharao is the Chief of the Jarera Rajputs, who came from Sindh early in the fourth century. Their leader was the Jam Lakha Phulani, son of Jara, from whom the clan takes its name. Lakha completed the conquest of Cutch in 1320. His descendant, Khengar, was given the territory of Morvi, in the north of Kathiawar, with the title of Rao, by the King of Ahmedabad. Rao Khengar soon made himself master of all Cutch, and made Bhuj his capital, which still remains the Headquarters of the State. A descendant of Khengar set up an arsenal where cannons were cast and encouraged the art of working in metal. The Cutch metal workers are still renowned for their metal work.

In 1809, owing to internal discord, the Ruler of Cutch sought British intervention; this was declined but a treaty was entered into chiefly directed towards the suppression of piracy and the prevention of raids into Kathiawar. Subsequently, in 1816, and

1818 the British Government had to intervene and sent troops to quell disorders. On the latter occasion Rao Bharwal II was deposed and his son Rao Dasalji II succeeded him.

From its isolated position the special character of its people, their peculiar dialect, and their strong feeling of personal loyalty to their Chief, the Peninsula of Cutch has more of the elements of distinct nationality than any other part of India.

The Chief is entitled to a salute of 17 guns.

Soon after the outbreak of the war, His Highness offered to place the resources of his State at the disposal of the Government. Besides helping in recruiting for the Indian Army, the State also subscribed liberally to the various War Funds and also invested in the War Loans.

---

#### JATH.

The following details with regard to the contributions of the Ruling Chief of Jath, in the Bijapur Agency, H. H. Ramrao Amrit Rao, have been kindly supplied by the Collector of Bijapur :—

#### DURING 1914-15.

Rs. 2,000-0-0 paid by the Chief to alleviate the distress among destitute families of those engaged in the war.

Rs. 5,000-0-0 paid by the subjects to alleviate the distress among destitute families of those engaged in the war.

Rs. 300-0-0 paid by Srimati Saubhagyavati Rani Saheba for the Women's Branch of the Bombay Presidency War and Relief Fund.

Rs. 100-0-0 paid by Srimati Saubhagyavati Rani Saheba for the Bombay Presidency War and Relief Fund for children.

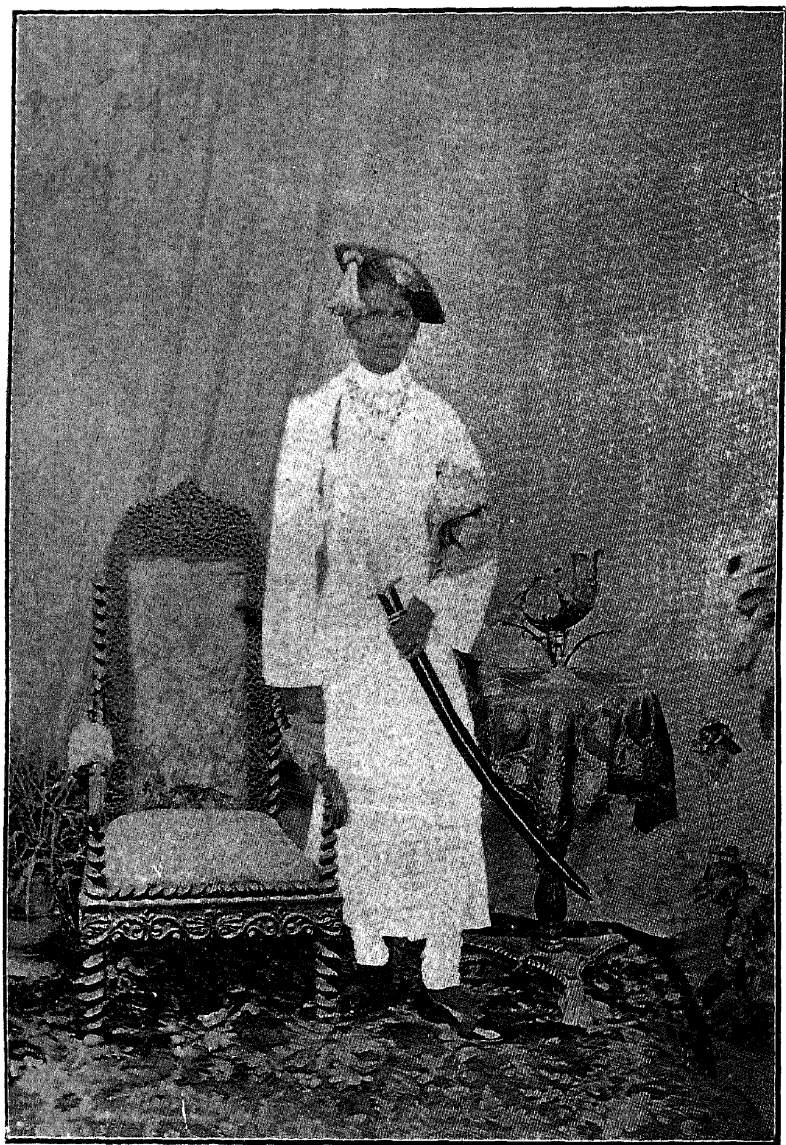
Rs. 1,110-12-0 paid by Srimati Saubhagyavati Rani Saheba by the women in the State.

#### DURING 1913-16.

Subscriptions (amount not known) for Belgium Relief Fund were collected and sent.







THE JAGIRDAR OF JATH.

- Rs. 1,000-0-0 paid by the Chief to Lady Hardinge Institute.  
 Rs. 300-0-0 paid by the Chief to Prince of Wales's National Relief Fund.  
 Rs. 200-0-0 paid by the Chief to Lord Mayor's Belgium Relief Fund.

## DURING 1916-17.

- Rs. 1,08,446-3-3 purchase of War Bonds and Cash Certificates by the subjects of the State.  
 Rs. 10,500-0-0 War Bonds purchased by the Chief.  
 Rs. 5,500-0-0 War Bonds purchased by the Chief.

The Chief paid the following donations :—

- Rs. 200-0-0 to Lord Kitchener's Memorial Fund.  
 Rs. 50-0-0 East Indies Station Naval Fund.  
 Rs. 200-0-0 to the Great War Sales in addition to several articles valued at Rs. 400.

## DURING 1917-18.

Paid by the Chief :—

- Rs. 50-0-0 Annual Grant to Shephard After Care Fund.  
 Rs. 150-0-0 Exhibition of foodstuffs held in Bombay.  
 Rs. 300-0-0 Queen Mary's Technical School for disabled Indian Soldiers.

A Krip motor was presented to the said Fund to enable the soldier-pupils to learn motor driving.

Subscriptions were also raised for the " Our-Day " Fund in the State and the amounts collected together with that paid by the Chief were remitted to the " Our-Day " Committee.

## DURING 1918-19.

Paid by the Chief :—

- Rs. 100-0-0 to the Indian Fund for Saint Dunstons in aid of British and Indian soldiers.  
 Rs. 100-0-0 to the Bombay War Museum.  
 Rs. 100-0-0 to the Poona Pageant and Fête.  
 Rs. 50-0-0 Annual subscription to the Shephard After Care Fund.



THE THAKUR SAHIB OF BHAVNAGAR.



THE MAHARANI OF BHAVNAGAR.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### KATHIAWAR AGENCY.

#### BHAVANAGAR.

IMMEDIATELY on the outbreak of the War in 1914, the Bhavanagar Durbar offered all their resources to Government. This offer subsequently developed into many forms of practical activity :

On the 6th October, 1914, the Government of India issued orders to affiliate the State Imperial Service Lancers to the Mysore Lancers proceeding Overseas. A detachment of 122 men all told was sent to Egypt. Two further contingents of 54 and 51 were sent to the Persian Gulf. The total number of men who saw active service is 202 men and 62 followers. Captain Zorawarsingh, who distinguished himself in the field, was awarded the Military Cross and was twice mentioned in despatches. He also showed conspicuous ability in the machine gun branch and topped the list of the successful candidates. Jamadar Keshal Singh and Risaldar (now Squadron Commander) Sardar Singh qualified themselves in the machine gun course. Risaldar Mohabat Singh and Squadron Commander Sardar Singh were twice mentioned in despatches and the former awarded the Distinguished Service Medal. Lance Daffadar Karan Singh was given the Serbian decoration of the Silver Star. Jamadar Umed Singh and Jamadar Ravubha were awarded the Indian Meritorious Service Medal. Risaldar Bapubhai, Daffadar Madar Singh, Lance Daffadar Narsi Singh, and Sowar Vaje Singh were all awarded the I. D. S. Medal. The Lancers took part in the attack on Aleppo. Rana Sri Krishnachandra Kalubha was on active service in France with the Kathiawar Motor Ambulance for a period of six months.

The Durbar co-operated with the Recruiting Department, but they had to maintain their troops at War strength and consequently almost all the recruits found in the State were employed by them. A

draft of 2 Officers and 50 men was kept in constant readiness for active service.

In December, 1915, the offer of the Bhavanagar Durbar to maintain a 50 beds hospital for invalids was accepted by the Government of India. Three Motor Ambulance Cars, which were specially prepared for them, were the gifts of His late Highness the Maharaja. Her late Highness the Maharani, and Her Highness the Maharani of Panna, who also gave 50 well-furnished beds. A Convalescent Home at a cost of Rs. 13,000 was built by Her late Highness Maharani Nandkunverba. A competent staff, which included a European nurse, was in charge of the hospital which treated 772 soldiers. The current expenditure on the up-keep of the hospital amounted to Rs. 81,184 up to March, 1919, when it was finally closed.

The Bhavanagar State Railway Workshop worked in co-operation with the R. M. Railway workshop at Ajmere in connection with the manufacture of munitions, such as parts of shells, *viz.*, grub screws, fuse-plugs, base plates, shell noses. It also supplied to Government permanent-way materials including rails, fish-plates, fish-bolts, and special sleepers for a 31½ miles' track. An engine and 20 waggons, as also 3 riding trollies and 12 material trollies together with spares and stores were supplied to Government.

The contributions made by the State to the various Relief Funds amounted to nearly a lakh of rupees.

The following were the subscriptions from Bhavanagar towards the War Loans :—

|                                    | <i>Durbar.</i> | <i>Subjects.</i> |
|------------------------------------|----------------|------------------|
|                                    | Rs.            | Rs.              |
| First War Loan ... ..              | 6,66,300       | 5,17,564         |
| And conversion of 3 per cent paper |                |                  |
| to the extent of ... ..            | 4,00,000       | ...              |
| Second War Loan ... ..             | 5,00,000       | 1,75,000         |
| British War Loan ... ..            | 2,10,000       | ...              |

Her late Highness Maharani Shri Nandkunverba, C.I.E., was well known for her enlightenment and interest in the advancement of







H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF DHAMGADHARA.

the State, made laudable efforts to give correct news regarding the war to the masses. These may be mentioned as under :—

1. Publication and free circulation of the pamphlet called *British and Hindi Vikram*. This was published weekly in Gujarati and circulated to about 200 libraries.

2. *Publication of War News Post Cards*.—Thousands of illustrated post cards were issued every week, giving a brief summary of the chief events of the previous week. These post cards were sold at ordinary rates.

3. *Harikathas*.—A special series of discourses on the Great War in the form of *Harikatha* performances was prepared and three of these which were recited brought a good amount as an offertory which was donated towards War Funds. Besides, three small volumes have been prepared dealing with the War History of Serbia, Belgium, and India. Her late Highness also published for private circulation a short life of the late Field-Marshal Earl Kitchener of Khartoum.

His Highness Maharaja Raol Shri Bhavsinghji, K.C.S.I., the present Ruler of the State, was born on the 26th April, 1875. Her Highness **Maharani Nandkunvarba**, C.I.E., who married His Highness in 1905, died in 1918, to the intense grief of all the subjects of the State.

#### — — — — — DHRANGADRA.

Immediately on receipt of the news of the outbreak of War between Great Britain and Germany in the first week of August, 1914, His Highness Maharaja Raj Saheb telegraphed to Government placing the whole resources of the State at the disposal of the Crown for the prosecution of the War. During the period of over four years that the War lasted, the total contributions from the State and the subjects to the various funds and War Loans connected with the War amounted to Rs. 19,18,000 and distributed as under :—

#### 1. TOWARDS THE 2ND WAR LOANS.

##### (1) *From the State*—

1st Indian War Loan of 1917

...

Rs.  
... 4,75,000

|   |       |     | Rs.       |
|---|-------|-----|-----------|
| 2nd Indian War Loan of 1918             | ...   | ... | 5,00,000  |
|   |       |     | <hr/>     |
|   | TOTAL | ... | 9,75,000  |
| (2) <i>From the subjects—</i>           |       |     |           |
| 1st Indian War Loan of 1917             | ...   | ... | 1,92,050  |
| 2nd Indian War Loan of 1918             | ...   | ... | 3,17,255  |
|   |       |     | <hr/>     |
|   | TOTAL | ... | 5,09,305  |
|   |       |     | <hr/>     |
| Grand total of Investments in War Loans | ...   |     | 14,84,305 |

## 2. TOWARDS THE VARIOUS WAR FUNDS.

### (i) *From the State—*

|  |       |     | Rs.      |
|--|-------|-----|----------|
| 1. Imperial War Expenses Fund through the Political Secretary, Bombay Government | ...   | ... | 2,00,000 |
| 2. Imperial War Relief Fund through Bombay Branch                                | ...   | ... | 43,000   |
| 3. Comforts for Wounded Soldiers through Women's Branches                        | ...   | ... | 10,000   |
| 4. Comforts for Wounded Soldiers   | ...   | ... | 3,000    |
| 5. Motor Ambulance Fleet   | ...   | ... | 16,000   |
| 6. Bombay War Sale   | ...   | ... | 22,200   |
| 7. Queen Mary's Technical Institute for the Blind, Bombay                        | ...   | ... | 10,000   |
| 8. H. R. H. Prince of Wales's Hospital at Staines                                | ...   | ... | 30,000   |
| 9. "Our-Day" Funds   | ...   | ... | 53,026   |
| 10. Royal Silver Wedding Fund  | ..    | ... | 5,000    |
| 11. Expenses in connection with recruiting                                       | ...   | ... | 26,307   |
| 12. St. John's Ambulance Association. Hindu Branch                               |       | ... | 1,000    |
| 13. Sundry Miscellaneous   | ...   | ..  | 5,162    |
|  |       |     | <hr/>    |
|  | TOTAL | ... | 4,24,695 |

| (ii) <i>From the subjects-</i>  | Rs.      |
|---|----------|
| 1. Contribution from Dhrangadra Bhayats to the Imperial War Relief Fund ... ..  | 3,000    |
| 2. Contribution from ladies of Dhrangadra towards the comforts of the Wounded Soldiers ..   | 2,000    |
| 3. Balance of the proceeds of the Dhrangadra "Our-Day" Lottery after distributing cash prizes of Rs. 10,000 to Prize-winners in 1917-18 | 24,000   |
| TOTAL ...   | 29,000   |
| Grand total of contributions to various War Funds, etc. ...   | 4,53,695 |

(Grand total of items (i) and (ii) above ... 19,18,000)

2. In response to an offer of the Black Water horses, used by the State troops, for service in the War, forty-one were selected by the Remount Department and utilized as British Cavalry remounts. In addition to this, five large tents of the total aggregate floor space of 3,436 sq. feet were given by the State for use as Field Hospitals. A big motor char-a-banc was given on loan for the use of the Wounded Soldiers' Club in Poona.

3. The period of the Great War is particularly memorable in the annual history of this State, as it witnessed the appreciation of the State's Administration by Government in more ways than one. On the 1st January, 1917, His Imperial Majesty the King-Emperor was graciously pleased to confer on His Highness the distinction of Knight Commander of the Most Exalted Order of the Star of India. In the beginning of the next year, *viz.*, 1918, in recognition of His Highness' services in connection with the War, His Imperial Majesty the King-Emperor was graciously pleased to confer on His Highness the Maharaja Raj Sahab, the permanent title of "MAHARAJA" and to increase his salute from 11 to 13 guns. The *Gazette of India* issued on 1st January, 1918, also announced that His Imperial Majesty the King-Emperor was graciously pleased to appoint Rana

Shri Mansinhji S. Jhala, Dewan Sahib of Dhrangadhra, as Companion of the Most Eminent Order of the Indian Empire. The public rejoicings that followed the bestowal of these high distinctions knew no bounds of enthusiasm and fervour. For several days there were various demonstrations to give expression to the joy and zest of the people and these culminated in the presentation of addresses by different bodies, which have been embodied in the Administration Reports of these years.

As a result of the recruiting efforts of this State, 128 combatant and 102 non-combatant recruits were enlisted from June, 1918, to October, 1918, and a sum of Rs. 24,310 was paid as bonus to the newly enlisted recruits over and above the continuance of the emoluments of the State servants who joined the Kathiawar Company.

The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Maharana Sri Ghyanshyam Singhji, who was born in 1891 and succeeded his father in 1911. His Highness was educated in England by private tutors under the guardianship of Sir Charles Ollivart.

---

#### DHROL.

The Ruling Chief is Thakur Sahab Harisinhji Jaisinhji of the State.

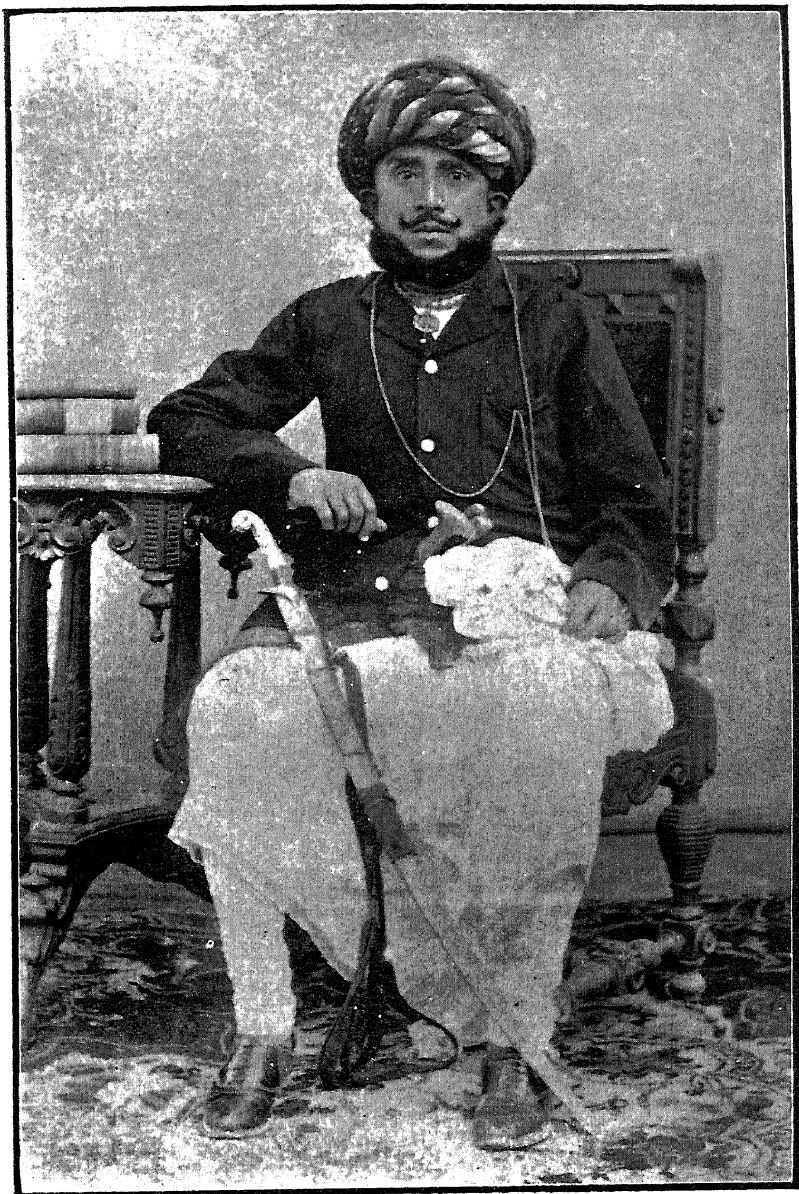
The Thakur is a Jadeja Rajput, descended from Hardoji, brother of Jam Rawal, the first Jam of Navanagar, who founded Dhrol State in 1522; the family is the same as that of His Highness the Maharao Raj of Cutch.

The area of Dhrol State is 283 square miles, with a population of about 22,000, mostly Hindus. The gross revenue is about 1½ lakhs.

The Chief is entitled to a salute of 9 guns.

The State offered its resources to Government on the outbreak of the War. The State granted liberal concessions to intending recruits.

The contributions to the various War Funds amounted to about Rs. 10,000. War Bonds and Cash Certificates were purchased of the face value of Rs. 26,040.



THE THAKUR SAHIB OF DUROL.



THE THAKUR SAHIB OF GONDAL.





THE THAKURAIN SAHIBA OF GONDAL.



## GONDAL.

His Highness Thakur Sahab Sir Bhagavat Singhji, G.C.I.E., K.C.I.E., the present enlightened Ruler of Gondal was born in 1865 and married Her Highness Nandkunvarba, C.I.E., daughter of H. H. the Maharana of Dharampore, in 1881. Educated at the Rajkumar College, Rajkot, and at the Edinburgh University, His Highness enjoys the rare distinction of holding numerous academic titles and degrees, the following among them : Hon. LL.D. (Edin.), 1887; M.B. & C.M. (Edin.), 1892; M.R.C.P. (Edin.), 1892; D.C.L. (Oxon.), 1892; M.D. (Edin.), 1895; F.R.C.P. (Edin.), 1895; F.C.P. and S.B. 1913; Fellow of the University of Bombay, 1885; F.R.S.E., 1909; M.R.A.S., M.R.I. (Great Britain and Ireland). His Highness is the author of *Journal of a Visit to England and a Short History of Ayur Medical Science*.

The Chiet of Gondal belongs to a Jerara Rajput family tracing its origin to Krishna. The founder of the State was Kumbhoji I, who received Ardoi and other villages in the 17th century from his father, Meramanji, and added to his possessions by his military prowess. Kumbhoji II, the fourth of the line, raised the State to its present position by acquiring the rich parganas of Dhrolji and Upleta, as well as Sarsai, etc. The present Ruler is 12th in descent from the founder of the State.

The area of the Gondal State is 1,024 square miles, with a population of about 1,70,000 and a nominal revenue of one lakh.

His Highness, as is well known, has done much to benefit the people of his State. He has inaugurated extensive irrigation and water-works schemes and railways and expends a very great proportion of the State revenue in education.

Immediately on the outbreak of War, His Highness Thakur Sahab Sir Bhagavat Singhji informed Government that any service Gondal can render was at their disposal.

In order to encourage and popularize recruiting very liberal concessions were granted to recruits and their family members.

The contribution to the various War Funds amounted to about

a lakh of rupees and the following are the figures of subscriptions towards War Loans :—

1. Rs. 5,00,000 Indian War Loan taken up by the State.
2. „ 6,00,000 Victory Loan (England) by the State.
3. „ 50,000 Indian War Loan by the people.

The Gondal-Porbandar Railway run by this State gave facilities and concessions in the matter of transport of “Red Cross” and “Our-Day” gifts and to Boy Scouts and Girl Guides.

---

#### JUNAGADH.

---

The State of Junagadh is now under British Administration and the minor Chief, owing to his tender years, was unable to offer his personal services. The whole resources of the State were, however, placed at the disposal of the British Government.

The Durbar established a Recruiting Dépôt at Junagadh and gave facilities to recruiting parties from outside. In order to encourage and popularize recruiting, very liberal concessions were granted to recruits and their family members. The total number of recruits obtained in this State was 120, of which 80 were collected by State Agency and 40 by Indian Army recruiting parties. The cost incurred in connection with those concessions was about Rs. 10,000.

The Darbar's offer to train British Cavalry horses was accepted by the British Government from 1915 to 1917. Indian and British Cavalry remounts, 74 in all, were trained for the British military authorities by the Imperial Service Lancers of this State. All charges of maintenance, etc., of the horses during the period of their training in this State were borne by the Darbar, and have amounted to about Rs. 10,000.

Eighteen trained Imperial Service Lancers' horses, valued at Rs. 10,800, and 18 transport and mounted infantry ponies and horses from the State paddock and State areas, valued at Rs. 5,345, were also presented to the British Government free of charge.

*Contributions by the Darbar to the war.*

|  | Rs.      |
|--|----------|
| 1. Contribution to the Fund for the Motor Ambulance Fleet as a gift from the Kathiawar States to His Majesty the King-Emperor ... ..                             | 27,000   |
| 2. Three aeroplanes presented to the British Government ... ..   | 1,01,250 |
| 3. Contribution for the construction of new barracks for Kathiawar Regiment at Rajkot ... ..   | 1,00,000 |
| 4. An annual contribution of five lakhs of rupees for war purposes during continuance of war was undertaken in 1918 and has been completely paid for 1918 ... .. | 5,00,000 |

Contributions by the Darbar to the various Relief Funds amounted to nearly two lakhs of rupees, while the subjects of the State also contributed more than a lakh of rupees.

Four large tents valued at about Rs. 10,000 were presented for hospital purposes free of charge, and ten field glasses and telescopes were given on loan.

The Darbar and its subjects have purchased War Bonds of the value of Rs. 10,00,000 and Rs. 3,39,621, respectively.

The new State residence at Rajkot, fully furnished and equipped, was handed over to the Military Authorities as a British Officers' mess and residence and was in occupation up to 1st August, 1919.

The Durbar offered to equip and maintain hospital quarters for wounded Indian soldiers and to provide accommodation and entertainment for convalescent British Officers; but these offers could not be accepted owing to unsuitability of climate.

|   | Rs.      |
|---|----------|
| Contributions by Mangrol under Junagadh ... | 23,126   |
| First War Loan ... ..                       | 1,51,900 |
| Second War Loan ... ..                      | 2,94,230 |

Rs.

|   |        |
|---|--------|
| Five per cent. Income-Tax free New War Loan |        |
| by the Taluka ... ..                        | 50,000 |

The present Nawab, His Highness Valy' Ahad Mahabat Khanji Rassulkhanji was born in 1900 and succeeded in 1911. His Highness has been accorded a salute of 15 guns as a personal distinction for War Services.

---

#### LAKHTAR.

On the outbreak of the War, Lakhtar placed all its resources at the disposal of the Government. Liberal concessions were given to intending recruits and the Taluka was able to furnish 9 recruits to the Kathiawar Recruiting Depôt. The financial contributions made by the State included Rs. 1,000 to the Indian Relief Fund and smaller subscriptions to other funds, details with regard to the share borne in the Kathiawar Motor Ambulance Fleet are not available. The investments in the War Loan, by the Darbar and the people amounted to Rs. 50,000. The present Chief of Lakhtar is Thakur Karan Singh Vajiraji, C.S.I., born in 1846.

---

#### SATLA.

Liberal concessions were granted to recruits.

The financial contributions amounted to more than Rs. 5,000.

---

#### CHUDA.

On the outbreak of the War, the Thakur offered all the resources of his State to the British Government. Liberal concessions were granted to encourage recruiting, as a result of which the State was able to supply seven recruits to the Kathiawar Special Company. The contributions in money amounted to about Rs. 5,000, while a sum of one lakh of rupees was invested in the two War Loans by the Darbar and the people.

---

#### VALA.

The State supplied 17 combatant and 6 non-combatant recruits





THAKUR SAHEB OF LIMBODI.



to the Kathiawar Company. The cash contributions amounted to about Rs. 10,000, while the investments in the War Loan amounted to Rs. 15,000.

---

#### LIMBDI.

Thakur Saheb Daulatsinhji Jasvatsinhji, K.C.I.E., Limbdi, was born in 1868.

The Limbdi House originated with Harpal Deo, who was also the ancestor of the Dhrangadra House. Harpal Deo was a Jhala Rajput who came from the north in very early times and established himself in Kathiawar.

The present Chief was the first of the Kathiawar Chiefs to make education entirely free in his State. He has also been instrumental in restoring the large trade in cotton for which Limbdi was formerly noted, but which had fallen into decay. He has also inaugurated a number of industrial concerns.

The area of the State is 244 square miles, its population is about 32,000 and its annual revenue 2 lakhs.

The Chief is entitled to a salute of 9 guns.

On the outbreak of the war with Germany, the Thakur Saheb placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of Government. He also offered his personal services. Very liberal concessions were offered by the State to intending recruits, as a result of which 35 recruits were enlisted in the Kathiawar Company at a total cost of Rs. 3,437 to the State. The following is the list of contributions towards the War :—

|    |                          |     | Rs.   |
|----|--------------------------|-----|-------|
| 1. | Gift of an ambulance car | ... | 7,500 |
| 2. | Gift of two machine guns | ... | 5,000 |

The State contributed more than Rs. 50,000 towards the War and Relief Funds, while the investments in the War Loan by the State and its subjects amounted to more than four lakhs of rupees.

The title of K. C. I. E. was conferred on the Thakur Saheb on the 1st January, 1921.

## MORVI.

His Highness Thakur Sahab Sir Waghji Ravaji, G.C.I.E., the present Ruler of the State, was born on the 7th April, 1858, and succeeded in 1870. Educated at the Rajkumar College.

His Highness is an enlightened and progressive Ruler.

In the recent war the resources of the State were placed at the disposal of His Majesty's Government for such use as might be necessary.

The following gifts were made in connection with the War :—

1. Two Motor Ambulance Cars, one 23 seated and other 5 seated, of the value of Rs. 25,000.

2. Two Motor Ambulance Cars presented to His Majesty the King-Emperor in England for the use of the Indian Expeditionary force in France.

3. An offer of 4 tents for a Field Hospital in France.

4. A metre-gauge engine worth Rs. 43,000 to the Government of India for use in the war.

5. The State workshops were placed at the disposal of Government. They manufactured base plates, etc., for shells, in combination with the R. M. Railway Workshops, Ajmer.

6. Two cavalry horses each worth Rs. 1,000.

7. Rs. 1,000 to the Recruiting Fund of the Kathiawar Company under formation.

8. Offer of 4 tents for the use of the above-mentioned Company.

9. At the request of the Agent to the Governor and the Commanding Officer, 125th Napier Rifles, the State bungalow and out houses at Rajkot were placed at the disposal of the Military Authorities.

The contributions to various War Funds amounted to more than Rs. 75,000, while the War Loans were subscribed to as under :—

1. Rs. 2,10,000, i. e., £14,000 to the English War Loan.

2. Rs. 21,32,000 to the Indian War Loan.

3. Rs. 27,00,000 to the Second Indian War Loan.

---

Total ... Rs. 50,32,000



THE THAKUR SAHIB OF MORVI



THE JAM OF NAWANAGAR.

## NAVANAGAR.

His Highness Jam Sahab Shri Sir Ranjit Singhji Vibhaji, K.C.S.I., born in 1872, succeeded in 1907. Served personally at the western front for over a year and was mentioned in despatches for services performed, first on the staff of General Cookson, Commanding the 9th Cavalry Division of the Indian Expeditionary Force A, and afterwards as A.-D.-C. to the Commander-in-Chief, Field-Marshal Lord French. It is hardly necessary to mention that His Highness is a famous cricketer and has brought great distinction to India.

The Jam Sahab is a Jadeja Rajput and belongs to the same family as the Rao of Cutch. The Jadejas entered Kathiawar from Cutch and dispossessed the ancient family of Jathwas, then established at Ghumli. Subsequently, about 1535-37, Jam Raval invaded Sorath and conquered the Jodiya, Amnan, and Kambharliya Parganās, and in 1540 founded the town of Navanagar. He attained his success with the assistance of his brothers Hardolji, Rasoji, and Modji. In 1788 the Port of Navanagar was constructed under the orders of one of Jam Raval's descendants, Jam Jasaji.

Lieutenant Kumar Savaisinhji, His Highness's nephew, served in the African campaign for a couple of years and was once wounded in action. Lieutenant Dajiraj, His Highness's nephew, served in France for a year and a half and was killed in action in September, 1917. Lieutenant Kumar Himatsinhji, His Highness's nephew, is serving in Mesopotamia. His Highness the Jam Sahab has received the hereditary title of Maharaja, a hereditary and permanent rise in status, in the number of guns in his salute, and also the distinction of G. B. E. and the Honorary rank of Lieutenant-Colonel for his War Services.

The Navanagar Imperial Service Lancers performed garrison duty in Karachi and Jacobabad until June, 1919, when they were sent to the Afghan front with the Alwar Lancers. The signalling party of the Imperial Service Lancers saw active service with Expeditionary Force E. Both these units were especially mentioned for their services in the field recently.

Extra expenses incurred during the War for the maintenance of the Imperial Service Lancers came to Rs. 11,000 annually.

Fourteen motor cars, fully equipped, with a European and 8 Indian chauffeurs, were given in the beginning of the War. The Indian chauffeurs returned from France after serving there for about two years.

(a) One ambulance car with chauffeur was given for use in Bombay.

(b) Six double poled tents were given in 1915.

(c) Forty-eight horses were given in 1914.

Cash contributions made by the State towards various funds amounted to more than five lakhs of rupees.

His Highness converted his house in Staines into a Hospital for wounded officers and shared a considerable portion of the expenditure on its maintenance and equipment. The amount came to Rs. 4,90,000.

The following are the figures of the contributions to the War Loans by the State and its subjects :—

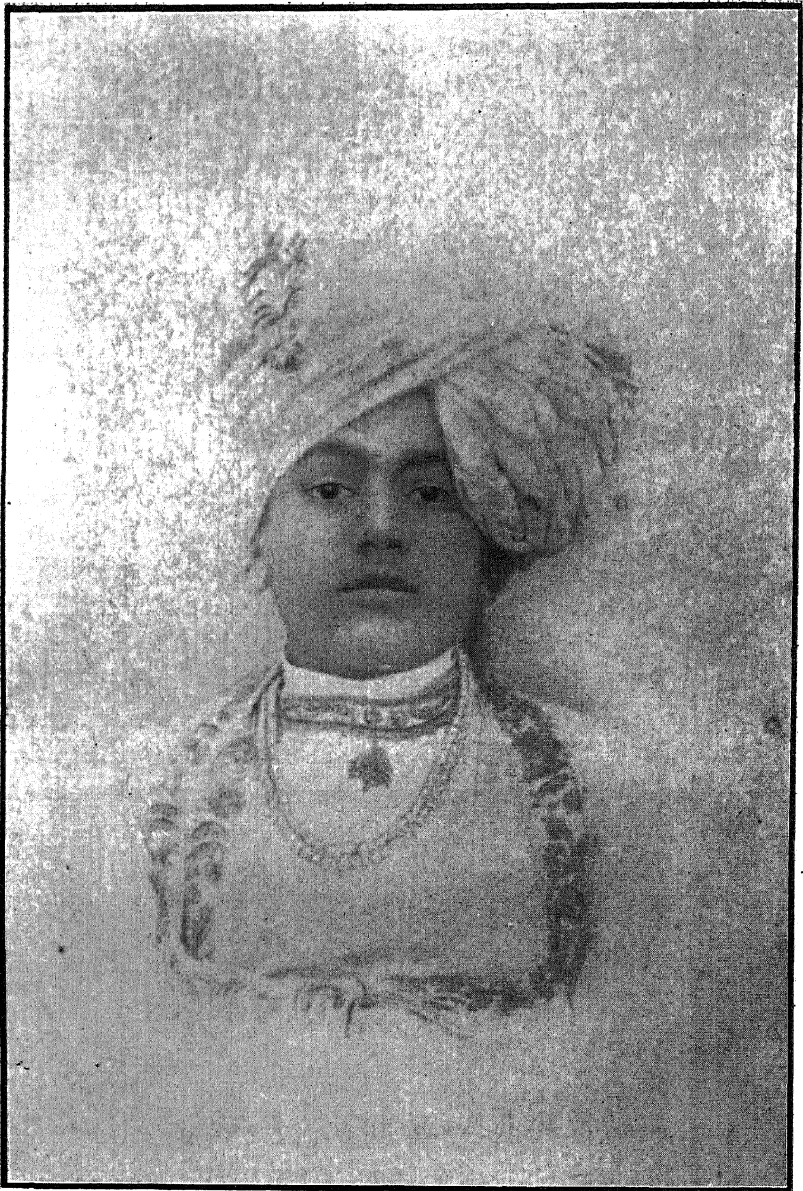
|   | 1st Indian<br>War Loan. | New War<br>Loan. |
|---|-------------------------|------------------|
|   | Rs.                     | Rs.              |
| (a) The State ... ..                                    | 10,00,000               | 5,00,000         |
| (b) The subjects of Navanagar<br>living in Bombay . . . | 7,59,500                | 8,03,500         |
| (c) The local subjects . . .                            | 7,44,339                | ...              |

The State took a very prominent part in recruiting and the personal interest taken by His Highness the Maharaja the Jani Sahab secured about 100 recruits for the Kathiawar Company. The State gave many liberal concessions to recruits and their families.

The following are other free gifts made to Government for war purposes :—

|   | Rs.    |
|---|--------|
| Navanagar share in the Ambulance Fleet<br>presented by Kathiawar ... .. | 28,000 |





THE THAKUR SAHIB OF PALITANA.



|  | Rs.          |
|--|--------------|
| Contributions for Aeroplanes ..  | ... 1,00,000 |
| Contributions towards war expenses (promised<br>at Delhi War Conference, 1918) ... | ... 3,00,000 |

#### PALITANA.

The Chief of Palitana belongs to the family of Gohel Rajputs, who claim descent from the celebrated Pandars of the Lunar or Chandrabansi race, while Colonel Tod and others assert that the Gohels belong to the Surajbansi or Solar race descended from ancestors who were driven out of Marwar, in Rajputana, by the Rathors in the twelfth century. The State is famous for its breed of fine Kathi horses, and also for a large number of magnificent Jain temples in the Satumjaya Hills, overhanging the town, the resort of 5,000 Bania pilgrims every year from all parts of India.

The area of the State is 300 square miles and its population is about 60,000. The annual revenue is Rs. 70,000.

The Thakur Saheb is entitled to a salute of nine guns.

The Chief being a minor, the State is under British Administration. Two cousins of the minor Chief went to the front with Honorary Commissions.

Very liberal concessions were granted to encourage recruiting; and the number of men recruited from the State was 20.

The contributions to the War amounted to Rs. 33,317-3; the State has purchased War Loan Bonds of the face value of Rs. 1,59,200. The subscriptions to the various Relief Funds by the Darbar and the subjects amounted to Rs. 40,823-7-2.

#### PORBANDAR.

The Rana of Porbandar belongs to the Jethwa Rajput (Hindu) clan, claiming descent from Hanuman, and possessing authentic records of their history for the last 380 years in Kathiawar. The clan held Barda and occupied much of the adjacent coast region of Halar. After the capture and sack of Ghumli the Jeths retired to

Rampur, where they remained for many years, but were finally driven to Chhaya. While there they acquired Porbandar and Navi from the Moghal Government, and re-conquered much of their adjacent possessions from the Jadajas.

Porbandar State has an area of 636 square miles and a population of about 80,000. The Rana's revenue is about Rs. 9,75,000 yearly.

The Chief is entitled to a salute of eleven guns.

The State of Porbandar being under British Administration and the Chief being a minor, he could not offer his personal services. The whole resources of the State were placed at the disposal of the British Government. Special leaflets explaining the real cause of the War were issued and the State Educational Officer toured in the villages with the object of spreading wholesome literature in this connection.

Special inducements were offered to the recruits. The efforts in this direction were partially successful.

The contributions made by the State to the various funds amounted to more than Rs. 80,000.

Vigilant measures for protection of coastal traffic were adopted. The S.S. "Kabul" belonging to the Admiralty dragged her anchors and was away towards Porbandar and was a total wreck. The State defrayed the whole cost of its salvage, which amounted to Rs. 26,925.

The following are the figures of subscription towards War Loans:—

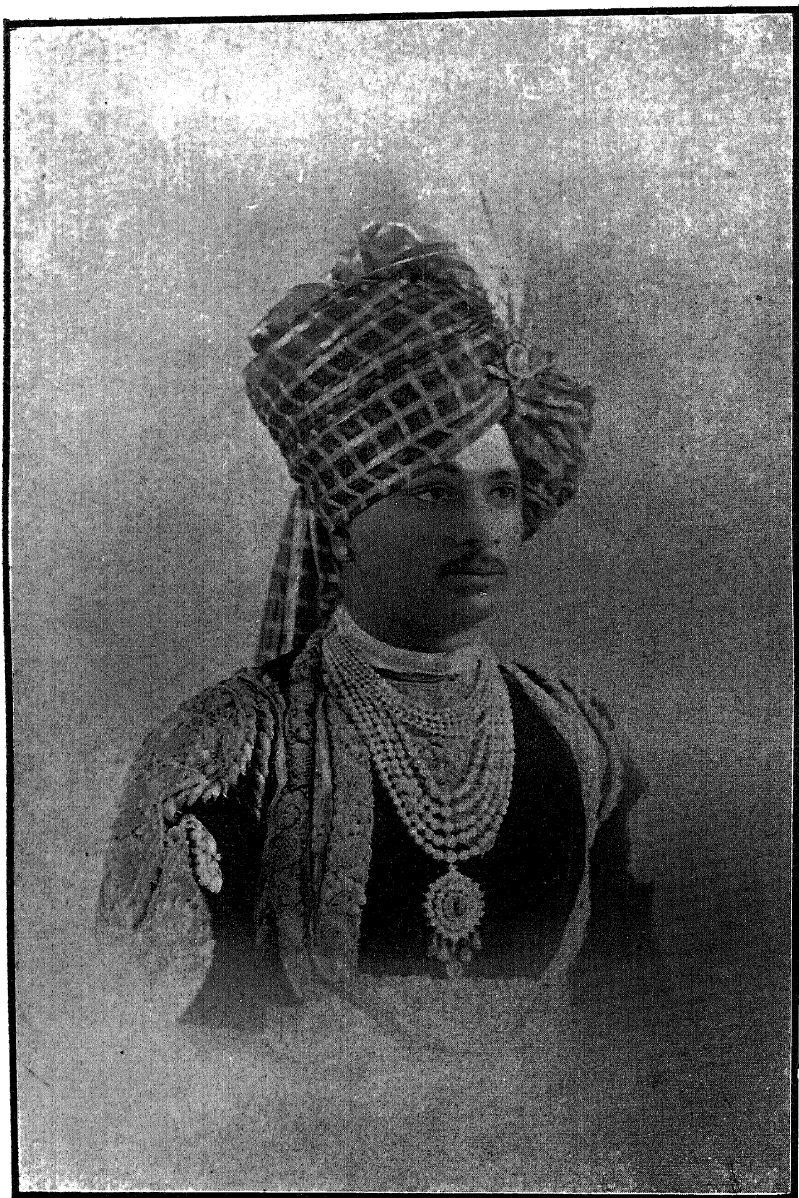
|          |     | <i>First Indian War Loan.</i> |     |  | <i>New War Loan.</i> |
|----------|-----|-------------------------------|-----|--|----------------------|
|          |     | Rs.                           |     |  | Rs.                  |
| State    | ... | 2,00,000                      | ... |  | 5,00,000             |
| Officers | ... | 32,400                        | ... |  | 31,600               |
| Subjects | ... | 14,700                        | ... |  | 46,843               |

---

#### RAJKOT.

Immediately on the outbreak of war the Thakur Sahab placed all the resources of his State at the disposal of Government and had also offered his personal services. As a result of very liberal concessions offered by the State to the intending recruits and of handsome rewards to the Recruiting Officers, a very great impetus was





THE THAKUR SAHIB OF RAJKOT.

given to this important branch: and the results achieved were splendid, inasmuch as the State headed the list of all Kathiawar States by providing 241 recruits to the Kathiawar Company at a cost of Rs. 29,922.

The following is the list of the direct contributions made by the State towards the prosecution of the war:—

1. A motor worth Rs. 16,000 for war work.
2. A tent for hospital purposes.
3. Gift of 12 horses for remount purposes.

More than a lakh of rupees were subscribed by the State towards the Relief Funds and the War Loans were subscribed to as under:—

|             |     |     |     | Rs.      |
|-------------|-----|-----|-----|----------|
| State       | ... | ... | ... | 1,50,000 |
| Public      | ..  | ... | ... | 1,81,850 |
| Cultivators | ... | ... | ... | 22,000   |

H. H. Thakur Saheb Lakhaji Bawaji, the present Ruler of the State, was born on the 17th December, 1885, and was educated at the Rajkumar College, Rajkot.

#### WADHWAN.

In ancient times Wadhwan appears to have been held by Valas, Vaghelas, Solankis, and Mahomedans, who were dispossessed by the Jhalas, the present ruling family. The Jhalas are descended from Prathirajji, eldest son of Raj Chandra Sinhji of Dhrangadra (1584—1628) who came to Wadhwan and endeavoured to obtain the assistance of the Thanadar against his father. A younger brother of Prathirajji succeeded to the throne of Dhrangadra and his second son established himself at Wadhwan about 1630.

The area of Wadhwan State is 236 square miles; its population is about 40,000, mostly Hindus.

The Chief is entitled to a salute of 9 guns.

The State was for the greater part of the war under British Administration. The resources of the State were placed at the disposal of Government when the war broke out. Liberal concessions

were granted by the State, as a result of which the State was able to furnish 14 recruits to the Kathiawar Recruiting Depôt.

The contributions made to the various Funds amounted to nearly Rs. 50,000, while the investments in the War Loan by the State and its subjects reached the figure of Rs. 4,58,990.

#### WANKANER.

On the outbreak of war with Germany in 1914 His Highness the Raj Saheb placed the resources of his State at the disposal of Government and also offered his personal services. These were accepted by Government in 1915 and, with the temporary rank of Captain, His Highness the Raj Saheb was sent to France, where he saw service with the Kathiawar Motor Ambulance Fleet.

A Committee was appointed to encourage recruiting and liberal concessions were promised by the State to intending recruits.

The following amounts were invested in:—

|                         | <i>First Indian War Loan.</i> |        | <i>Second War Loan.</i> |        |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------|--------|-------------------------|--------|
|                         | Rs.                           |        | Rs.                     |        |
| By the State            | ...                           | 50,000 | ...                     | 55,000 |
| By the Subjects         | ..                            | 76,000 | ...                     | ...    |
| By the <i>Rajkutumb</i> | ...                           | ...    | ...                     | 50,000 |

The following were the direct contributions of the State towards the War:—

1. Gift of 3 Cavalry horses to Government.
2. Gift of 2 Mounted Infantry ponies to Government.
3. Free gift of Rs. 20,000 to the Government of India towards the general expenses of the war.
4. Interest of Rs. 25,000 to the Bombay Government for such use in connection with the war as His Excellency Lord Willingdon deemed proper.
5. Gift of Rs. 3,000 to His Imperial Majesty for such use in connection with the war as His Majesty thought fit.

The contributions towards various War and Relief Funds amounted to nearly Rs. 40,000,

Captain Maharana Sri Sir Amarsinghji, K.C.I.E., Raja Saheb of Wankaner, was born on the 4th January, 1879, and was educated at the Rajkumar College, Rajkot.

---

#### JASDAN.

The Taluka placed all its resources at the disposal of Government when war broke out in August, 1914. Liberal concessions were granted by the Taluka to the intending recruits and the Taluka was able to furnish 14 recruits to the Kathiawar Recruiting Depot at Rajkot. The contributions in money amounted to more than Rs. 30,000, while the State and the people invested Rs. 76,666 in the two War Loans.

---

#### MANAWADAR.

On the outbreak of war the Chief offered the resources of his State to the British Government. Liberal concessions were offered to recruits and their families; and through the personal exertions of the late Khan Saheb Fatehdinkhanji, the Taluka was able to send 60 combatant and 3 non-combatant recruits. The expenditure on this account comes to Rs. 15,000. The cash contributions of the State amounted to about Rs. 35,000, the chief item being a sum of Rs. 28,500 paid to the War Relief and Presidency Women's Branch Fund. The Darbar and the people invested Rs. 2,34,000 in the two War Loans.

---

#### THANA-DEVI.

At the outbreak of hostilities the Chief offered all the resources of his Taluka to Government. The Taluka offered very liberal concessions to combatant recruits. One of these was that in case of death the family of the deceased recruit would be given 50 bighas of land in addition to the pension, etc., payable by Government. Ten recruits were enlisted. The Taluka also placed its commodious Utara in Rajkot at the disposal of the Recruiting Department and it was used as the Kathiawar Recruiting Depot.

The Taluka paid its quota towards the Kathiawar Motor Ambulance Fleet and the Kathiawar Recruiting Fund. Financial

contributions for war purposes amounted to nearly Rs. 25,000 and War Loan Bonds of the total value of Rs. 20,000 were also placed at the disposal of Government for purposes of charity.

---

#### LATHI.

The financial contributions of the State for war purposes amounted to about Rs. 8,000, while investments in the War Loan reached to Rs. 15,000.

---

#### MULI.

The State and the people invested Rs. 56,095 in the two War Loans and the financial contributions to the various War Funds amounted to Rs. 4,000. The State also furnished sixteen recruits to the Kathiawar Corps.

---

#### BAJANA.

The financial contributions of the State for war purposes amounted to Rs. 32,730-8-0, while the Darbar and the people invested Rs. 75,000 in the two War Loans.

---

#### VIRPUR.

The Darbar contributed Rs. 2,943-12-0 towards the various funds connected with the war.

---

#### MALIA.

The Taluka granted liberal concessions to the intending recruits and incurred an expenditure of Rs. 838-11-0 on recruiting. The Darbar contributed Rs. 3,028-12-0 to various funds connected with the war and invested Rs. 20,000 in the two War Loans.

---

#### KOTDA-SANGANL.

The Thakore placed all the resources of his Taluka at the disposal of Government on the outbreak of war. The Darbar contributed Rs. 5,203-4-0 to the various War Funds and invested Rs. 4,200 in the War Loan.



# CHAPTER IX.

## THE PALANPUR AGENCY.\*

### PALANPUR AND RADHANPUR.

1914-15.

As in other parts of the country, the outbreak of war evoked among all classes of the people of this Agency feelings of deep and staunch loyalty to the British Throne. Actuated by the words: "It is not possible for all of us to serve the Empire in the fighting line but we can all do our share by helping in this work of mercy," of His Excellency the Governor, in his appeal, dated the 14th August, 1914, Chiefs, Talukdars, men and women of different races and religions, of different creeds and communities came forward according to their means to contribute their quota towards the Imperial Indian Relief Fund. Khan Saheb Master, District Deputy Assistant Political Agent, who specially toured throughout the whole Agency to explain to the people and Talukdars the circumstances in which the British Government was at war with Germany, met with a ready response by the way of promises to contribute to the Imperial Relief Fund.

The following amounts were contributed:—

|  | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|--|--------|----|----|
| Political Agent and the Agency Staff ...                               | 1,181  | 8  | 0  |
| Agency Police ... ..   | 393    | 13 | 10 |
| Palanpur State ... ..  | 13,071 | 0  | 0  |
| Radhanpur State ... ..   | 19,900 | 0  | 0  |
| Tharad, Wao and Petty States and people of the<br>Thana Circles ... .. | 18,139 | 9  | 3  |
| Contributions to the Lady Willingdon Fund ...                          | 2,751  | 14 | 1  |

---

\* This account of the War-Services of the States of Palanpur and Radhanpur, comprised in the Palanpur Agency, is from the Administration Reports of the Agent, extracts, from which were kindly supplied by him for the purposes of this book.

Besides this, various articles such as spices, bidis, *kurtas*, *dhotis*, books, pamphlets, etc., were sent to the Women's Branch of the Fund. Thanks for this satisfactory result are specially due to Khan Saheb Master, who collected the subscriptions, and to Mr. Manshankar, Treasury Officer, who worked as Honorary Secretary to the Fund.

Never have the Chiefs and Talukdars of this Agency exhibited more fervently their unswerving loyalty and devotion to the British Raj than on the occasion of this great crisis at the time when war was declared with Turkey. His Highness the Nawab of Palanpur himself being advanced in years, offered the services of his two sons and placed the resources of his State at His Majesty's disposal. The heir-apparent, Lientenant Nawabzada Taley Mahommad Khan, whose services were accepted by Government, was to his great regret prevented from going to the front on account of ill-health. His Highness the Nawab of Radhanpur offered his personal services in the field, coupled with an offer of 20 body-guard Sowars and about 70 infantry. The offer was conveyed to the Government of India who thanked him and stated that should the need arise advantage would be taken of his patriotic offer. The Tharad and Wao States also placed their resources at the disposal of Government, when the rupture between Great Britain and Turkey was notified. Their Highnesses the Nawabs of Palanpur and Radhanpur, both being Mahomedans, publicly expressed their strong disapproval of Turkey's action in siding with Great Britain's enemy, the former by issuing a manifesto, the latter by holding mass meetings explaining the causes which led to the war with Turkey, which was not a religious one.

---

#### 1915-16.

The keen interest of the States, Talukas and people in the Great Continental War did not abate in spite of the unfavourable season. The following amounts were contributed during the year:—

|   |     | Rs. | A. | P. |
|---|-----|-----|----|----|
| Towards the Imperial Indian Relief Fund | ... | 200 | 0  | 0  |
| Towards the Lady Willingdon's Fund      | ... | 105 | 11 | 3  |

|                                       | Rs. | A. | P. |
|---------------------------------------|-----|----|----|
| Young Men's Christian Association ... | 528 | 0  | 0  |

Besides this, various articles, such as spices, *bidis*, *kurtas*, *dhotis*, books, pamphlets, and woollen garments, etc., were sent to the Women's Branch of the Fund. Mrs. Coghill opened a branch for making clothes, dusters, head-nets, etc., of the raw material which was sent from Bombay from the Bombay Office. Their work has been appreciated by the Honorary Secretary of the Women's Branch of the Relief Fund. The Palanpur State's offer of 9 tents for hospital use with the Expeditionary Force in France was gladly accepted by the Government of India.

---

1916-17.

The keen interest of the State Talukas and people in the Great Continental War continued unabated and the following amounts were contributed during the year:—

|   | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|---|--------|----|----|
| Towards the Freeman Thomas War Hospital,  | 10,000 | 0  | 0  |
| Towards the Women's Branch War and Relief<br>Fund ... ..  | 2,580  | 0  | 0  |
| Purse presented to Her Excellency Lady<br>Willingdon in person at Palanpur<br>Station ... ..                      | 2,901  | 0  | 0  |
| Contribution towards the Palanpur Branch<br>of the Women's War Fund ...   | 4,333  | 15 | 0  |
| Contribution towards the Great War Fête<br>and the Lucky Bag, in cash and<br>the sale proceeds of the tickets ... | 368    | 0  | 0  |
| Sale proceeds of War Seal Stamps, etc. ...  | 918    | 0  | 0  |

Besides cash, some 28 articles of value were sent for inclusion in the Lucky Bag.

The local Branch of the Women's War Fund which continued to work under Mrs. Coghill's supervision sent 371 articles of clothing as gifts to the Central Dépôt at Bombay, and also *bidis*, pickles, etc.

In addition 26,322 articles of clothing and necessities were made up from materials sent from the Bombay Depôt.

The contribution of Rs. 10,000 towards the Freeman Thomas War Hospital referred to above was from the Palanpur State, and His Highness the Nawab Saheb of Radhanpur paid Rs. 2,000 towards the Women's Branch War Relief Fund out of the sum of Rs. 2,580 as stated above.

---

1917-18.

The States, Talukas, and people of this Agency continued to take a keen interest, as before, in the Great Continental War and the following amounts were contributed during the year:—

|   | Rs. | A.    | P.  |
|---|-----|-------|-----|
| Contribution towards the Palanpur Branch<br>of the Women's War Fund | ... | 1,712 | 9 0 |
| Sale proceeds of the War Seal Stamps and<br>post cards              | ..  | 621   | 0 0 |

The local branch of the Women's War Fund, which continued to work under Mrs. Coghill's supervision, sent 413 articles of clothing as gifts to the Central Depôt at Bombay and also *bidis*, pickles, etc. In addition 16,062 articles of clothing and necessities were made up from materials sent from the Bombay Depôt.

"Our Day" was celebrated with great enthusiasm in this Agency. A Fancy Fair was held in the compound of His Majesty George V. Club, and the drawing of "Our Day Lottery" was opened. The total collection amounted to Rs. 15,410-14-0, made up of Rs. 6,000 from the Palanpur State, Rs. 4,500 from the Radhanpur State, and the rest from the States of Tharad, Warahi, Wao, and petty Estates, Thana Circles, etc. The contribution from the Palanpur State, excluding a donation of Rs. 1,000 from His Highness the Nawab, was made up largely out of the sale proceeds of tickets in the lottery and fancy fair promoted by that State in the cause of "Our Day." The sale of lottery tickets was largely augmented by the efforts of the Agency Officers in the Agency Districts and at Headquarters.

Besides the above, His Highness the Nawab of Radhanpur offered to present to Government three horses and one pack pony for the purposes of war, and Government accepted this generous offer with thanks.

The Thakur of Bhorole also offered his Postal Cash Certificates of the value of Rs. 1,010 in aid of the Queen Mary's Technical School for Disabled Indian Soldiers at Bombay. The offer was thankfully accepted.

#### WAR LOAN AND RECRUITING.

All possible efforts were made to popularize the loan and, looking to the financial position of the States and the people of this Agency, an approximate contribution of Rs. 2,39,000 may be considered satisfactory. During the year under report some 46 recruits were obtained and the total number sent up since the beginning of the war was 105. This figure included the recruits sent from Deesa and the Palanpur State, which has sent 20 recruits during the year and has shown some activity recently in this direction. Nawabzadas Talley Mahomed Khan, Yavar Hussein Khan, and Mr. A. M. K. Dehlavi, the Political and Judicial Secretary of Palanpur, have been doing their best to obtain more recruits. The number of recruits obtained for the Mesopotamia Porter Corps was 7. The Palanpur and Radhanpur Darbars, as well as some of the other Jurisdictional States, have offered special inducements to recruiters and recruits, *i.e.*, grant of bonus, rewards, pension, etc.

1918-19.

The States, Talukas, and people of this Agency continued to assist as before, and the following contributions were received:—

|  | Rs. | A.  | P.         |
|--|-----|-----|------------|
| Contribution to the Palanpur Branch of the |     |     |            |
| Women's War Fund                           | ... | ... | 2,219 10 2 |
| Sale proceeds of War Seal Stamps and Post  |     |     |            |
| Cards                                      | ... | ... | 214 0 0    |

The local Women's Branch continued to work under Mrs. Coghill, and sent 163 articles of clothing as gifts to the Central Depôt at Bombay besides Indian cigarettes, 10,253 articles of clothing and other necessities were made up from the materials received from the Central Depôt. The armistice was celebrated with great enthusiasm and rejoicings throughout the Agency. His Highness the Nawab of Palanpur contributed, as a donation, War Loan Bonds to the value of Rs. 50,000, with accumulated interest thereon, and His Highness the Nawab of Radhanpur presented a sum of Rs. 25,000 for the purchase of an aeroplane.

---

#### WAR LOAN AND RECRUITING.

A sum of Rs. 88,000 was approximately contributed by the States and the people of the Agency to the Second War Loan. Mr. Mathurbhai G. Patel, Karbhari of Wao, and Mr. Vehribhai Trikambhai Patel, Karbhari of Tharad (now Thanadar at Diodar), were given by Government certificates of good work for the War Loan of 1917.

The total number of recruits sent during the war was 135, and nearly all of them were from the Palanpur State and the Deesa Cantonment. Mr. Hyem Reuben, Sub-Inspector of Police, Deesa camp, was granted by Government a *sanad* for recruiting work.

The present Ruler of Palanpur is His Highness Talley Mahomed Khan Lohani Zubdat-ul-Mulk Nawab, who is entitled, Nawab and Dewan of Palanpur. The personal distinction of two additional guns was granted to him by Government in 1910. His Highness rules over an area of 1,750 square miles and a population of 200,000 persons.

His Highness Mahomed Jalaluddin Khan Babi Bahadur, Nawab of Radhanpur, was born in 1889 and educated at the Raj Kumar College, Rajkot. He is entitled to a salute of eleven guns and rules over an area of 1,150 square miles and a population of 65,567.

---

#### THE MAHIKANTA AGENCY.

The Mahikanta Agency is in the Bombay Presidency and consists of the First Class Native State of Idar, the Second Class Native States

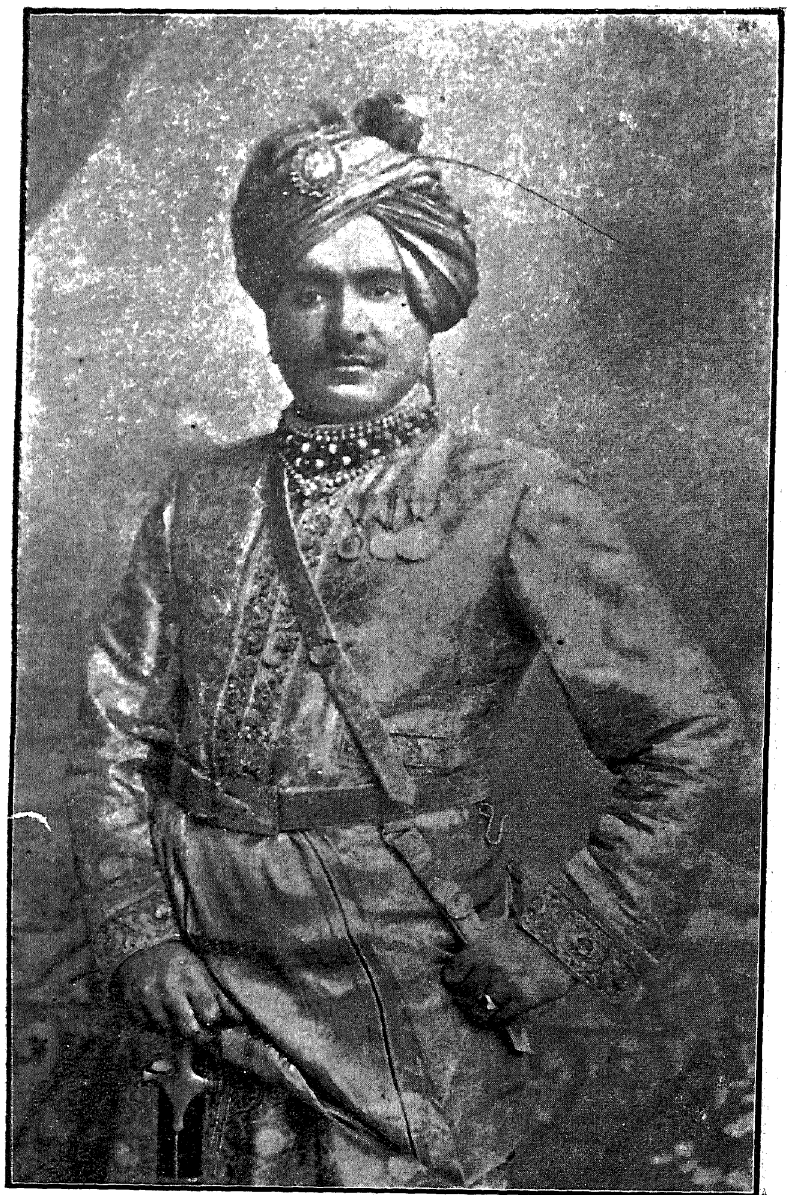




MAHARAJA SIR PARTAP SINGH.







THE MAHARAJA OF IDAR.

of Danta and Polo and as many as 49 other smaller States. The total area of the Agency is 3,124 square miles and it has a population of 412,631. The following statement gives an account of the important contributions made by all the States in the Agency to the War, while reference is made to other contributions made by individual States further on :—

|                            |     | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|----------------------------|-----|--------|----|----|
| Indian Relief Fund         | ... | 31,517 | 6  | 11 |
| Lady Willingdon Fund       | ... | 2,253  | 8  | 0  |
| Mahikanta Aeroplane Fund   | ... | 2,407  | 13 | 0  |
| War Expenses               | ... | 1,498  | 8  | 0  |
| Children's Day for Belgium |     | 810    | 14 | 6  |
| "Our Day"                  | ... | 8,980  | 4  | 10 |
| Women's War Relief Fund    | ... | 2,152  | 6  | 3  |
| Empire Day                 | ... | 312    | 14 | 0  |
| Silver Wedding Fund        | ... | 2,895  | 0  | 0  |

---

#### IDAR.

Major-General His Highness Sir Pratab Singhji, G.C.S.I., K.C.B., A.-D.-C. to the King, late Maharaja of Idar and a Ruling Chief, was born on 21st October, 1845.

His Highness belongs to the great Rathor Rajput family, said to have sprung from the second son of the legendary hero Rama and, therefore, of the Solar race, of whom the principal Chief is His Highness the Maharaja of Jodhpur, and to which also belong the Chiefs of Bikaner and Kishengarh, in Rajputana, and other important Princes.

Until July, 1911, His Highness was the Ruling Chief of Idar but at that time, having being appointed Regent of Jodhpur State, he resigned in favour of his adopted son (the present Ruler) His Highness Maharajadhiraj Maharaj Sri Dowlat Singhji.

Despite his 70 years, His Highness Sir Pratab Singhji would not be denied his privilege of drawing his sword in aid of his King in the Great War, at the same time seeking a death on the battlefield,

the form of death preferred by all Rajputs. He was accompanied in the campaign by his adopted son.

Idar State has an area of 1,669 square miles and an average revenue of more than ten lakhs of rupees, with a population of 1,80,000.

H. H. Sir Pratab Singhji is entitled to a salute of 17 guns, 2 of which are a personal salute.

The following statement gives an account of the chief contributions of the Idar State to the war, excluding contributions shown in the general figures for the whole Agency given above:—

|                               | Rs.                  |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|
| For War Expenses ... ..       | 3,000                |
| Red Cross Society ... ..      | ... 19 Stable tents. |
| Motor Ambulance ... ..        | 2,000                |
| War Hospital in Bombay ... .. | 600                  |
| Also 31 horses and 6 mules.   |                      |

---

#### DANTA.

The following statement shows the special financial contributions made by the State of Danta in the same Agency, excluding the subscriptions shown above in the general figures for the whole Agency:—

|                                 | Rs.    |
|---------------------------------|--------|
| Lady Hardinge Hospital ... ..   | 300    |
| Women's Sale at Bombay ... ..   | 100    |
| Fancy Fair at Ahmedabad ... ..  | 100    |
| Roumanian Relief Fund ... ..    | 100    |
| Expenses towards the war ... .. | 21,000 |

The present Ruler of the State of Danta is His Highness ~~Maharaja~~ Hamir Singhji.

---

#### POLO.

The claim to the succession of the State of Polo has recently been in dispute for sometime and the Government has just recognized the claim of the minor, His Highness Rao Hamir Singhji.





THE MAHARAJA OF COOCH BEHAR.

## CHAPTER X.

### BENGAL PRESIDENCY.

#### COOCH BEHAR.

THE Cooch Behar State was founded by a Koch Chief, named Chandan, in 1510 A. D. He was succeeded by his cousin, Biswa Singh, who conquered the tract of country bounded by Karatoya on the west and Barnadi on the east. He was succeeded by his son, Nar Narayan, who, with his brother Silarai, conquered all the neighbouring countries to the east and south and even waged war on the Mahomedans. After Silarai's death his son, Raghu, rebelled, whereupon Nar Narayan divided his kingdom and gave Raghu the portion east of the river Sankosh. This event, which occurred in 1581, led to the downfall of the Koch Kings. Nar Narayan died in 1584, and his son, Lakhshmi Narayan, who succeeded, quarrelled with Raghu's son, Parikshit, and invoked the aid of the Moghuls, proclaiming himself a vassal of the Emperor of Delhi. The eastern kingdom was gradually absorbed by the Ahoms, while the western was shorn of its outlying possessions by the Moghuls on the south and the Bhutias on the north, until only the modern State of Cooch Behar remained in the precarious possession of Chandan's descendants. In the time of the East India Company three scions of the Koch Dynasty—the Nazir Deo, the Diwan Deo, and the Raikat of Baikantpur—each claimed the hereditary right. This state of affairs did not make for unity of administration and each of the three called in the aid of the Company. In 1773 a treaty was concluded between the Raja and the Company, in which the former acknowledged the supremacy of the latter, and in 1780 the Raja agreed to pay to the

Company a sum of Rs. 67,000 per annum. The first Chief, under these conditions, was Narendra Narayan Bhup Bahadur, who died in 1860.

Narendra Narayan was succeeded by Maharaja Sir Nripendra Narayan Bhup Bahadur, G.C.I.E., C.B., who was an Honorary Colonel in the British Army and A.-D.-C. to the King. He saw active service on the North-Western Frontier in 1897 and in the Tirah Field Force. He stood first in reputation as a sportsman among the Ruling Chiefs of India, and his work, "Thirty-seven Years of Big Game Shooting in India," is a delightful volume of reminiscences. By his genial hospitality and approachableness, and with the co-operation of his charming consort, he did much to bring Europeans and Indians together. He also effected many improvements in his State, amongst which were the establishment of a State Council, the linking up of Cooch Behar with the railway systems of Bengal, the establishment of Victoria College, the Raj Mata Hospital, and the institution of a Public Works Department. He died on 18th September, 1911, and was succeeded by Maharaja Raj Rajendra Narayan Bhup Bahadur. The latter died in 1913 and was succeeded by the present Chief.

The Chief is entitled to a salute of 13 guns.

The State has an area of 1,307 square miles, a population of 593,052, and an annual revenue of about 30 lakhs of rupees. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Maharaja Jitendra Narayan Bhup Bahadur, who succeeded to the *gauldi* in the year 1913, on the death of his elder brother His Highness the late Maharaja Raj Rajendra Narayan Bahadur.

On the outbreak of war the State offered all its resources to Government. His Highness the Maharaja's younger brother, the late Maharaj Kumar Lieutenant Hitendra Narayan, served in the Army in France and had the distinction of being mentioned in despatches. The State contributed more than a lakh of rupees to the War Funds and invested more than three lakhs of rupees in the War Loan. The State also contributed tents and other material for war purposes.







H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF TIPPERAH.

## TIPPERA.

Tippera (or Hill Tippera, as it is now called) State is one of the oldest kingdoms of ancient India. It is bounded on the north by the Districts of Tippera and Sylhet, on the east by the Lushai Hills, on the south by the Districts of Chittagong and Chittagong Hill Tracts, and on the west by the District of Tippera. Its area is about 4,086 square miles and it contains a population of 229,613 (1911) with a revenue of over twelve lakhs of rupees. Besides, the Maharaja is the holder of extensive zamindari in the British Districts of Sylhet, Tippera, and Noakhali, covering an area of over 600 square miles and bringing in a revenue of about ten lakhs of rupees a year.

The ancient history of Tippera begins as early as the time of the Mahabharat and the Ruling Family of Tippera belongs to the lunar race of Kshatriya Kings, through Drujhyu, a younger son of Jajati, the Great Emperor of India, in the Epic period, and the chronicles of the Kings of Tippera, known as the Rajmala, describe the migration of a Prince of the lunar race to Assam, the then Kirat land in the far east. In course of time the family succeeded in establishing a kingdom, which at one time extended as far as the borders of Burma in the east, Arracan in the south, the Brahmaputra on the north, and the Ganges on the west.

It was Ratna Deva, who received the title of *Manikya* from Tugral Khan, the Ruler of Bengal, in return for the friendly present of a rare gem said to have been obtained from a frog and since then the rulers of Tippera have been using this title along with their names. The family appellation is *Den Barman*, usually borne by the Kshatriyas.

The early history of the ancient kingdom of Tippera is obscure till the 11th century. Towards the close of the 13th century the rulers of Tippera for the first time came in touch with the Mahomedans of Bengal and in the first battle that took place with them the Mahomedans were utterly defeated. Bijoy Manikya I. flourished about the middle of the 16th century and even the Mogul Emperors acknowledged his military power. The following extract

from a translation of the *Ain-i-Akbari* (translation of Francis Gladwin) bears vivid testimony to this:—

“Bordering upon Bhattya is a very extensive country subject to the King of Tippera, him they style Joyah Manik, and whoever is possessed of Rajship bear the title of Manik at the end of their names and all the nobility are called Narayan. Their Military Force consists of a thousand elephants and two hundred thousand infantry, but they have a few or no cavalry.”

The first regular warfare with the Mahomedans was during the time of Dhanya Manikya, whose Commander-in-Chief, Chaichang, twice defeated the troops of Hossain Shah, the ruler of Gour. The result was that Chittagong fell into the hands of the rulers of Tippera, who governed the country for a long time, till wrested away by the Magh rulers of Arracan.

The condition of the kingdom was equally flourishing during the time of Amar Manikya towards the close of the 16th century. His grandson, Jashodhar Manikya, was, however, attacked by Nurulla Khan, a General of Jehangir, and taken a prisoner to Delhi, where he was set at liberty, but he preferred to spend the rest of his time in holy places like Benares, Muttra, and Brindaban. He died at Brindaban at the age of 72. His successor, Kalyan Manikya, who ruled towards the middle of the 17th century, was a strong ruler and drove away the Moghuls from Tippera.

Towards the close of the 17th century the Nawabs of Bengal, however, succeeded, due to internal feuds and struggles among the members of the Raj family, in establishing their supremacy over the State, and for a pretty long time they played the part of king-makers to the rulers of Tippera, the ultimate result of which was that, during the time of Dharma Manikya II, the plain portion of the State, which now constitute the zamindari<sup>s</sup> in the British territory, fell, in 1732, into the hands of the Mahomedans of Bengal. The supremacy of the Nawabs of Bengal continued till the time of Bijoy Manikya II, about the middle of the 18th century.

With the grant of the Dewani of Bengal to the British in 1765,

the proprietorship of the zamindari portion of the State fell into the hands of the English, and hence the first touch with the English was in Krishna Manikya's time (1760-83). Accordingly Mr. Ralph Leake was appointed the first British Resident in Tippera with Headquarters at Comilla: his main duty was to control the administration of the zamindaries with the aid of the State officials, but in respect of the State proper the Rulers were practically independent.

There is no treaty with the British Government. During Maharaja Bir Chandra Manikya Bahadur's time troubles having arisen in regard to boundary questions and the raids of the Lushais, the Government appointed a Political Agent in 1871 to reside at Agartala, the Capital. In 1878 the post of Political Agent was abolished, but it was revived in 1911, the Magistrate of Tippera acting as *ex-officio* Political Agent.

The State pays no tribute to Government. In the absence of any treaty with Government, the position of the State was declared in 1870 by the Government of India to be that of a feudatory. The Maharaja receives a salute of 13 guns sanctioned under orders of Her Majesty the Queen-Empress Victoria, dated the 26th June, 1867. The Maharaja has powers of passing sentences of death, and extradition between British India and the State is governed by the general laws on the subject. The State maintains a military force of about 250 men and a police force of 341. There are State Courts presided over by judges, magistrates, and munsifs. There is also a Privy Council to advise His Highness in disposing of important civil and criminal cases in which appeals lie to His Highness.

The present ruler of the State is His Highness the Bisamasamara Bijoyee Mahamapodaya Panchasrijukta Maharaja Birendra Kishore Dev Barman Manikya Bahadur. According to the family genealogy His Highness is 175th in descent from the founder of the dynasty. He is the eldest son of the late Maharaja Radhakishore Dev Barman Manikya Bahadur and was born on the 3rd of November, 1883. He was invested with the Yuvarajship on the 8th February, 1899. He assumed charge of the State on the 13th March, 1909. The installation

ceremony of His Highness took place on the 25th November of the same year, at which His Honour Sir Lancelot Hare, K.C.S.I., C.I.E., the then Lieutenant-Governor of Eastern Bengal and Assam, represented the Government. His Highness was never sent to any School for his education. As a boy he was placed under a distinguished educationist, Mr. T. R. Williams, M.A., (Oxford), and other teachers. In his private life His Highness is a striking personality and is kind and generous. He is an excellent painter and a master in every branch of music. He is also a keen sportsman. His Highness is a great patron of learning, ancient and modern; education is free throughout the State, except in three English High Schools, in which a nominal fee is charged for the benefit of the institutions. Scholarships and stipends are granted on liberal scales for the spread of education in the State. His Highness is a patron of the Bharat-Dharma-Mahamandal and other religious and educational bodies.

At the outbreak of the war His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Government of India, and this offer was accepted by Government.

His Highness made the following war contributions and gifts:—  
Rs.

|  |              |
|--|--------------|
| 1. Credited to His Majesty's Government towards<br>the general expenses of the war | ... 1,00,000 |
| 2. Imperial Indian Relief Fund:—   |              |
| 1st instalment   | ... 12,000   |
| 2nd instalment   | ... 3,750    |
| 3rd instalment   | ... 15,000   |
| 4th instalment   | ... 1,00,000 |
| 3. Bengali Battalion Patriotic Fund  | ... 5,380    |
| 4. Lady Carmichael Women's War Fund, from<br>Her Highness the Maharani             | ... 5,700    |
| 5. Y. M. C. A.   | ... 100      |
| 6. St. Dunstan's Day Fund  | ... 150      |
| 7. Maintenance of an ambulance car in France<br>for one year                       | ... 3,600    |

|     |  |     |     | Rs.    |
|-----|--|-----|-----|--------|
| 8.  | Our Day Fund   | ... | ..  | 1,000  |
| 9.  | Bonus to recruits  | ... | ..  | 1,025  |
| 10. | Uniform for recruits   | ... | ... | 336    |
| 11. | Travelling and other expenses for recruits                               | ... | ... | 380    |
| 12. | 800 Khaki shirts for the 11th Rajputs serving<br>in Mesopotamia          | ... | ... | 1,812  |
| 13. | Gift of one Motor boat for ambulance work in<br>Mesopotamia, worth about | ... | ... | 25,000 |

---

INDIAN STATES VOLUME 3.



THE RAJA OF TALCHER.

[p. 151]







THE RAJA OF BAMRA.

## CHAPTER XI.

### PROVINCE OF BEHAR AND ORISSA.

UNDER the Government of Behar and Orissa, there are twenty-six Native States, the two Chota Nagpur States of Kharaswan and Seraikala, and twenty-four Orissa Feudatory States, Mayurbhanj being the most important of the latter. The contributions in money made by the various States, excluding gifts in kind, are shown in the following table kindly supplied by the Political Agent for the Orissa and Chota Nagpur Feudatory States:—

|            |     |     |     | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|------------|-----|-----|-----|----------|----|----|
| Attigarh   | ... | ... | ... | 806      | 14 | 0  |
| Altunallik | ... | ... | ... | 11,436   | 12 | 3  |
| Bamra      | ... | ... | ... | 1,07,350 | 8  | 3  |
| Baramba    | ... | ... | ... | 8,272    | 15 | 2  |
| Band       | ... | ... | ... | 29,457   | 6  | 8  |
| Bonai      | ... | ... | ... | 14,715   | 1  | 6  |
| Daspalla   | ... | ... | ... | 9,688    | 8  | 7  |
| Dhenleanal | ... | ... | ... | 37,300   | 0  | 0  |
| Gangpur    | ... | ... | ... | 36,861   | 0  | 0  |
| Hindol     | ... | ... | ... | 7,527    | 5  | 0  |
| Kalahandi  | ... | ... | ... | 78,883   | 5  | 0  |
| Keunjhar   | ... | ... | ... | 43,046   | 4  | 9  |
| Khandpara  | ... | ... | ... | 5,115    | 6  | 3  |
| Mayurbhanj | ... | ... | ... | 1,19,216 | 15 | 9  |
| Narsingpur | ... | ... | ... | 5,302    | 15 | 0  |
| Nayagarh   | ... | ... | ... | 21,492   | 11 | 8  |
| Nilgiri    | ... | ... | ... | 10,220   | 12 | 6  |
| Pal-Lahara | ... | ... | ... | 3,463    | 5  | 9  |

|                                  |     |     |     | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|----------------------------------|-----|-----|-----|--------|----|----|
| Patna                            | ... | ... | ... | 81,691 | 2  | 3  |
| Rairakhol                        | ..  | ... | ... | 4,650  | 4  | 3  |
| Ranpur                           | ... | ... | ... | 6,485  | 1  | 3  |
| Sonpur                           | ... | ... | ... | 94,120 | 13 | 0  |
| Talcher                          | ... | ..  | ... | 5,343  | 4  | 6  |
| Tigiria                          | ... | ... | ... | 2,481  | 0  | 9  |
| Seraikela                        | ... | ... | ... | 2,238  | 3  | 0  |
| Kharsawan                        | ... | ... | ... | 1,389  | 5  | 6  |
| Untraced                         | ... | ... | ... | 75     | 13 | 6  |
| Individual monthly subscriptions | ... | ... | ... | 995    | 0  | 0  |

TOTAL ... 7,49,628 9 1

This excludes a sum of Rs. 46,011 contributed to the Indian Imperial Relief Fund after 1918-19. The total amounts invested in the two War Loans by all the States were:—

|                 |     |     | Rs.       |
|-----------------|-----|-----|-----------|
| First War Loan  | ... | ... | 46,90,765 |
| Second War Loan | ... | ... | 79,33,772 |

The State of Mayurbhanj was the largest investor in the War Loans, the contribution exceeding Rs. 35,00,000.

The present ruler of the State of Mayurbhanj is His Highness Puran Chandra Bhanj Deo, who has just been installed on the *gaddi* by His Honour Sir Edward Gait, Lieutenant-Governor of Behar. On the occasion of the installation ceremony, His Honour recounted the War services of the Chiefship in the following words:—

“During the war you did all in your power to popularize in your State the various War Funds and War Loans. The direct contributions by the State itself to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund and other similar funds aggregated Rs. 1,20,000, while its investments in the two War Loans amounted to close on forty lakhs of rupees. You gave great assistance in the recruitment of men for the overseas Labour Corps, with the result that 2,424 recruits were obtained in the Mayurbhanj State. You also offered your personal services which

were duly accepted: but before you reached France the Armistice was signed and the War came to an end. Although you were thus deprived of the opportunity of serving His Majesty the King-Emperor on the battle-field, your visit to Europe was by no means wasted, for you were taken over the British fighting areas in France and Belgium, while at Portsmouth you were shown almost every type of ship in the British navy. You also made extensive tours in great Britain in the course of which you saw the ancient seats of learning at Oxford and Cambridge and important manufacturing centres such as Sheffield, Manchester, and Birmingham. You also had the honour of an interview with Their Imperial Majesties."

---

•





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF BENARES.





## CHAPTER XII.

### THE UNITED PROVINCES OF AGRA AND OUDH.

#### BENARES.

THE present Ruling Family of Benares belongs to the Sarwariya (Sarjupari) branch of the Brahmin Family, being Misras of Madhubani. They are also Trikarma and do not follow the priestly avocation. The first member of the family who achieved some distinction was Babu Manoranjan Singh who came into the possession of some zamindari in village Tetaria, now named Gangapur, in early teens of the 18th century. His son, Mansaram, enlarged his possessions and obtained the title of Raja from Emperor Farrukh Siar and a grant of the zamindari of Gangapur. Out of the confusion that followed the death of Emperor Aurangzeb, Benares emerged as the recognized fief of Sadaat Ali, the Nawab Wazir of Oudh, who in return for a small rent leased it along with two neighbouring sircars to one of his friends, Mir Rustam Ali. The latter being too weak to administer his affairs gave up the practical management of the then called province of Benares to Raja Mansa Ram who although professing allegiance to the Nawab Wazir of Oudh had already begun to chalk out measures of his own independence. On the fall of Rustam Ali from the good grace of the Nawab Wazir, Mansa Ram took his place as the *de facto* ruler of the Province of Benares. On his death, his son Balwant Singh, a man of exceptional ability and political sagacity, obtained from the then Emperor Alamgir II (who though only a nominal ruler was nevertheless the source of honour) a confirmation of the title of Raja and of the lease of the three sircars he held from his immediate superior, Sadaat Ali. Balwant Singh gradually consolidated his possessions at Gangapur, Ramnagar, Patibata

Bijaigarh and other places and when he found time ripe for taking the bold measure throw off his nominal allegiance to Oudh and after conquering the neighbouring chieftains set himself up as an independent ruler. The Nawab Wazir sent many expeditions against him but to no effect. In the struggle between the British and the trio of Mahomedan potentates, Shah Alam, Shujauddaulah, and Mir Kasim which led to English paramountcy in Bengal, Balwant Singh sided with the British. Although under the treaty of Allahabad, Benares was again given over to Oudh, it was on the clear understanding that Balwant Singh should be left undisturbed in possession of his fief. Balwant Singh removed his capital from Gangapur to Ramnagar and built a fort at that place and founded a small city. Later on the Oudh sovereigns made many attempts to oust Balwant Singh but strong in the support of the English, Balwant Singh held his own till his death in 1770. After his death, there arose a dispute as to succession. Chet Singh, a natural son of Balwant Singh, claimed the Raj as the only male issue of Balwant Singh, while Mahip Narain claimed it as the son of Balwant Singh's daughter (who was married to Drigvijai Singh of Narhan in Tirhut) who was the only legitimate issue of Balwant Singh. Warren Hastings, the then Governor-General of India, favoured Chet Singh's claim and he was installed on the *gaddi*, but eleven years later he (Warren Hastings) fell out with him and he was deposed. Mahip Narain was then sent for from his home and was installed as the ruler of Benares. Mahip Narain being a weak ruler could not control the various turbulent elements residing in his vast dominion. Crime became rife and the country began to be depopulated. Land-revenue consequently decreased and the Raja could not meet his obligations with the Government. He therefore with the advice of Mr. Duncan, the then Resident of Benares, gave over nearly all his possessions (together with full jurisdiction over them) to the British Government, to be managed and administered by them, retaining only his family property of Bhadohi, Gangapur, and Keramangraur (Chakia) under his own management, with certain special privileges in Taluka

Karanadandi (which the Raja claimed to be part of his family property and the Resident refused to accept his claim). The three parganas of Bhadohi, Gangapur, and Keramangraur were since then, till the 31st of March, 1911, known by the distinctive name of family Dominions, and were administered by the Rajas of Benares subject to the provisions of Act VII of 1828 and Act XIV of 1881.

When the Province of Benares was thus ceded to the British Government, it was stipulated by the Raja that he (1) shall receive from the Government all surplus revenues remaining in hand after meeting administrative and other charges and (2) shall also be authorized to examine all revenue papers of the Province of Benares and sign all receipts and *farigkhatis*. To carry into effect the first stipulation it was deemed desirable to settle the whole Province permanently and fix the expenditure under different heads, and in order to further facilitate account the amount of this surplus revenue was fixed at a lakh of rupees per annum. For the purposes of the second stipulation, four Diwan Nizamats were allowed by the Government to be appointed by the Raja at the Headquarters of all the four districts of Benares, Mirzapur, Ghazipur, and Jaunpur (which composed the Province of Benares) with authority to examine all district and revenue accounts, and present receipts and *farigkhatis* for the Raja's signature, the expenses of the four offices to be defrayed by the Government out of the revenue of the Province. This arrangement was afterwards found very inconvenient and embarrassing and it was agreed to in 1853, that the Raja shall forego his right to examine revenue accounts and sign receipts and *farigkhatis*, and the British Government on their part shall pay him Rs. 14,856, being the cost of the offices of the four Diwan Nizamats whether he (the Raja) entertained any such office or not.

His Highness, therefore, receives from the Government under treaty a sum of Rs. 1,19,418 per annum on the following accounts:— (a) Rs. 1,00,000 as the surplus revenue of the territory ceded; (b) Rs. 14,856 being the cost of the office of Diwan Nizamats; (c) Rs. 4,562 being the compensation for the *abkuri* (excise) of the city of Benares

(which the Government took in their own hands after the cession of the Province). Besides this he receives about Rs. 1,000 per annum being 10 per cent. on the gross receipt of Taluka Karnadandi.

Although from 1794 the Province of Benares passed into the hands of the British Government they in subsequent *sansads* granted to Raja Udit Narain Singh and Iswari Prasad Narain Singh (successors of Mahip Narain Singh) the agreement concluded with Raja Mahip Narain Singh accepting the position of the Rajas of Benares as real proprietors of the Province of Benares, subject to the provisions of the agreement of 1794. The Rajas, therefore, continued to be and are still styled Rajas of Benares although they ceased to have anything to do with the city of Benares or with the District.

To resume the thread of the narrative, Raja Mahip Narain Singh died in the year 1795 and was succeeded by his son Udit Narain, who in his turn was (in January 1835 A. D.) succeeded by his adopted son and nephew Ishwari Prasad Narain Singh, who having died in 1889 was succeeded by his nephew and adopted son, Maharaja Sir Prabhu Narain Singh, the present Chief.

Raja Udit Narain Singh, being a shrewd financier and capable manager, succeeded in acquiring a big zamindari in the Province of Benares, and also in the adjoining districts of Allahabad and Shahabad to which his successors also contributed later on. The total number of zamindari villages in the possession of His Highness at the present day including the pargana of Gangapur (which at the time of the creation of the State was excluded from it and included in the zamindari possessions of His Highness) is 1,172 villages and 333 *patties* yielding a gross revenue of Rs. 9,02,224 and the net revenue of nearly six lakhs of rupees after the payment of Government revenues of Rs. 3,40,540.

Raja Ishwari Prasad Narain Singh rendered conspicuous services to the Government during the days of the Indian Mutiny and received the hereditary salute of 13 guns and the *sansad* of adoption. He also received the title of Maharaja which title was after his death continued in the case of his successor the present Maharaja. He was also made a G. C. S. I.

His Highness the present Maharaja succeeded his uncle and adoptive father on the 9th of June, 1889, and was created a K.C.I.E., in 1892 and a G.C.I.E., in 1896. The Government of India with the concurrence of the Home Government decided in November, 1910, to re-grant full ruling powers to the Rajas of Benares and re-create a State of Benares comprising the parganas of Bhadohi and Keramangraur (Chakia) and the Fort of Ramnagar and a number of villages adjacent to it. Effect was given to this decision of the 1st of April, 1911.

In recognition of his services during the Great European War, 1914-19, the Government have been pleased to raise his salute from 13 to 15 guns and to grant him the honorary rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, and to make the title of Maharaja hereditary in the family. The title of G.C.S.I. was also conferred on His Highness on the 1st January, 1921.

The Benares Darbar provided two sections of a Tonga Ambulance Transport Corps at a total cost of Rs. 2,83,529. The historic Mint House in the Benares Cantonment, belonging to His Highness, was converted into the Lady Chelmsford War Hospital for 150 men, the equipment and maintenance of the institution costing over Rs. 2,02,000. The State Infantry sent 157 recruits and also 28 trained signallers. The supply of material for war purposes cost Rs. 1,19,000, the following constituting the most important items:—

173 Horses.

16 Tents.

1 Aeroplane.

1 Motor Launch.

The contributions of the State to the various War Funds amounted to Rs. 1,25,000 while His Highness also invested Rs. 7,00,000 in the two War Loans.

---

#### RAMPUR.

*Rampur.*—Colonel His Highness Alijah Farzand-i-Dilpazir-i-Daulat-Inglishia, Mukhlis-ud-Daula, Nasir-ul-Mulk, Amir-ul-Umara, Nawab Sir Mohammad Hamid Ali Khan, Khan Bahadur, Mustaid

Jung, G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O., A.D.C., to H. I. M. the King-Emperor, Nawab of—, a Ruling Chief.

H. H. was born on August 31st, 1875, and succeeded his father, Nawab Mushtaq Ali Khan, on February 25th, 1889. His Highness's training was entrusted to Captain (now Lieut.-Colonel) Colvin and Mr. H. O. Budden (late of the E. I. Service).

In 1893 His Highness went on a tour round the world, and, when in England, was received by Her Majesty the late Queen Victoria. From May 1896, His Highness commenced to rule in person; he appointed a Minister and at once turned his attention to the improvement of his State. In 1902 the Nawab formed a Legislative Council consisting of the Ruling Family, officials and leading residents of the State. The Minister presides over the Committee and the regulations framed are published for criticism. The chief measures that have been dealt with have been concerned with the Municipal Government of Rampur and Registration. The old wasteful system of irrigation by damming small rivers has been superseded by one of small canals. Great attention has been paid by His Highness to education; the number of schools has greatly increased, and a large proportion of the students are girls. The celebrated Arabic College, maintained by the State, has 400 students. An Industrial School has also been established by the Nawab. The interest H. H. takes in education generally is evidenced by his munificent donations to the Aligarh College, the Daly College at Indore, and similar institutions. Since the present Chief came to power, the town of Rampur has undergone a complete transformation and it is now adorned by numerous public buildings and palaces.

His Highness was present at the last Imperial Darbar at Delhi and in 1905 had the honour of personally paying his respects to the present King-Emperor and Queen-Empress.

The Chief fully maintains the traditional loyalty of his House to the British Raj, and is always ready to further the objects of the Government.

The State of Rampur is the only surviving remnant of the great



H. H. THE NAWAB OF RAMPUR.

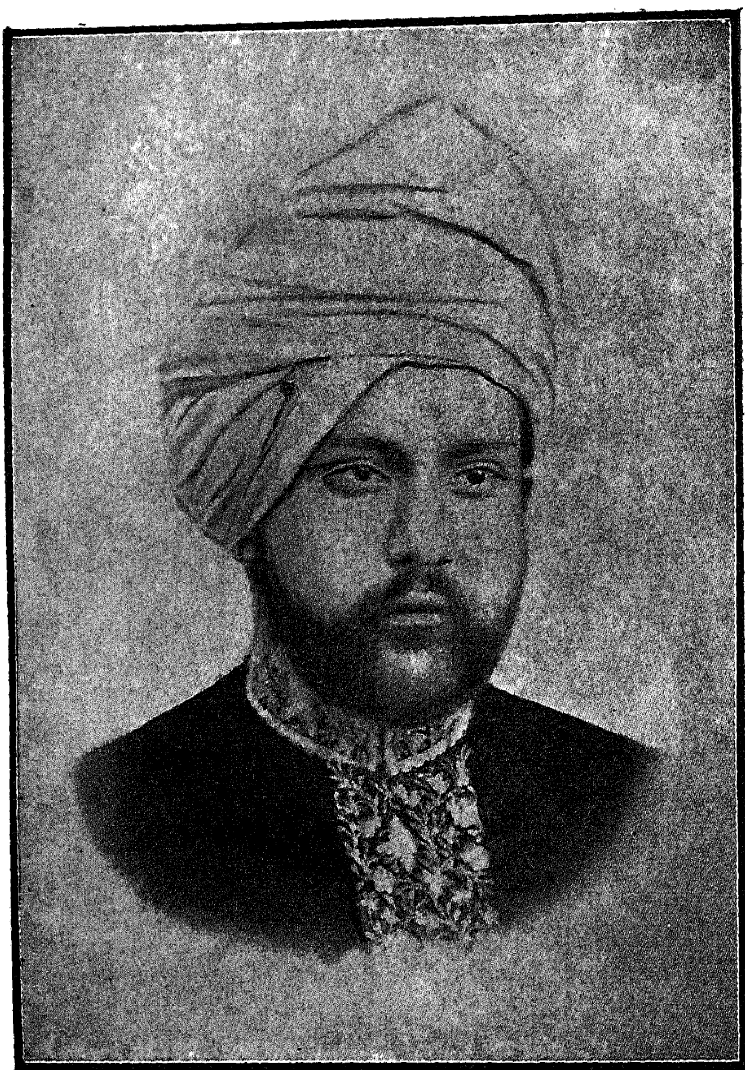


H. H. THE BEGAM OF BHOPAL.





INDIAN STATES VOLUME.



PRINCE MD. NASR-UL-LAH KHAN THE CROWN PRINCE  
OF BHOPAL.

[p. 169]

INDIAN STATES VOLUME.



COL.-PRINCE OBAID-UL-LAH KHAN OF BHOPAL.  
[p. 169]



INDIAN STATES VOLUME.



PRINCE HAMID-UL-LAH KHAN OF BHOPAL.  
[p. 169]



Rohilla power that once held sway over the greater part of the country now known as Rohilkhand, and it owes its origin to an Afghan named Sirdar Daud Khan, who came to seek his fortune in India and succeeded in annexing the above named country.

In 1794 Nawab Faizulla was succeeded by his son Mohammad Ali, who was soon deposed and subsequently murdered. His younger brother, Ghulam Mohammad, succeeded him. Mohammad Ali was a friend of the Nawab Wazir Ali of Oudh, and the latter, in order to avenge his friend's murder, sought the assistance of the British. The combined armies of the latter and of the Nawab Wazir marched to Rampur. The Rampur army fought gallantly but it was eventually overcome and Ghulam Mohammad Khan went on a pilgrimage to Mecca; Ahmad Ali Khan, the infant son of Mohammad Ali, being proclaimed Nawab. He was assigned the territory which comprises the present State of Rampur and the remainder of the country formerly ruled by Nawab Faizulla was annexed to Oudh. In 1801, when Rohilkhand came under British rule, Nawab Ahmad Ali Khan became their feudatory. He was succeeded in 1840 by his cousin, Mohammad Saiyid Khan, who introduced far-reaching reforms; he organized the different State Departments and under his administration the revenues were greatly increased. He died in 1855, and his eldest son, Usuf Ali Khan, came to the *gaddi*. An opportunity soon arose for this Chief to prove his loyalty to the British Raj. Situated almost midway between Lucknow and Delhi, Rampur was in the very centre of the Mutiny operations. The Nawab, from the beginning, exerted himself to the utmost to afford aid to the British and to protect Europeans and he succeeded in saving many lives and maintaining order throughout a large portion of the affected districts. His services were rewarded by the grant of a large tract of land in Bareilly District and a Khilat, and he was created K.C.S.I. In 1864 he was appointed an additional Member of Lord Elgin's Council. On his death in 1865, he was succeeded by his son, Kalb Ali Khan. This Chief was an administrator of great ability and a renowned scholar. He was a Member of Lord Lytton's Council and was created G.C.S.I., receiving

the insignia from the hands of the Prince of Wales, afterwards Edward VII, King-Emperor. He died in 1887. His son Mushtaq Ali Khan, who succeeded, suffered so much from illness that a Council of Regency had to be appointed to carry on the Administration. He died in 1889 and was succeeded by the present Nawab.

The area of Rampur State is 892 square miles, with a population of about 534,000, and an annual revenue of 42 lakhs. It is the premier State in the United Provinces.

The Nawab is entitled to a salute of 13 guns.

His Highness maintains a military force of 506 Cavalry (including 303 Imperial Service Lancers), 3 battalions of Infantry, and 28 guns.

*War Services.*—The Rampur Imperial Service Infantry was sent to East Africa and remained for about 3 years. The services of the corps were highly spoken of by the Commander-in-Chief of the East African Forces and other high military authorities, and it displayed conspicuous gallantry in the capture of a German Patrol under exceptionally trying circumstances.

The Nawab :—

1. Contributed to the up-keep of the Hospital Ship *Loyally*.
2. Presented to Government.—
  - (a) 7 double-poled tents of the value of Rs. 17,500.
  - (b) 20,000 maunds of Babul bark for Government tanneries.
  - (c) Placed at the disposal of the Government his Brook Hill estate at Naini Tal and his house at Bareilly. The former was used for two years as a Convalescent House for British Officers at a cost to His Highness of Rs. 10,000. War Loans, Rs. 7,10,000. War charities, Rs. 72,500. War expenditure by the State nearly 3½ lakhs.

---

#### TEHRI-GARHWAL.

His Highness the Hon'ble Maharaja Narendra Sah. Maharaja of Tehri-Garhwal, a Ruling Chief, Member of the Legislative Council of the United Provinces of Agra and Oudh; was born in 1898.







The Chief claims descent from an ancient line of Princes which held sway in Garhwal for many centuries. Tradition has it that the founder of the race was Kanak Pal, who came from Gujrat. In 1777 Lalit Sah, the head of the family, obtained possession of Kumaun. At his death the State was divided between his two sons, Parduman Sah, who received Kumaun, and Jai Karat Sah (the elder son) who received Garhwal. The brothers quarrelled and the elder was defeated. Parduman Sah then retained the two countries for several years, but in 1786 he was forced to retire to his ancient Capital, Srinagar. In 1790 the Nepalese took possession of Kumaun and attacked Garhwal, but the Raja was allowed to remain in possession of Garhwal on payment of an annual tribute of Rs. 25,000. This arrangement remained in force until 1803, when the Nepalese again invaded Garhwal and the Raja fled to Landaure, Saharanpur District. He there collected a considerable force, but was defeated and killed near Dehra. His eldest son, Sudarshan Sah, escaped to British territory, and after the annexation of Garhwal in 1815, was given the country west of the Alaknanda river; in 1824 the pargana of Rawain, which had been expressly reserved by Government, was handed over to the Raja. Sudarshan Sah left no legitimate heir and his territory, under the terms of the treaty, lapsed to Government. It was, however, restored to his illegitimate son, Bhawani Sah, in consideration of the services rendered by his father in 1857. Raja Bhawani Sah died in 1872 and was succeeded by his son Pratab Sah, who died in 1887. His successor was Kirta Sah, during whose minority the affairs of the State were managed by a Council of Regency provided over by his mother, Rani Guleri. This Chief opened several schools and dispensaries in his State, raised a Company of Imperial Service Troops, introduced electric power, constructed extensive Water Works and generally managed his State with skill and consideration for the poor and afflicted. The State has an area of 4,500 square miles, and the Chief is entitled to a salute of 11 guns.

*War Services.*—In the case of this State contributions to the war were somewhat restricted by the fact that the Maharaja was a

minor and the State was under the administration of a Council of Regency. Notwithstanding this fact, however, the Darbar, largely at the instance of Her Highness the Nepalia Rani, gave loyal support to Government in all war work.

*War Loans.*—Rs. 5,35,000 in 2nd loan. War charities Rs. 35,983. Material contributions, valued at Rs. 9,313. Her Highness the Nepalia Rani contributed Rs. 200 a month for hospital comforts for wounded soldiers of the Tehri Sappers and the 39th Garhwal Rifles.

A total of 1,958 recruits were enrolled, including 1,290 combatants. The Tehri Imperial Service Sappers were placed at the disposal of the Government first as a reinforcement for the 39th Garhwal Rifles and later as a Sapper and Minor Corps for employment overseas.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

### THE CENTRAL PROVINCES.

#### BASTER.

BASTER is the largest Native State in the Central Provinces, having an area of 13,062 square miles and a population of 433,310 souls. The present ruler of the State is the Feudatory Chief, His Highness Raja Rudra Pratap Deo, who is a Donatè of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. The capital of the State is Jadgalpur, situated on the Indravati river, whose famous falls at Chitrakote are about twenty-five miles from the town.

The subscriptions of the State to the various War funds amounted to Rs. 1,56,552; the investments in the two War loans amounted to Rs. 3,44,500; the State supplied two Motor ambulances and a launch for war purposes and ten recruits to the ranks of combatants and non-combatants.

#### SURGUJA.

The State of Surguja was till recently (1905) included in the Chota Nagpur State of Bengal, but is now within the jurisdiction of the Central Provinces. The present Chief of the State is His Highness Maharaja Ramanuj Saran Singh Deo, C.B.E., who succeeded to the Chiefship in 1918. The State has an area of 6,055 square miles and a population of 248,703 souls. The following is a brief statement of the war services of the State :—

|  |     |     | Rs.      |
|--|-----|-----|----------|
| Subscriptions to War Funds                             | ... | ... | 1,83,113 |
| Investments in the War Loan                            | ... | ... | 2,66,540 |
| Recruits to the ranks of combatants and non-combatants | ... | ... | 254      |

The State also supplied a motor ambulance and a motor launch for war purposes.

---

#### KANKER.

The war subscriptions amounted to Rs. 18,625, and the investments in the War Loan to Rs. 34,525. The State supplied a motor ambulance as well as 9 recruits to the Army.

---

#### UDAIPUR.

The war subscriptions amounted to Rs. 26,438, and the investments in the War Loans to Rs. 1,69,100. The State supplied 129 recruits to the Army and also a motor ambulance for war purposes.

---

#### JASHPUR.

Rs. 36,558 were contributed to the various War Funds and Rs. 15,177 invested in War Loans. As many as 329 recruits were sent to the Army and the State also provided one motor ambulance for war purposes.

---

#### SARANGARH.

Rs. 14,578 were given to the various War Funds and Rs. 1,33,119 invested in the War Loans represents the war services of the State. The State also supplied 13 recruits to the Army.

---

#### RAIGARH.

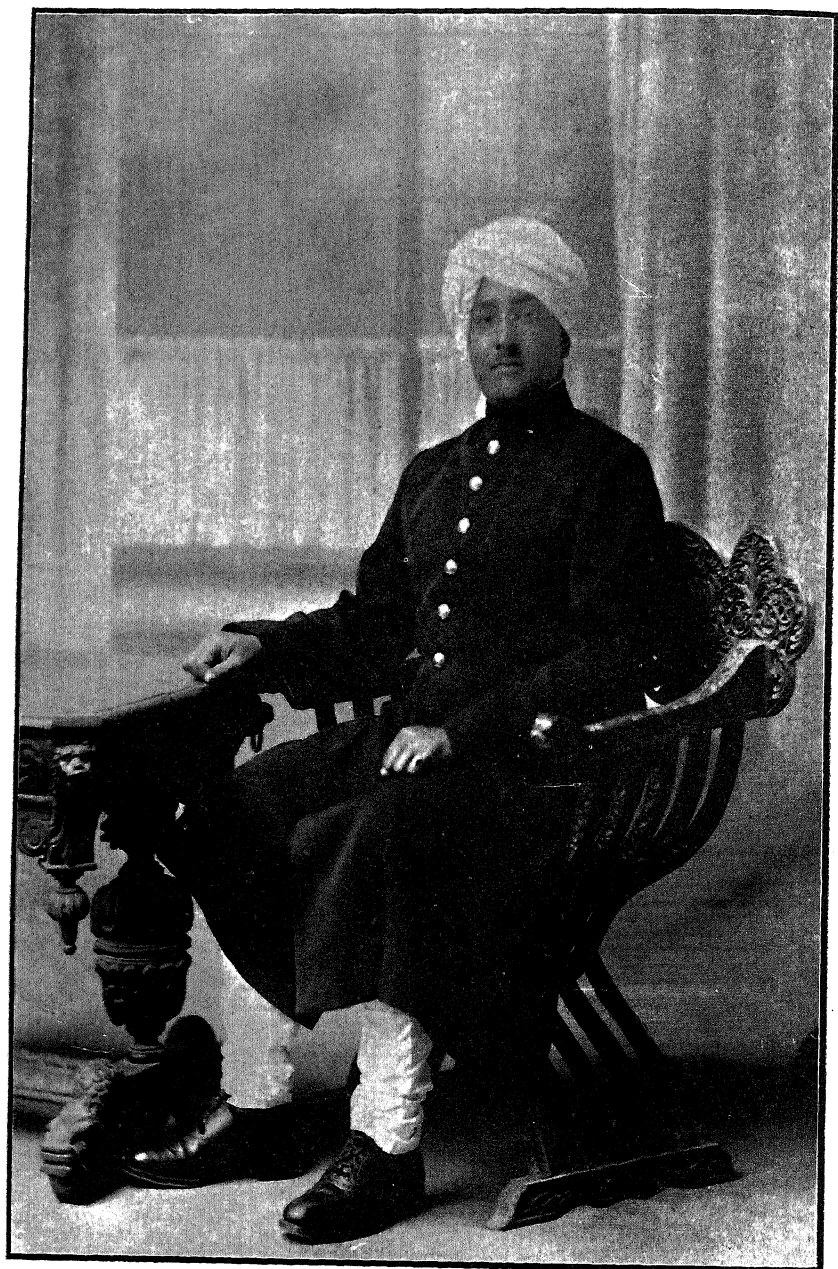
War subscriptions, Rs. 27,260 and investments in War Loans, Rs. 1,55,666. The State supplied 32 recruits to the Army and also one motor ambulance for War purposes.

---

#### MAKRAI.

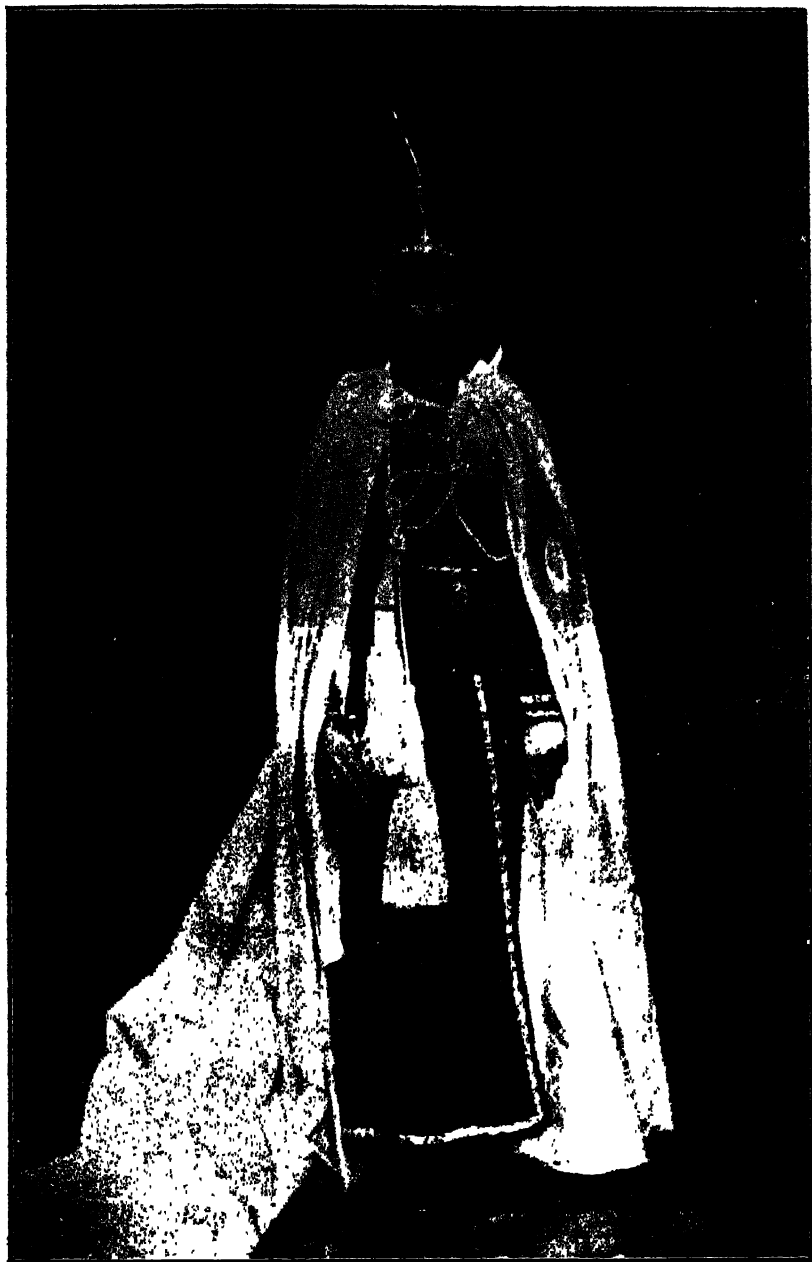
|                              |     |     | Rs.    |
|------------------------------|-----|-----|--------|
| War subscription             | ... | ... | 1,000  |
| Investments in the War Loans | ... | ... | 10,000 |





H. H. THE RAJA SAHIB OF TEHRI-GARHWAL.





H. H. THE MAHARANA OF UDAIPUR.





THE RAJA OF RAIGARH.



THE RAJA OF KHAIRAGARH.

## SAKTI.

|   |     |     | Rs.    |
|---|-----|-----|--------|
| War subscriptions                               | ... | ... | 7,497  |
| Investments in War Loans                        | ... | ... | 14,214 |
| The State also supplied 4 recruits to the Army. |     |     |        |

## KAWARDHA.

|  |     |     | Rs.    |
|--|-----|-----|--------|
| War subscriptions                                      | ... | ... | 12,931 |
| Investments in War Loans                               | ... | ... | 37,859 |
| The State also supplied 7 recruits to the Indian Army. |     |     |        |

## KHAIRAGARH.

|  |     |     | Rs.    |
|--|-----|-----|--------|
| War subscriptions  | ... | ..  | 17,395 |
| Investments in War Loans   | ... | ... | 86,633 |
| The State supplied 36 recruits to the Indian Army and also one motor ambulance for war purposes. |     |     |        |

## KOREA.

|   |    |     | Rs.    |
|---|----|-----|--------|
| War subscriptions                                 | .. | ... | 7,874  |
| Investments in War Loans                          | .. | ... | 45,463 |
| The State also supplied ten recruits to the Army. |    |     |        |

## NANDGAON.

|   |     |     | Rs.      |
|---|-----|-----|----------|
| War subscriptions                                 | ... | ... | 39,683   |
| Investments in War Loans                          | ... | ... | 5,95,977 |
| The State also supplied 162 recruits to the Army. |     |     |          |

## CHUIKHADAN.

|                   |     |     | Rs.   |
|-------------------|-----|-----|-------|
| War subscriptions | ... | ... | 9,404 |

|   |    |     |        |
|---|----|-----|--------|
|   |    |     | Rs.    |
| Investments in War Loans                    | .. | ... | 52,000 |
| The State supplied 4 recruits for the Army. |    |     |        |

---

#### CHANGHAKAR.

A sum of Rs. 540 was subscribed to War Funds and the supply of one recruit to the Army formed the contribution of this small Chiefship.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

### CENTRAL INDIA.

#### BHOPAL.

THE State of Bhopal is in Central India, and among the Mussalman States is only second in rank to Hyderabad in the Deccan.

The present ruling family is descended from the well-known Afghan General under Aurangzeb, Dost Mohammad Khan, who carved an independent State for himself, having been appointed a Governor of the surrounding regions by the Moghul Emperor. The present ruler of the State is Her Highness Nawab Sultan Jahan Begam, C.I., G.C.S.I., G.B.E., who was born in 1858 and succeeded to the *gaddi* in 1901. Eighth in lineal descent from Dost Mohammad Khan, Her Highness is also the third of a succession of lady rulers in the State. Her Highness has laboured hard for the advancement of the State and has acquired a reputation for statesmanship which would probably entitle her to be ranked, in the fulness of time, with some of the great women rulers who have adorned the pages of Indian History as administrators of great ability and genius. The following is a statement of the war services of the State :—

*Offers of personal service.*—Her Highness offered her personal services but there was no occasion for her to proceed to the front.

2. Her Highness's eldest son, Colonel Nawab Sir Mohammad Nasrulla Khan, K.C.S.I., Heir-Apparent, offered his services in connection with the war and embarked with his regiment, the 9th Bhopal Infantry, but, having been invalided, was left at Aden under medical advice and returned to India.

3. Her Highness's second son, Brigadier General Nawab Mohammad Obaidulla Khan, C.S.I., A.D.C., to His Excellency the Viceroy, and Commander-in-Chief of Bhopal State Forces, offered his services, but there was no occasion for him to proceed to the front.

4. *Peace Strength of State Troops*.—625 all ranks, Imperial Service Lancers.

452 all ranks, Imperial Service Infantry.

- (a) Bhopal Imperial Service Lancers (4 squadrons) have been on garrison duty at Meerut, from 15th April, 1914, to 1st March, 1918; at Dera Ismail Khan (North-Western Frontier Provinces) from 7th March, 1918, to 5th November, 1919.
- (b) 63 men from the State Infantry were supplied to the 5th Company Army Bearer Corps on active service in October, 1914.
- (c) 51 men were sent as a draft for Indian Infantry from the Bhopal Imperial Service Infantry.
- (d) 7 Motor Drivers were sent to France with 6 motor cars on 8th October, 1914.
- (e) Services of eleven Signallers (4 N.-C. Officers and 7 sepoy) of the Bhopal Imperial Service Infantry were lent as reinforcements for Signal Units of the Indian Army on active service, from 3rd February, 1915, to 11th August, 1915.
- (f) 30 recruits were maintained with a view to replace unfit and invalid, etc., in the Bhopal Imperial Service Lancers.

5. Number of recruits enlisted for—

|                                   |     |     |
|-----------------------------------|-----|-----|
| (1) State Imperial Service Troops | ... | 445 |
| (2) Indian Army                   | ... | 46  |
| (3) „ „ from State Police         | ... | 6   |

---

TOTAL ... 497

---

Rs. A. P.

6. Extraordinary expenditure (due to war) on the Imperial Service Infantry, annually, on account of enhancement of pay during 1918

... 14,256 0 0



|   | Rs.     | A. | P. |
|---|---------|----|----|
| 7. Compensation to 4 Squadron Commanders and Adjutant, Bhopal Imperial Service Lancers, while on garrison duty (from 1st July, 1918) ... .. | 1,050   | 0  | 0  |
| 8. Free ration to Imperial Service Infantry ...   | 27,404  | 0  | 0  |
| 9. Enhanced rates of State pay as help to motor drivers while on active service ...   | 7,040   | 0  | 0  |
| 10. State pay as help to men of State Infantry sent for active service with the 5th Company, Army Bearer Corps, during 1914-1919 ... ..     | 22,342  | 9  | 6  |
| 11. Help to heirs of men who volunteered their services for the Indian Army from 1st January, 1918 ... ..                                   | 9,180   | 0  | 0  |
| 12. Cost of mobilization stores to both arms—Cavalry, Rs. 41,760; Infantry, Rs. 21,782...   | 63,542  | 0  | 0  |
| 13. Concession rates charged for up-keep of 1,049 Government artillery horses trained from 1915 to 1919 ... ..                              | 10,237  | 0  | 0  |
| 14. Cost of 50 horses supplied ... ..   | 20,500  | 0  | 0  |
| 15. Cost of motors ... ..   | 57,528  | 0  | 0  |
| 16. Other contingencies in connection with despatch of above motor cars ...   | 3,528   | 0  | 0  |
| 17. Cost of 1 motor launch ... ..   | 6,500   | 0  | 0  |
| 18. State pay to heirs of 11 Signallers ...   | 728     | 0  | 0  |
| 19. Cost of uniform of above „ ...  | 599     | 0  | 0  |
| 20. Cost of 2 yachts ... ..   | 3,769   | 0  | 0  |
| 21. Donation for up-keep of Hospital Ship <i>Loyalty</i> presented by the Ruling Princes ...  | 200,088 | 8  | 0  |
| 22. St. John's Ambulance Association ...  | 5,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 23. Vaseline for troops ... ..  | 1,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 24. For the use of the troops ... ..  | 25,000  | 0  | 0  |
| 25. Maritime League, London ... ..  | 1,200   | 0  | 0  |

|     |   | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|-----|---|----------|----|----|
| 26. | For two motor launches ... ..   | 14,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 27. | Ford motor car for war hospital at<br>Bombay ... ..   | 2,499    | 12 | 0  |
| 28. | Expenses for the up-keep of the above car ...   | 7,052    | 0  | 0  |
| 29. | British Empire League, annual subscription<br>Rs. 75 ... ..   | 300      | 0  | 0  |
| 30. | For war expenses .. ..  | 5,000    | 0  | 0  |
| 31. | Kitchener Memorial Fund ... ..  | 3,000    | 0  | 0  |
| 32. | Sehore "Our-Day" Fund ... ..  | 500      | 0  | 0  |
| 33. | Two aeroplanes ... ..   | 33,750   | 0  | 0  |
| 34. | Bhopal "Our-Day" Fund . ...   | 6,000    | 0  | 0  |
| 35. | "Our-Day" Allahabad Calendar Fund ...   | 500      | 0  | 0  |
| 36. | Expenditure on "Our-Day" celebrations,<br>Sehore ... ..   | 251      | 1  | 0  |
| 37. | In aid of the war expenses ... ..   | 1,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 38. | British and Foreign Sailors' Society,<br>London .. ..   | 1,500    | 0  | 0  |
| 39. | Annual subscription to war expenses for the<br>duration of the war (annually) ...                           | 50,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 40. | One pendant for "Our-Day" Fund, Bombay  | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |
| 41. | Silver Wedding Fund ... ..  | 15,150   | 0  | 0  |
| 42. | "Our-Day" Fund flags and postal seals ...   | 127      | 0  | 0  |
| 43. | Indian Soldiers' Canteen Fund, Delhi ...  | 500      | 0  | 0  |
| 44. | Contribution for up-keep of Bhopal Agency<br>newspaper ... ..   | 2,295    | 0  | 0  |
| 45. | Bonus and expenditure for recruiting ...  | 33,075   | 0  | 0  |
| 46. | Prince of Wales's Relief Fund ... ..  | 90,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 47. | Imperial War Relief Fund of India ...   | 1,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 48. | Jhansi Girls' Brigade Fund for Orphans and<br>Widows of Belgian Soldiers ... ..                             | 100      | 0  | 0  |
| 49. | Subscription towards Official Committee in<br>London for the relief of Belgian victims<br>of the war ... .. | 5,000    | 0  | 0  |

|     |   | Rs.   | A. | P. |
|-----|---|-------|----|----|
| 50. | Khaki Fund for the relief of prisoners in Germany ... ..  | 1,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 51. | Lucknow hospital (an artificial leg and an invalid chair) ... ..  | 557   | 4  | 0  |
| 52. | British Women's Hospital, London ...  | 3,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 53. | Women's Branch of the Bombay Presidency War and Relief Fund ..  | 1,500 | 0  | 0  |
| 54. | Women's Branch of the Bombay Presidency War and Relief Exhibition Fund ..                                   | 1,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 55. | Disabled Officers' Fund ... ..  | 1,500 | 0  | 0  |
| 56. | General Benevolent Fund of the War Hospital, Bombay ... ..  | 1,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 57. | St. John's Ambulance Association of Jerusalem   | 6,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 58. | Young Men's Christian Association, Lahore—<br>for the relief of British Indian troops in Mesopotamia ..     | 1,315 | 12 | 0  |
| 59. | Lord Mayor's Fund for Belgian children ...  | 1,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 60. | Gaekwad Officers' Hospital, Bombay, for sick and wounded ... ..   | 1,500 | 0  | 0  |
| 61. | French War Orphans' Fund, Bombay ...  | 500   | 0  | 0  |
| 62. | Monster Lucky Bag Fund, Simla, for the relief of sick and wounded in Mesopotamia ...                        | 750   | 0  | 0  |
| 63. | National Roumanian Relief Fund ...  | 375   | 0  | 0  |
| 64. | Donation to the British Red-Crescent Society, London ... ..   | 1,500 | 0  | 0  |
| 65. | Donation to Queen Mary's Technical School, Bombay, for disabled Indian soldiers ...                         | 2,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 66. | War Relief Fund given on His Imperial Majesty's Birthday anniversary ...                                    | 500   | 0  | 0  |
| 67. | Queen's Hospital, London ... ..   | 300   | 0  | 0  |
| 68. | Montenegrin Red Cross, London ...   | 1,500 | 0  | 0  |
| 69. | Ram Piaree in aid of her daughter's marriage in recognition of her husband's services during the war ... .. | 100   | 0  | 0  |

|     |   | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|-----|---|--------|----|----|
| 70. | 500 copies of First Aid Manual presented to St. John's Ambulance Association in Urdu...                       | 697    | 4  | 0  |
| 71. | Proceeds of Fancy Bazar sale held in Ladies' Club contributed to St. John's Ambulance Association Fund ... .. | 500    | 0  | 0  |
| 72. | Imperial Relief Fund ... ..   | 50,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 73. | Proceeds of the sale of articles and paintings given for Simla Exhibition in aid of sick and wounded ... ..   | 4,000  | 0  | 0  |
| 74. | For distribution of sweetmeats to boys and girls of Sehore Schools on the victory of British arms ... ..      | 300    | 0  | 0  |
| 75. | Great War Sale Fund, Bombay, in aid to the Relief Fund ... ..   | 1,000  | 0  | 0  |

---

*War subscriptions from the State servants.*

|     |  |        |    |   |
|-----|--|--------|----|---|
| 76. | War Loan from State servants raised in 1917  | 42,000 | 8  | 0 |
| 77. | War Loan from State servants raised in 1918  | 41,530 | 12 | 0 |
| 78. | War Bonds purchased by State Municipality... | 15,000 | 0  | 0 |

---

*War Loan subscriptions from the State.*

|     |                                   |          |   |   |
|-----|-----------------------------------|----------|---|---|
| 79. | Indian War Loan ... ..            | 6,00,000 | 0 | 0 |
| 80. | National War Loan, England ... .. | 1,99,500 | 0 | 0 |

---

*Public subscriptions raised or contributed in the State.*

|     |  |        |    |   |
|-----|--|--------|----|---|
| 81. | Contributions from Bhopal Municipality ... ..                                      | 3,000  | 0  | 0 |
| 82. | "Our-Day" Fund, Bhopal ... ..  | 24,500 | 0  | 0 |
| 83. | Subscriptions for St. John's Ambulance Association ... ..                          | 1,000  | 0  | 0 |
| 84. | Subscriptions from Jagirdars, State servants and public for War Relief Fund ... .. | 81,624 | 14 | 3 |

---

*Assistance in material.*

|     |   |       |    |   |
|-----|---|-------|----|---|
| 85. | Tents for use of Expeditionary Force ... .. | 9,033 | 13 | 3 |
|-----|---|-------|----|---|

|  | Rs.   | A. | P. |
|--|-------|----|----|
| 86. Tents for use of Red Cross Hospital, Bombay,   | 2,544 | 0  | 9  |
| 87. St. John's Ambulance Association, Bombay, 500<br>copies of the <i>Quran</i> and 1,487 copies of<br>religious tracts for the use of Mahomedan<br>sick and wounded sepoy at London ... | 2,910 | 10 | 0  |
| 88. St. John's Ambulance Association, Bombay, 51<br>copies of <i>Quran</i> for the use of Mahomedan<br>sick and wounded sepoy at Bombay ...  | 177   | 0  | 0  |

*The 9th Bhopal Infantry.*

|  |        |   |   |
|--|--------|---|---|
| 89. Mittens, 109 pairs; comforters, 54; pairs of<br>socks, 87; scarves, 183; shirts, 48; mitts, 112;<br>coats, 36; balaclava cap, 10 ... | 15,807 | 5 | 5 |
|--|--------|---|---|

*The War Gifts Depot, Bombay.*

|  |  |  |  |
|--|--|--|--|
| 90. Socks, 1,302 pairs; mittens, 17 pairs; sleeping<br>sock, 1; bandages, 3,270; scarves, 14;<br>balaclava cap, 1. |  |  |  |
|--|--|--|--|

*Sepoy of the Indian Army.*

|                                     |  |  |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|--|--|
| 91. Comforters, 12; socks, 3 pairs. |  |  |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|--|--|

*Munitions manufactured in State Workshops.*

|   | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|---|--------|----|----|
| 92. Shells prepared by State Workshop for<br>Government ... | 7,537  | 8  | 6  |
| 93. Miscellaneous ...                                       | 10,000 | 0  | 0  |

Assistance given by Colonel Nawab Sir Mohammad Nasrulla

| Khan Bahadur, K.C.S.I., Heir Apparent—                       | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|--|--------|----|----|
| 1. One Fiat motor car ...                                    | 14,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 2. One Studebaker motor car ...                              | 8,900  | 0  | 0  |
| 3. Five Waler horses and 3 Arabs ...                         | 20,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 4. Three portable telephones and wire (25 miles<br>long) ... | 1,400  | 0  | 0  |

|  | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|--|----------|----|----|
| 5. Motor accessories ... ..  | 8,231    | 14 | 6  |
| 6. Fifty sets Red Cross post cards ...                             | 50       | 0  | 0  |
| 7. Invested in British War Loan ...                                | 50,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 8. Chair for invalid officers ...                                  | 800      | 0  | 0  |
| 9. Red Cross Fund ...  | 2,000    | 0  | 0  |
| 10. Lord Mayor's Fund ...  | 300      | 0  | 0  |
| 11. 4,160 maunds grass ...   | 5,640    | 0  | 0  |
| 12. War Relief Fund ...  | 269      | 3  | 0  |
| 13. Invested in Postal Cash Certificates ...                       | 1,25,700 | 0  | 0  |
| 14. Invested in Postal Cash Certificates ...                       | 10,300   | 0  | 0  |
| 15. 650 maunds fuel given to Remount Depôt,<br>Sehore ... ..       | 500      | 0  | 0  |
| 16. Twenty "Our-Day" tickets ...                                   | 80       | 0  | 0  |
| 17. Contribution towards the general expenses<br>of the war ... .. | 20,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 18. Contribution towards the general expenses<br>of the war ... .. | 5,000    | 0  | 0  |
| 19. Boats ... ..   | 3,500    | 0  | 0  |
| 20. Contribution towards the general expenses<br>of the war ... .. | 10,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 21. "Our-Day" Fund ... ..  | 500      | 0  | 0  |

Assistance given by Brigadier-General Nawab Mohammad Obaidulla Khan Bahadur, C.S.I., A.D.-C., Her Highness's second son—

|                                     | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|-------------------------------------|----------|----|----|
| 1. One Rolls Royce motor car ... .. | 25,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 2. Two Wolseley motor cars ... ..   | 16,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 3. Horses ... ..                    | 1,20,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 4. Investment in War Loan ... ..    | 75,000   | 0  | 0  |

Assistance given by Lieut.-Colonel Nawabzada Iftikhar-ul-mulk Mohammad Hamid-ul-la Khan Bahadur, B.A., Chief Secretary, Bhopal Government, and his wife, Shah Bano Begam Saheba (H. H.'s youngest son.)—



H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF RATLAM,



H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF CHATTARPUR.



|    |   |        | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|----|---|--------|----------|----|----|
| 1. | National War Loan, 1915   | ... .. | 50,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 2. | Indian War Loan, 1917   | ... .. | 1,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 3. | Children's Jewel Fund, London, from Shah<br>Bano Begam Saheba   | ... .. | 750      | 0  | 0  |
| 4. | Contribution from Nawabzada Iftikhar-ul-mulk,<br>Lieut.-Colonel Mohammad Hamid-ul-la<br>Khan Bahadur, B. A., Chief Secretary,<br>towards St. John's Ambulance Association<br>of Jerusalem | ... .. | 1,500    | 0  | 0  |
| 5. | 7,600 handkerchiefs and 1,500 bedsheets were<br>given to St. John's Ambulance Association<br>by Shah Bano Begam Saheba  | ... .. | 12,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 6. | Investment to Indian War Loan, in 1918  | ... .. | 50,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 7. | Grass given for the use of the Government<br>horses, etc.   | ... .. | 40,000   | 0  | 0  |

In recognition of the above service the Nawabzada has recently had the title of C.S.I. conferred on him by Government.

#### CHATTARPUR.

Chattarpur, in Central India, has an area of 1,118 square miles and a population of 166,985 with an annual gross revenue of about Rs. 4,15,000. The present ruler of the State is His Highness Maharaja Viswanath Singh Bahadur, who was born in 1866, and was invested with full ruling powers in 1887. The title of Maharaja was conferred in 1897. His Highness is entitled to a salute of eleven guns. The following is a brief statement of the War contributions of the State :—

|                              |        |     | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|------------------------------|--------|-----|--------|----|----|
| War Loan                     | ... .. | ... | 90,000 | 0  | 0  |
| War Relief Fund              | ... .. | ... | 33,288 | 1  | 6  |
| War Loan through Post Office | ... .. | ... | 6,000  | 0  | 0  |
| Red Cross Fund               | ... .. | ... | 2,580  | 0  | 0  |
| War Lottery                  | ... .. | ... | 10,060 | 9  | 0  |
| Motor Ambulance Fund         | ... .. | ... | 8,500  | 0  | 0  |

|  |     |     | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|--|-----|-----|----------|----|----|
| Post Office Cash Certificates purchased by the |     |     |          |    |    |
| public .. ...                                  | ... | ... | 11,129   | 0  | 0  |
| Tents, three in number.                        |     |     |          |    |    |
| Recruiting expenses ...                        | ... | ... | 830      | 2  | 7½ |
| Kitchener's Memorial Fund ...                  | ... | ... | 404      | 0  | 0  |
|  |     |     | <hr/>    |    |    |
| TOTAL  | ... | ... | 1,62,291 | 13 | 1½ |

#### JAORA.

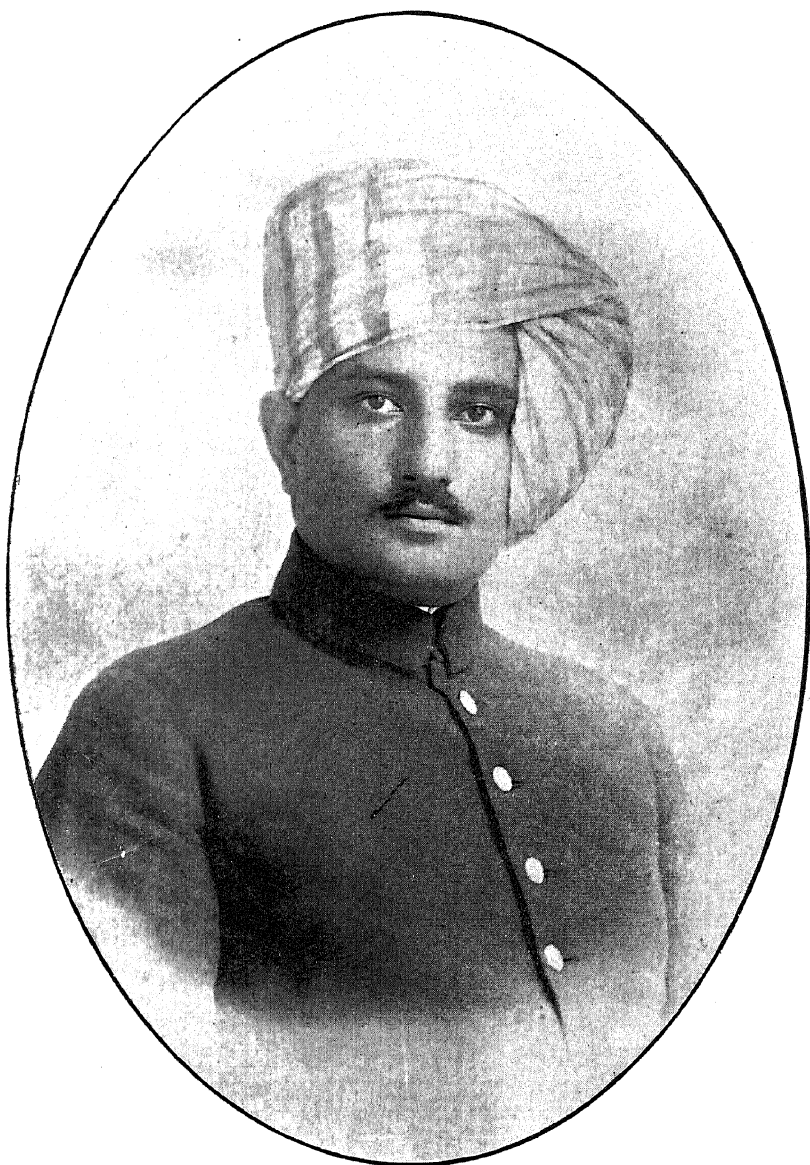
Jaora is a State in the Malwa Agency, with an area of 600 square miles and a population of nearly a lakh of inhabitants. The State was founded by an Afghan warrior who came down to India early in the 19th century in search of adventure and carved out a small state for himself. The present Ruler of the State is H. H. Sir Iftikhar Ali Khan Bahadur, K.C.I.E., who was born in the year 1883.

Soon after the outbreak of the war, His Highness offered the entire resources of the State to the Government of India and also his personal services. The Government accepted his offer of personal service and appointed him as an additional member attached to the Expeditionary Force which left India for the western front. The illness and unfortunate death of the heir-apparent and also his own indifferent health, however, prevented him from realizing his cherished object of seeing personal service in the war, to his great disappointment.

The following statement represents the contributions made by the State for war purposes:—

|  | Rs.      |
|--|----------|
| 1. For machine-guns ...                  | 6,000    |
| For other war purposes ...               | 30,000   |
|  | <hr/>    |
|  | 36,000   |
| 2. State contributions and donations for |          |
| charities and Indian Relief Fund...      | 1,33,300 |





THE CHIEF OF KHLCHIPUR.

|                                    |          |
|------------------------------------|----------|
| 3. War Loan subscriptions :—       | Rs.      |
| 1st War Loan ...                   | 2,14,000 |
| 2nd War Loan ...                   | 50,000   |
|                                    | <hr/>    |
|                                    | 2,64,000 |
| 4. By the subjects of the State :— |          |
| 1st War Loan ...                   | 1,38,440 |
| 2nd War Loan ...                   | 7,172    |
|                                    | <hr/>    |
| TOTAL ...                          | 1,45,612 |

Considering that the annual income of the State is 10 lakhs of rupees, it will be seen that the contribution was quite creditable considering the resources of the State. It need hardly be said His Highness has always been very enthusiastic in the discharge of his duties to the paramount Power in India.

#### KILCHIPUR.

The Chiefship of Kilchipur is in the Bhopal Agency of Central India, and its foundation dates from the beginning of the sixteenth century.

The Chiefs of Kilchipur are Khichi Rajputs of the Chauhan clan and are descended from Durjan Sal, a Khichi Chief. The State was founded in 1544 by Ugrasen, who was forced by family dissensions to migrate from the Khichi capital of Gagraun. He was granted territory which included the parganas of Zirapur and Machalpur, now part of Indore, and Shujalpur, now in Gwalior. In 1770 the Chief was forced to make terms with Sindhia and his territories were taken from him. In 1819, at the request of the Gwalior Darbar, the succession was settled by the British Government and Dewan Sher Singh was placed on the *gaddi*.

The present Chief of the State is Rao Bahadur Durjan Sal Singh, who was born on the 26th August, 1897, and invested with full ruling powers in 1918, after the completion of his educational career at the Daly College, Indore.

The State supplied 36 recruits to the Indian Army, encouraging recruiting by various concessions. The contributions to the War Funds amounted to more than Rs. 10,000, while the investment in the War Loan was Rs. 1,86,900. The subjects contributed Rs. 34,264 to the various War Funds. It is interesting to note that the total contributions of the State for war purposes during the entire period of the war amounted to 103 per cent. of the average annual revenue.

---

#### ORCHA.

Orcha, in Central India, has an area of 2,080 square miles and a population of 330,032, ninety-four per cent. of whom are Hindus. The normal revenue of the State is Rs. 7,40,000, besides Rs. 1,60,000, assigned to the Jagirdar. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Saramad-i-Rajai Bundelkhand Maharaja Mahendra Sawai Bahadur Sir Partap Singh, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., who was born in 1884.

The Maharaja of Orcha is the head of the Bundela family of Garwar Rajputs, which has provided rulers for Panna, Dattia, Ajaigarh, Charkhari, Bijawar, Sarila, Jigni, Jaso, Lughasi and other Bundelkhand Chiefships. Legend has it that the Garwar Rajputs were rulers at Benares in pre-historical times. When the Mahomedans subverted that throne, Hem Kuru Pancham, at that time Chief of the clan, proceeded westward. His son, Bir Singh, took the clan name of Bundela, by which name the family and country (Bundelkhand) have ever since been known. Bir Singh settled at Man Mahoni in the thirteenth century.

The family extended its possessions southward during the next hundred years, and a descendant (Sanpal) took possession of Korar, east of Jhansi, in the fourteenth century. In 1532, Rudra Pratap, then Chief of the Bundelas, founded Orcha. From his younger son, Udayjit, sprang the families of the Eastern Bundelas (Panna, Ajaigarh, etc.), whilst Maktur Sah, the elder son, was the ancestor of the Chiefs of Orcha, Dattia, and other Western States. His son, Raja Bir Singh Deo, was famous in the reigns of Akbar and Jehangir and was the founder of many great public works, as, for example, the palace





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF ORCHA.



forts of Orcha and Dattia, the Chaturbujh temple and the huge cenotaph at Orcha. Orcha was the only Bundeli State that did not fall into the hands of the Peshwas, though they succeeded in dismembering it by conquering Jhansi and forming it into a new and powerful State.

When Bundelkhand passed into British control, Raja Vikramaditya Mahendra was Chief of Orcha, and by a treaty made in 1812, he became a feudatory of the British power. He died in 1834, and, after many disputes, was succeeded by his brother, Tej Singh, (1834-41). The next Chief (Sugan Singh) died in 1852 and was followed by Hamir Singh (1852-74). He was succeeded by his brother Pratap Singh, the present Chief.

A British Officer, Major A. Mayne, was at first deputed to manage the State. But in June, 1874, the administration was placed in the Chief's hands, the British Officer being withdrawn in 1876.

In 1886 Maharaja Pratap Singh received the hereditary distinction of "Saranad-i-Bundelkhand": in 1894, he was created Knight Commander of the Order of the Indian Empire; in 1900 he was raised to **Knight Grand Commander** of the same Order: in 1906 he was given the distinction of **Knight Commander** of the Order of the Star of India. In 1903 His Highness attended the Imperial Darbar at Delhi, receiving the Gold Commemorative Medal. He enjoys the honour of a personal salute of seventeen guns, the ordinary salute attaching to the Chieftainship being fifteen guns.

During the famine of 1897, extensive works were inaugurated at the instance of the Maharaja, and a sum of over ten lakhs was expended on relief of various kinds, a large amount of land revenue being also remitted. Again, in the 1905 famine His Highness ordered advances to be freely made to cultivators, and great leniency was shown in recovering advances made for seed-grain, etc., the same leniency being also shown in recovering the land revenue. This famine cost His Highness over two and a half lakhs. The Chief is greatly interested in the education of girls, and the school which he started in 1875, was the first for females in Bundelkhand. It is due

to the persistent efforts of His Highness that so large a proportion of the girls in his State are under instruction. All education in the State is free, pupils being even supplied with books, and their expenses are defrayed when they go up for the University Examination.

The following statement represents the financial contributions by the State for war purposes:—

|  | Rs.       | A. | P. |
|--|-----------|----|----|
| National Relief Fund                     | ... 6,000 | 0  | 0  |
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund              | ... 5,000 | 0  | 0  |
| St John's Ambulance Fund                 | ... 3,750 | 0  | 0  |
| "Our-Day," His Highness's contribution   | ... 2,000 | 0  | 0  |
| "Our-Day" Subjects' contribution         | ... 6,446 | 2  | 6  |
| Silver Wedding Fund, Her Highness        | ... 2,000 | 0  | 0  |
| Silver Wedding Fund, ladies of the State | ... 1,000 | 0  | 0  |
| Expenses incurred in recruiting work     | ... 4,000 | 0  | 0  |

The State supplied 47 recruits, combatants and non-combatants.

#### PIPLODA.

Piploda is a Chiefship in Malwa under the Central India Agency. It is situated on the Eastern border of Rajputana, bordering upon the Partabgarh State territory on the West, North, South, and East by the Gwalior Territory. The area is 69 square miles and the population, according to the last Census, was 8,000 souls. The annual income is Rs. 1,20,000 including *Bhuiyats* and other *Inam* holdings. The present Chief, R. Kesri Singhji Sahib, is thirteenth in descent from the founder of the Piploda Estate. He was installed in 1889 and was invested with ruling powers of administration by the Hon'ble the Agent to the Governor-General in Central India in 1893. Since that time the administration has been carried on by him. He has introduced a great many useful and necessary reforms in the State. The Chief offered his personal services in the China War and also in the present Great War of Europe. He invested in the War Loan and contributed to the various War Funds. He laid the whole resources of his State at the disposal of the British Government in the war.



THE CHIEF OF PIPLODA.



H. H. THE LATE MAHARAJA OF REWA.



H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF REWA.

I. S. V. [



## REWAH.

The State of Rewah in the Central India Agency has an area of 13,000 square miles and a population of 1,513,299 souls. The rulers of the State are of the Baghel Rajputs descended from the Solanki clan, who originally came from Guzerat. The State came under the British protection in 1812, and for valuable services in the Indian Mutiny, some of the territories of which the State had been deprived by the Mahrattas were restored.

The ruler of the State during almost the entire period of the war was His Highness the late Maharaja Sir Venkataraman Singh, G.C.S.I., who was born in 1876 and died in 1918. The present ruler of the State is His Highness Maharaja Gulab Sinhji Bahadur, born on the 13th March, 1903. His Highness has had a good education in Hindi, in Sanskrit, and in English under the care of his late lamented father and also under various tutors, Indian and European, and has been at the Daly College, Indore.

Soon after the outbreak of the war, His Highness the late Maharaja Bahadur placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Imperial Government. He offered the services of all his troops as well as his own personal services in the cause of the war. His Highness joined H. H. the Maharaja of Gwalior and other Ruling Princes in equipping and maintaining the Hospital Ship *Loyalty*.

His Highness presented three aeroplanes to the various theatres of war, the aeroplanes being called *Rewah*, *Banahra*, and *Baghel*. In addition, His Highness made an appeal to all the Solanki Chiefs and Thakores in India to supply an Aeroplane Squadron for war purposes and as a result, two more aeroplanes were supplied for the war. The aeroplanes supplied by His Highness were also kept in repair at the expense of His Highness himself during the period of the war.

The State supplied horses to the Government for war purposes. A military representative of the Government selected horses from the State Army: 81 in 1914, and 18 more in 1916. His Highness also

subscribed liberally towards the purchase of comforts for the Army, a number of kit-bags to soldiers being among the things supplied by the State. Her Highness the Dowager Maharani of the State subscribed almost immediately on the outbreak of the war, Rs. 1,000 for comforts for the Red Cross Fund. 500 copies of the *Ramayana* of Tulsi Das were forwarded to the theatres of war, for the use of Hindu Sepoys. One thousand bags of gram were supplied to the Army in 1918.

His Highness subscribed liberally to the various War Funds and also invested heavily in the War Loan, the most important item among the financial contributions being a sum of Rs. 2,00,000 paid towards the expenses of the war in May, 1918.

---

SITAMAU.

The following contributions were made by the State and its subjects, to the various War Funds:—

|   | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|---|----------|----|----|
| The Imperial Indian Relief Fund ... ..  | 8,704    | 0  | 0  |
| The 1st War Loan ... ..   | 1,27,334 | 4  | 0  |
| Two Coronation tents worth Rs. 800 for Field hospital use ... ..  | 800      | 0  | 0  |
| Towards the general expenses of the war ...   | 10,000   | 0  | 0  |
| The purchase of motor cars to be used for the purpose of giving drives to convalescent patients at War Hospitals ... .. | 10,000   | 0  | 0  |
| The Kitchener Memorial Fund ... ..  | 500      | 0  | 0  |
| The Prince of Wales's Fund ... ..   | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |
| The St. John's Ambulance Fund ... ..  | 250      | 0  | 0  |
| The 2nd War Loan ... ..   | 20,000   | 0  | 0  |
| The Red Cross Funds including those of France, Italy, and Servia ... ..   | 1,023    | 0  | 0  |
| "Our-Day" ... ..  | 800      | 0  | 0  |
| The St. John's Ambulance Fund ... ..  | 562      | 0  | 0  |
| The Silver Wedding Fund ... ..  | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |





H.H. THE RAJA OF SITAMAU.



The State also furnished 144 recruits to the Army. The present ruler of the State, which is in the Central India Agency, is His Highness Sir Rajaram Singh. His Highness is descended from the Rahtore House of Kachi Baroda and was born in 1880 and was selected, in default of direct issue, by the Government of India in 1900. His Highness is a Hindi and Sanskrit poet.

#### BAONI STATE.

Baoni is the only Mahomedan State in the Bundelkhand Agency of Central India. It lies in the extreme Northern portion of Bundelkhand near Kalpi. Its area is 121 square miles and the revenue from all sources amounts to nearly two lakhs. The population according to the Census of 1921 is 19,732.

The State was founded by Nawab Ghazi-ud-din Khan Feroz Jang in 1784. It is held under a *sanad* granted by the Peshwa of Poona. When Bundelkhand passed under British control the British Government recognized the *sanad* granted by the Peshwa.

The present Chief, Azam-ul-Umara. Iftikhar-ud-Daula, Imadul-Mulk Sahib-i-Jah, Mihun Sardar His Highness Nawab Mohammad Mushtaq-ul-Hasan Khan Bahadur Safdar Jang is the 8th ruler in direct descent. He received his education at the Mayo College at Ajmer and the Daly College at Indore and was invested with full ruling powers on the 7th February, 1918.

His Highness takes keen interest in the administration of his State and takes great care to promote the well-being and prosperity of his subjects.

His Highness enjoys full civil and criminal powers and is entitled to a hereditary salute of 11 guns and return visit from the Viceroy.

The Baoni State made the following contributions during the period of the War:—

|                             |     |     | Rs.    |
|-----------------------------|-----|-----|--------|
| Indian Imperial Relief Fund | ... | ... | 10,786 |
| Kitchener Memorial Fund     | ... | ... | 250    |

|                           |     |     | Rs.    |
|---------------------------|-----|-----|--------|
| St. John's Ambulance Fund | ... | ... | 975    |
| "Our-Day" Fund            | ... | ... | 11,051 |
| Silver Wedding Fund       | ... | ..  | 500    |
| Peace Celebrations        | ... | ... | 582    |
| TOTAL                     |     |     | 24,144 |

Besides this the State purchased a War Bond of the value of Rs. 50,000 and the Baoni people purchased Cash Certificates of the total value of Rs. 22,823.

#### SAMTHAR STATE.

Samthar State is one of the three treaty States of the Bundelkhand and Political charge in the Central India Agency. It has an area of about 180 square miles with a population of 33,220 according to the Census of 1921. Average rainfall of the State is 30 inches. The gross revenue of the State is about four lakhs of rupees. No tribute to any sister State or British Government is paid.

Ruling Chief of the State is His Highness Maharaja Sir Bir Singh Deo Sahib Bahadur, K.C.I.E., holder of Kaiser-i-Hind Gold Medal. The Maharaja, who exercises full administrative powers, controls the affairs of the State. The Chief is entitled to a salute of 11 guns.

Multi Railway Station on G. I. P. Railway is nearest to the Capital, at a distance of 8 miles.

The State is managed by Kunwar Sujan Singh Dewan; Pandit Kedar Nath Kao, Personal Assistant to His Highness, exercising the powers of Judicial and Civil Appellate Court; Raja Jagat Raj Bahadur, Chief Judicial Officer, Rao Bahadur Deo Singh, Commanding Officer and State Engineer; Chawand Rai Mahtab Singh, Revenue Officer; Daojoo Roshan Singh, Artillery Officer.

In addition to various contributions given in the war crisis His Highness Maharaja Sahib Bahadur contributed a sum of





NAWAB SARWAR ALI KHAN KURWAI STATE.

Rs. 10,500 as donation for war expenses and sent two tents for field service. Besides other necessary help, the Darbar gave seventeen recruits for war services to the Government.

---

#### KURWAI.

Kurwai is one of the mediatised chiefships within the Political charge of the British Agent in Bhopal. In the year 1713 A. D. Mohammad Diler Khan, an Afghan adventurer from Tirah, belonging to the Feroz Khel clan, seized Kurwai and some of the surrounding villages. Later on, in return for certain services he was granted 31 parganas by the Emperor. Diler Khan is said to have been murdered by Dost Mohammad Khan of Bhopal. The chiefship was, during the decline of the Moghul Empire, equal in size and strength to Bhopal, if not larger, but during the Mahratta period it rapidly declined, although it always remained independent. The assistance rendered by the Chief to Colonel Goddard in 1783 A. D., specially marked out Kurwai as an object of Mahratta persecution. In 1818 A. D. the State was hard pressed and the Nawab applied to the Political Agent at Bhopal for aid against the Sindhia, which was granted.

Nawab Mohammad Diler Khan was succeeded by his son, Mohammad Izzat Khan, who died in 1753 A. D., having made over the two parganas of Basoda and Mohammadgarh to his brother, Ahsanullah Khan. Mohammad Izzat Khan was succeeded by Mohammad Hurmat Khan, who died in 1784 A. D. and was succeeded by his second son, Mohammad Akbar Khan, who seized the State and allowed an annuity of Rs. 6,000 to his brother, Iradat Mohammad Khan. Mohammad Akbar Khan died in 1839 A. D. and was followed successively by his sons, Muzaffar Khan (1839-1859 A. D.) and Najaf Khan (1859-1887 A. D.). The latter was a very successful ruler and enjoyed a personal salute of 9 guns. Nawab Mohammad Najaf Khan died without male issue and his grandson Munawar Ali Khan, a minor, succeeded him in 1887 A. D. The administration of the State, during his minority, was conducted by his father, Khan Bahadur Mian Mazhar Ali Khan. Munawar Ali Khan was invested

with ruling powers in 1892 A. D., but owing to debts exceeding two lakhs of rupees, the State soon had to be again taken under management. Nawab Munawar Ali Khan died in 1895 A. D. and was succeeded by his younger brother, Nawab Mohammad Yakub Ali Khan. The latter died in the prime of his life in October, 1906, A. D. leaving a son and heir, Nawab Sarwar Ali Khan, who was born on the 1st December, 1901, A. D. He was installed on the *gaddi* on the 15th April, 1907, A. D. The State again came under British management, and Munshi Mohammad Rahmatullah, the Superintendent, conducts the administration under the supervision of the Political Agent in Bhopal. The State is independent of any other Darbar and pays no tribute to Government or to any other State. The minor Nawab is twenty years old and was educated at the Daly College, Indore, and the Mayo College, Ajmer, where he gained distinction both in studies and games winning two Viceroy's medals by standing first in all the diplomas and for being the best all-round athlete at his College. He also won various other prizes. He subsequently passed on to Sandhurst as a selected candidate, where he spent two years at his studies. He has lately returned to India and has been temporarily attached to the Worcestershire Regiment at Nasirabad. He is the first Indian Chief to have passed out of Sandhurst and gained His Majesty the King's Commission.

The area of this State is 144 square miles. Its population, according to the Census of 1921 A. D., is 19,851, and the revenue is about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  lakhs of rupees.

Name (with title, etc.) 2nd Lieutenant Nawab Sarwar Ali Khan.

Address .. Temporarily attached to Worcestershire Regiment, Nasirabad (Rajputana).

Town ... Kurwai, District and Province, Central India.

Born in the year ... 1st December, 1901.

Education career ... Educated at the Daly College, Indore and the Mayo College, Ajmer, where he won



two Viceroy's Medals for heading all the Diplomas and being the best all round athlete at his College. He won various other prizes and cups. He is a good cricketer and won his hockey blue at Sandhurst, to which institution he subsequently passed on as a selected candidate and received the King's Commission, being the first Indian Chief to have got that honour through Sandhurst.

|                                      |     |   |          |
|--------------------------------------|-----|---|----------|
| Active career                        | ... | Temporarily attached to the Worcestershire Regiment at Nasirabad (Rajputana). |          |
| Public Services                      | ... | Commissioned Officer in the British Army.                                     |          |
| Titles awarded with dates.           |     | 2nd Lieutenant (Indian Army, Unattached)<br>14th July, 1921.                  |          |
| Landed property                      | ... | The Mediatized State of Kurwai, C. I.   |          |
|                                      |     | Rs.   |          |
| Important subscriptions              | ... | ...   | 350      |
| Subscriptions to different War Funds |     | ...   | 5,442    |
| War Loan                             | ... | ...   | 1,65,451 |

#### HIS HIGHNESS MAHARAJA SAWAI BHOPAL SINGH SAHEB BAHADUR OF AJAIGARH.

Ajaigarh is a Rajput Sanad State in the Bundelkhand Political Agency, whose rulers are descended, like those of Charkhari, Bijawar, and Sarila, from the famous Chhatrasal. Its area is 802 square miles while the population is 84,790 (according to the Census of 1921). The income of the State is about 4 lakhs. The country is hilly, and the soil fairly fertile. The hereditary title of the Ruling Prince is "Maharaja Sawai." The present ruler of the State is His Highness Maharaja Sawai Bhopal Singh Saheb Bahadur. He was born in 1866, got his education in the Raj Kumar College at Nowgong, Bundelkhand, Central India. He succeeded his late father Maharaja Sawai Sir Ranjore Singh Saheb

Bahadur, K.C.I.E., on 6th June, 1919. Since his accession he engaged himself in improving his State by selecting capable officials, giving Taccavis and other kinds of monetary help to the poor cultivators of the State and by constructing bunds, roads, and pucca wells. His chief endeavour has been to regulate his finances, to stop corruption and to be strictly just in his dealings with his subjects. He exercises full ruling powers, also civil and criminal powers, with certain restrictions. He enjoys a salute of 11 guns. No tribute is paid to the British Government. He was married only once and got only one son named Sawai Raja Bahadur Punya Pratap Singh Saheb, born on Bhadon Sudi 4th, Sambat 1941, who is the heir-apparent. Sawai Raja Bahadur has two sons and three daughters. His Highness is very particular about the education of the Raj Kumars and the other members of his family and his subjects generally.

The Military and Police force of the State numbers 565, including Infantry, Cavalry, and Artillery.

There are two Post Offices in the State, one at Ajaigarh and the other at Padariatola. Other Tehsils, Thanas and villages are served by special State Postal Agency. A Telegraph Office is shortly expected to be established at Ajaigarh. At present the only Telegraph Office in the State is at Padaria. Messages for Ajaigarh are received by post from the Panna Telegraph Office.

The nearest railway station from Ajaigarh is Atarra, a distance of 35 miles. The next station is Banda, a distance of 55 miles. Both are on the G. I. P. Railway. A lorry plies on alternate days from Atarra and Banda to within 10 miles of Ajaigarh. People coming from the Jubbulpore or the Allahabad side generally get down at Sutna (E. I. R.), 65 miles, whence they drive in a lorry to Panna or in a State motor direct to Ajaigarh.

---

#### WAR SERVICES.

1. Ten recruits were sent to Labour Corps by the State.
2. Total amount invested in the War Loan is Rs. 1,25,035-4-0 from Ajaigarh State.

3. One tent sent to St. John's Ambulance Association.
4. Recruits who came back got, each rent-free for life, land bearing rent at Rs. 25 per annum. If there was delay in granting them this rent-free plot, each was allowed from the date of return up to the date of grant Rs. 25 annually in cash.
5. Cash contributions aggregating Rs. 14,793-11-9.

---

#### DEWAS STATE 2.

There are two States of the name of Dewas with their capitals at the town of the same name. They came into being at one and the same time. They are Treaty States. The jurisdictions of these States except as regards one pargana, which belongs to this State are, thanks to the peculiar circumstances of their origin, inextricably mixed up. The different administrations are facilitated by common understanding on various matters. These States are commonly, though erroneously, called the Senior and Junior Branch of the Dewas State.

2. The population of this State, according to the Census of 1921, is 66,998 souls, and of the Capital 6,492. The area of the State is 419.41 square miles.

3. The State is one of the principal States within the Political charge of the Political Agent in Malwa, whose headquarters are at Neemuch. Under the Treaty of Peace with the East India Company, made in 1818 by His Highness Raja Anandrao Puar, the State pays annually to the British Government Rs. 16,800 (Halli), now permanently turned into Rs. 14,237-4-7 British currency, in commutation of the expenses of troops.

4. Out of the total income of the State of Rs. 6,75,000 over Rs. 1,75,000 are alienated revenue.

5. The State does not pay tribute either to the Government of India or to any other State. The Ruler exercises full sovereign powers within the State and receives a salute of 15 guns from the British Government.

6. The present Ruler, His Highness Maharaja Sir Malhar Rao

Baba Saheb Puar, K.C.S.I., was born on the 18th August, 1877, and succeeded to the *gudli* in the year 1892, on the demise of his uncle and adoptive father, the late Ruler Narayan Rao Dada Saheb Puar.

7. His Highness was educated at the Daly College, Indore. Since his investiture with full powers in 1897, His Highness has always followed a progressive and liberal policy in the conduct of the administration. It may be said without the slightest deviation from the truth that His Highness was one of the first among the Rulers of Indian States to realize the need of a close association of the people in the management of State affairs, with this end in view there have been started Village Councils, Pargana Councils, and the Raja Sabha with various judicial and administrative powers. These bodies consist of elected representatives of the people. The Town Municipality has also large powers.

8. A scheme of compulsory education has been in force for many years, while Medical Relief, Agricultural and Industrial development have been receiving his constant attention. A scheme for the reclamation of criminal tribes has also been successfully tried.

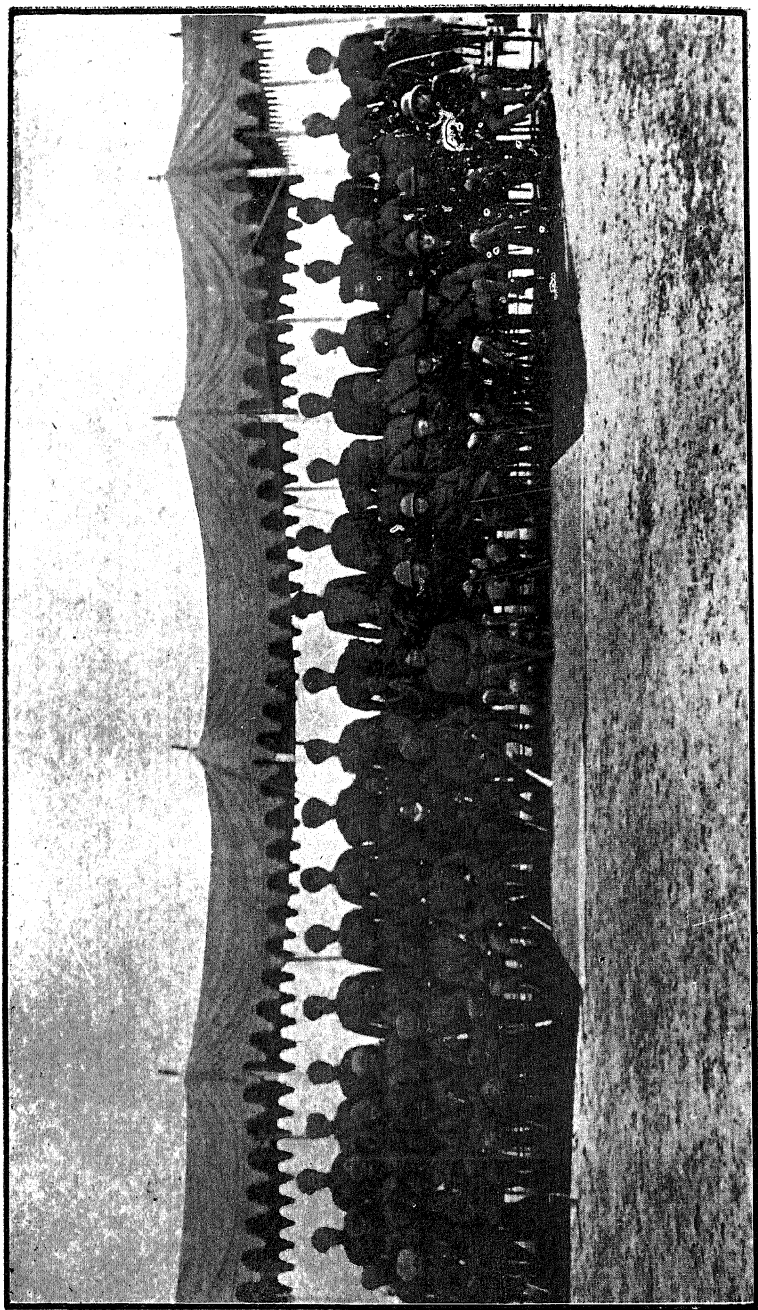
9. During the stress of the war His Highness's foresight and solicitude for the welfare of his subjects secured for the people a scheme of grain control that has obviated them from incalculable hardship and suffering.

10. His Highness has strained all the resources of his small State in rendering loyal and wholehearted help to the British Government during the war. A gift was made of Rs. 1,30,000 towards the cost of the war and War Bonds worth fifty thousand were purchased. A small body of recruits was sent to the Ambulance Corps. Liberal donations have also been made to the Imperial Relief Fund and other funds connected with the war.

11. His Highness received the Kaiser-i-Hind Medal in June 1912, and the insignia of the K.C.S.I. in 1917, and the hereditary distinction of 'Maharaja' was conferred on him in the year 1918.

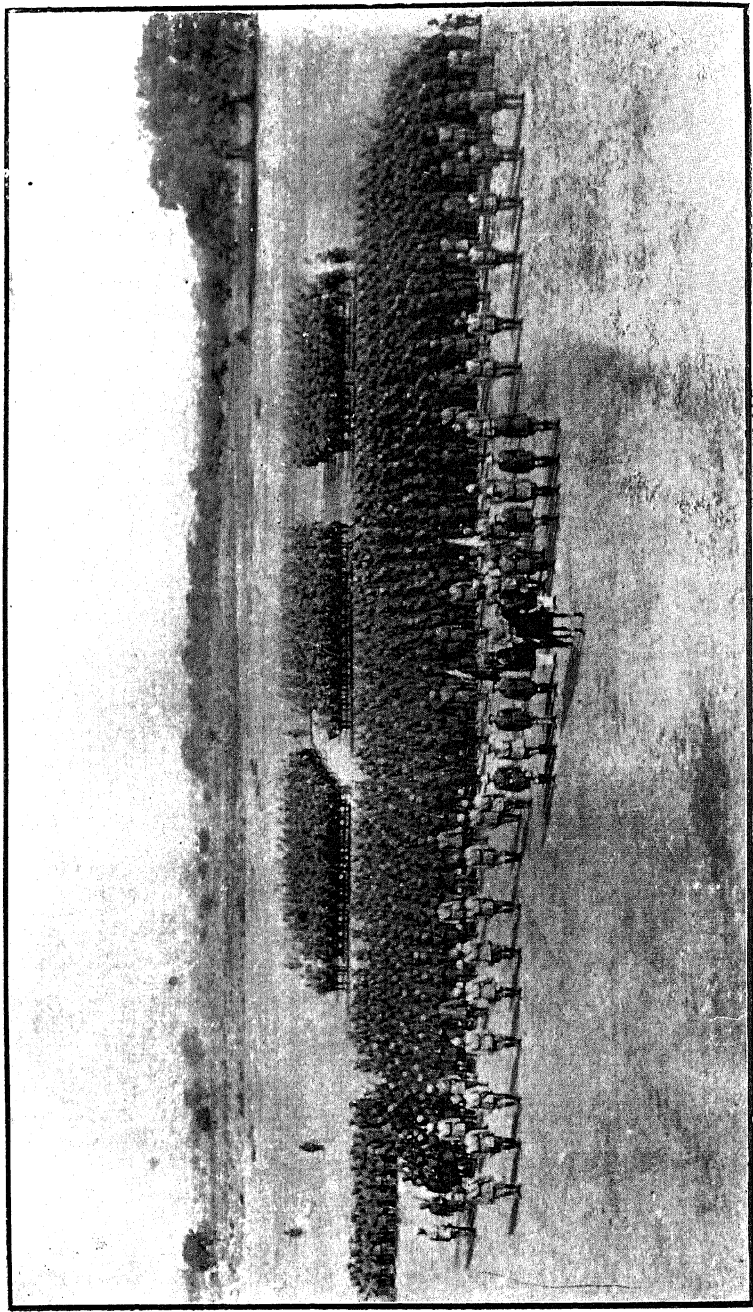
---





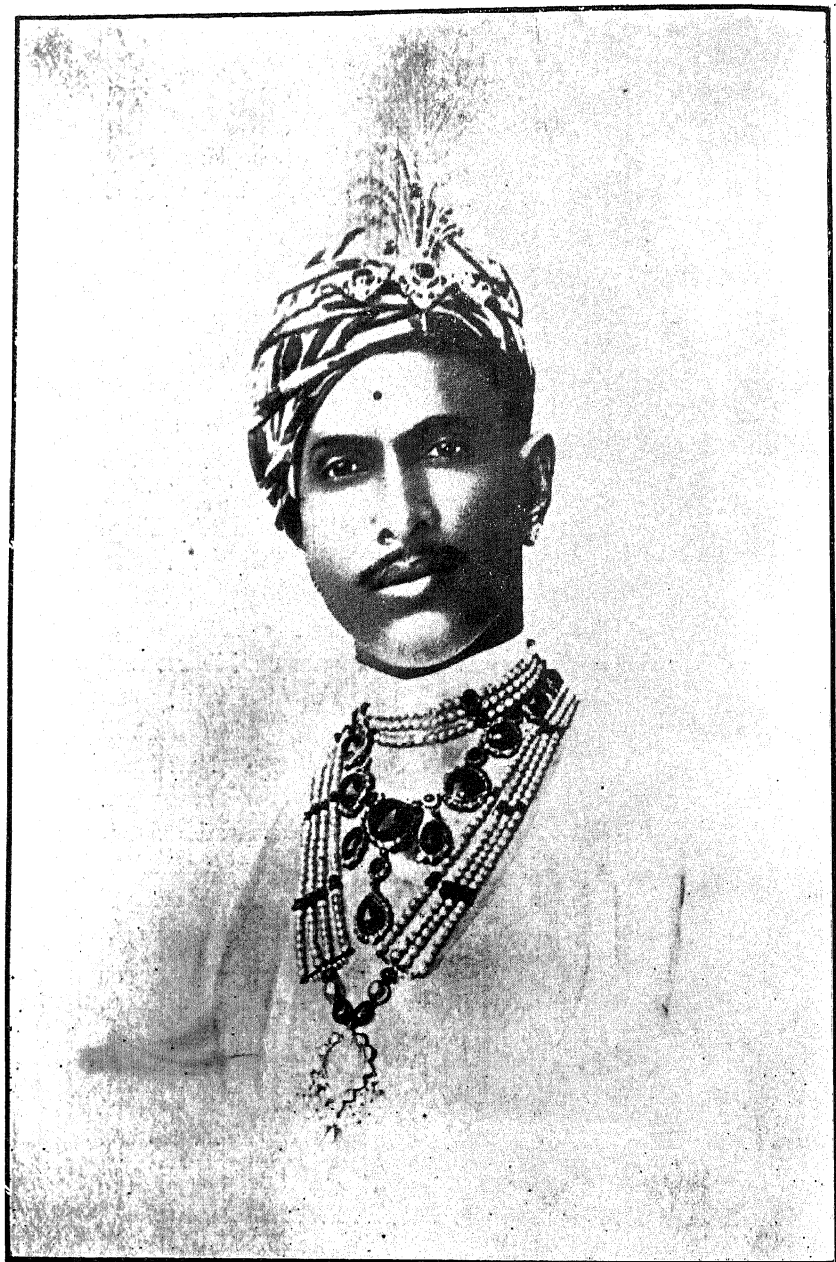
H. H. WITH OFFICERS AND STAFF OF THE IMPERIAL SERVICE TROOPS, ALWAR.











H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF ALWAR.

I. S. V. [p. 193]

## CHAPTER XV.

### RAJPUTANA.

#### ALWAR.

WITH an area of 3,141 square miles and a population of 791,688 persons, the State of Alwar is situated in the Kotah Jhalawar Agency of Rajputana. The annual income of the State is about 32 lakhs of rupees and the present ruler of the State is His Highness Lieut.-Col. Sewai Maharaja Sir Jaya Singhji Bahadur, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I., who was born in 1882 and succeeded to the *guldi* in 1903. The rulers belong to the Solar dynasty and are descended from Raja Udaya Karan, the common ancestor of the Houses of Alwar and Jaipur. The State maintains an Imperial Service Corps of Cavalry and of Infantry, besides an Irregular Force, the maintenance of which costs over one-sixth of the total revenue of the State.

Soon after the outbreak of war His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Imperial Government. Both the Imperial Service Regiments went on service overseas and the State supplied besides as many as 12,000 recruits to the British Army during the war. A number of distinctions were conferred on members of the Imperial Service Regiments of the State for gallantry on the field. The honours included several Indian Distinguished Service Medals and Orders of the British India. His Highness was the recipient of congratulatory messages and letters from the Commander-in-Chief and the Viceroy of India on the achievement of the Imperial Service Troops of the State. His Highness the Maharaja also gave liberal awards of money to those who had distinguished themselves in the field.

The following statement shows the total money contributions made by Alwar State :—

|  |     |    | Rs.       |
|--|-----|----|-----------|
| Extra expenditure since the beginning of the |     |    |           |
| War on Imperial Service Troops               | ... |    | 6,08,111* |
| Subscriptions                                | ... | .. | 2,06,400  |
| War Loan                                     | ... | .. | 15,20,800 |

No account of the war work of the Alwar State can be complete without reference to the inspiring speeches which His Highness delivered from time to time on the subject of the war inspiring enthusiasm for its cause not only in his subjects but also in those outside who had the privilege of reading them. The following words uttered in concluding his speech at the War Conference held in Delhi indicate the spirit actuating His Highness: "Before concluding I will say only a few more words: in this hall we hold the fair name and fame of India in our hands. Here we come to resolve to perform what we ought and hence we go to perform without fail what we resolve. The people will ask, 'what have you given,' and 'what have you asked for'? The answer can be summed up in one word, *Trust*. I may not be a British Indian, but I am an Indian, and as such I say that in this supreme hour of the need of the Empire for the fair name of the mother country this is the opportunity to close our ranks and to prove to the world that we can respond to trust and confidence in a manner which can become the envy of others. Then when sunshine comes again and the clouds of war disappear we shall have reason to look back upon a past on which we can await the verdict of history with legitimate pride and confidence. In the dutiful message which goes in reply to the message from the Throne we all combine in emphasizing once again our assurances of loyalty and attachment to the person of His Majesty and we send with it our prayers for victory."

---

\* Out of this amount a sum of Rs. 2,92,873 is recoverable from the Government of India.





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF BIKANER.

## BIKANER.

Major-General H. H. Maharaja Dhiraj Raj Rajeshwar Narendra Shiromani Sri Sir Gauga Sinhji Bahadur, G.C.S.I., cr. 1911; G.C.I.E., cr. 1907; (K.C.S.I., cr. 1904; K.C.I.E., cr. 1901) G.C.V.O., cr. 1919, G.B.E., (Military Division) cr. 1921; K.C.B., cr. 1918; A.D.C.; Grand Gordon of the Order of the Nile, cr. 1918; Hon. LL.D., Cambridge and Edinburgh; Donat of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem in England; son of Maharaj Sri Lall Sinhji Bahadur and adopted son of his own elder brother, his late Highness Maharaja Sri Dungar Sinhji Bahadur; born 3rd October, 1880; educated at the Mayo College, Ajmer; m. 1897; is one of the Ruling Princes of India (succeeded 31st August, 1887) and is entitled to a salute of 19 guns. Two sons. One daughter. Invested with full ruling powers, 1898, granted Hon Commission of Major in the British Army, 1900, and attached to 2nd Bengal Lancers; promoted Lieut.-Col. 1909, Col. 1910, Major-General 1917; served with the British Army in China in command of the Bikaner Camel Corps, 1901 (medal, despatches, K.C.I.E.), served in European War, 1914-1915, in France and in Egypt (despatches, France and Egypt, K.C.B., Major-General, 1914 Bronze Star, Grand Gordon of the Order of the Nile, G.B.E., Military Division). Awarded Gold Medal (1st Class) of Kaiser-i-Hind for public service in India during Great Famine of 1899-1900; attended the Coronation of King Edward VII, 1902, and of King George V, 1911, Hon. A.-D.-C. to H. R. H. the Prince of Wales, 1902, A.-D.-C. to H. I. M. the King-Emperor since 1910. Was selected as one of the three representatives of India at the Imperial War Cabinet and Conference, 1917. Received the Freedom of the Cities of London, Edinburgh, Manchester, and Bristol. Was selected again as one of the two representatives of India at the Imperial War Cabinet and the Peace Conference, 1919; elected Chancellor, Chamber of Princes, 1921.

Is a patron of the Benares Hindu University and Sri Bharat Dharm Mahamandal, Benares; Vice-President of the East Indian Association, London; the Royal Colonial Institute, London; the Indian Gymkhana Club, London; the Indian Army Temperance

Association, Simla ; a Member of the General Council of the Mayo College, Ajmer ; the Managing Committee of the Mayo College, Ajmer ; the General Council of the Daly College, Indore ; the Indian Society, London ; the Indian Society of Oriental Art, Calcutta ; the Bombay Natural History, Bombay ; and the First Member of the Indian Red Cross Society ; the Willingdon Sports Club Committee, Bombay, and the Benares Hindu University Court, Benares. A Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, London.

Is a Freemason ; Past Master of Lodge "Rajputana," Abu ; a Deputy District Grand Master of the District Grand Lodge, Bombay ; Founder and Scribe E. of the Royal Arch Chapter "Sir Ganga Singh," Abu ; and a Member of the Royal Arch Chapter, Ajmer, and the Phulkian Lodge, Patiala.

Heir-Apparent : Captain Maharaj-Kumar Sri Sadul Sinhji Bahadur, B. 7th September, 1902 ; second son Maharaj Sri Bijey Sinhji Bahadur, B. 29th March, 1909.

Recreations : Polo, Racquets, Tennis, Motoring, Big game shooting.

Club : Marlborough, London ; Western India Turf, Bombay ; Willingdon Sports, Bombay ; and the Rajputana, Abu.

Address : Bikaner, Rajputana, India.

The State of Bikaner in Rajputana has an area of 23,311 square miles and a population of 700,983 souls and is the second largest State in Rajputana. The State has come into considerable prominence in recent years owing to the enlightened administration of the present Ruler of the State, Major-General His Highness Maharajadhiraj Rajeswar Narendra Seromani Sri Sir Ganga Sinhji Bahadur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O., K.C.B., LL.D., D.C.L., Dean of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. His Highness was invested with full ruling powers in 1898, he has seen service in the British Army on various occasions, in China in 1901 in Command of the Bikaner Camel Corps and again in the recent war. Immediately on the outbreak of the war His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Government and also offered his personal

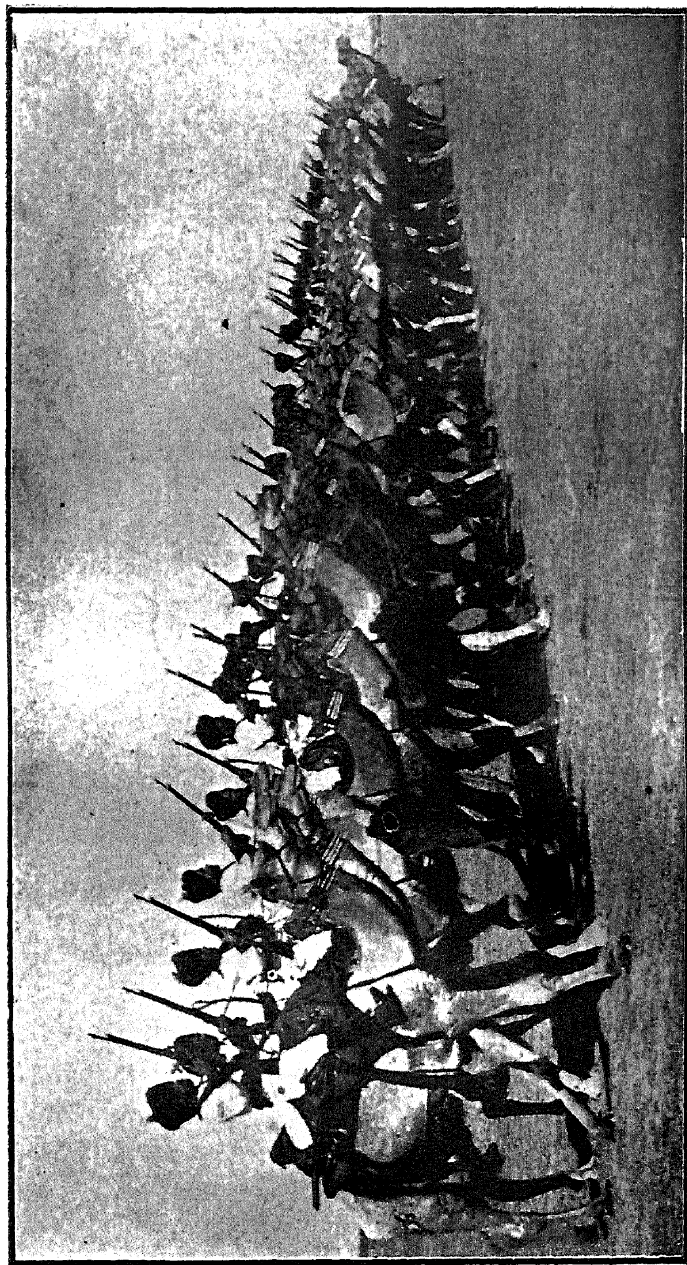


INDIAN STATES VOLUME.



COMMANDANT BIKANEER CAMELS CORPS. [p. 196]





BIKANEER CAMEL CORPS COMMANDED BY H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF BIKANEER.



services. His Highness had the great distinction of being selected to be one of the three representatives of India at the Imperial War Cabinet and Conference of 1917, and received the Freedom of the Cities of London, Edinburgh, Manchester, and Bristol. As one of the two representatives of India at the Imperial Peace Conference, he had the great privilege of affixing his signature to all the important documents of the Peace Treaties. In September, 1919, on the coming of age of the heir-apparent, Lieutenant Maharaj Kumar Sri Sadul Singhji Bahadur, His Highness appointed him Chief Minister and President of the Council of the State, so as to associate him intimately with the administration of the State.

The services of the State during the war were particularly valuable in connection with the prosecution of the war and also the settlement of the concluding peace. The State troops, with nearly two and a half times their strength in peace, saw service throughout the period of the war and all deficiencies were made good by additional recruits from time to time. The State helped vigorously in the enlistments in the British Army, creating a Special War Board for this and kindred purposes. The State contributed liberally to the various War Funds and stood first among the States in Rajputana in investments in the two War Loans.

In the course of his recent visit to Bikaner, H. E. Lord Chelmsford referred to the splendid war services of the State in the following words:—

“The well-known topic of the flight of time recalls the last occasion on which I was Your Highness’s guest in Bikaner in the cold weather of 1917. In the three years which have passed since then have been crowded events of an importance we can as yet hardly estimate. The crucial struggle of the war was then impending, and though we awaited the result with confidence, the knowledge of the price to be paid for victory had cast its shadow over the Empire. To-day when the price has been paid in full and we are free from the menace of external foes, we find ourselves faced with the problems of peace, very different indeed in kind but hardly less momentous than those of the

war. On this period of the Empire's need, Your Highness can look both as a ruler and as a man with the consciousness of the services unsparingly rendered and fully appreciated. As a Ruler you can claim that your offer made on the outbreak of the war of the whole resources of the State has been proved, by the services of Bikaner to the regular Army and by the generous contributions to the War Funds to have been no empty form of words. As a man, you can recall the privilege of serving in France and Egypt, and I know with what eagerness you would have returned to the front for further duty had not the public interest made your stay in India imperative. Your Highness's services were fittingly recognized when you received the high honour of selection as one of the Indian signatories of the Peace Treaty."

In the New Year's Honours List of 1921, His Highness received the title of G.C.B.E., Military Division, and the Maharaj Kunwar has been gazetted an Honorary Captain.

#### DHOLPUR.

Colonel His Highness Rais-ud-Daula Sepahdar-ul-Mulk Saramad Rajhai Hind Maharajadhiraj Sri Sawai Maharaj Rana Sir Udai Bhan Singh Lokindra Bahadur Diler Jang Jai Deo, K.C.S.I., of Dholpur, is the present ruler of the State. Immediately on the outbreak of war His Highness offered to go to the front, but the Government of India did not consider it possible to accept the offer. His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Government of India.

The State sent 2,001 recruits in 1917 and 1918 and prior to that through the State Agency for the Indian Army and also raised the Narasingh Battalion of 650 men at Dholpur.

His Highness placed the following houses free of rent at the disposal of the Government of India for war purposes:—

Two houses in Agra to be used as Army Clothing Factory. The "Highland House," Simla.

Dholpur Club building was placed at the disposal of the Narasingh Battalion.



H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF DHOLPUR.





The Tewari Bag Guest House was placed at the disposal of the officers of the Narasingh Battalion.

His Highness has given the following donations for war purposes:—

|   | Rs.    | A.       | P.  |
|---|--------|----------|-----|
| As a war gift   | 25,000 | 0        | 0   |
| For the Aeroplane Fund  | ...    | 6,000    | 0 0 |
| Indian Relief Fund  | ...    | 7,500    | 0 0 |
| War Charity   | ..     | 25,000   | 0 0 |
| War gift by His Highness  |        | 7,000    | 0 0 |
| War gift by Her Highness  | ..     | 1,500    | 0 0 |
| Motor Ambulance   | ...    | 8,500    | 0 0 |
| Belgium Relief Fund   | ..     | 45       | 0 0 |
| St. John's Ambulance Fund   |        | 100      | 0 0 |
| Red Cross Fund  |        | 92       | 4 0 |
| Donation for Lucky Bag  | ...    | 15,000   | 0 0 |
| Presents for Lucky Bag worth  | ..     | 3,000    | 0 0 |
| Two Motor Cars worth  | ...    | 20,000   | 0 0 |
| Reward for each recruit for enlistment in<br>the Indian Army at Rs. 2 and Rs. 3<br>for all Jats ... | ...    | 2,828    | 0 0 |
| Paid by H. H. as War Loan subscriptions   |        | 1,30,000 | 0 0 |
| Public War Loan subscriptions   |        | 3,02,929 | 4 0 |
| 600 maunds Babul bark free of cost.   |        |          |     |
| Five horses and one pony free of cost.  |        |          |     |
| 100 blankets free of cost.  |        |          |     |

His Highness received the distinction of K.C.S.I. for War Services and was made an Honorary Captain in the Indian Army.

Dholpur, the easternmost State in Rajputana, dates from 1805 in its present form, having passed through vicissitudes of various kinds in the earlier centuries, the name of the State being derived from a small place near Agra, where the ancestors of the family of the Ruling Chiefs of the State held lands in the twelfth century. His Highness the Maharaja Rana Sir Udai Bhan Singh, K.C.S.I., the

present ruler of the State, was born in the year 1893 and succeeded to the Chiefship in 1911. The distinction of K.C.S.I. was conferred on the Maharaja in the New Year's Honour's List of 1918, and he has been gazetted an Honorary Major in the New Year's Honour's List of 1921.

---

#### DUNGARPUR.

Dungarpur in Rajputana dates its history from early in the 12th century as a separate kingdom founded originally by an heir of Chitor who migrated to those parts. The present ruler of the State is H. H. Rai Rayan Maharawal Shri Lakhshman Sinhji Bahadur, who was born on the 7th March, 1908, and succeeded to the rulership on the 15th November, 1918. His Highness being a minor, the administration is carried on by an executive council under the supervision of the Southern Rajputana Agency.

Immediately on the outbreak of the war His Highness, the late Maharawal, placed the entire resources of the State at the disposal of the Government. His Highness presented a motor car, which he had especially made for himself, to the Government, for war purposes, as also four chargers from His Highness's stables. His Highness also presented an aeroplane, appropriately called the "Dungarpur," for war purposes. The Durbar offered to enlist two especial corps, one of infantry and one of cavalry, for war purposes, but the Government unfortunately could not find its way to accept the proposal. A hundred sepoys were, however, placed at the disposal of the Government, for garrison duty anywhere in India. His Highness contributed Rs. 175 to the various War Funds.

The State invested Rs. 56,920 in the two War Loans, the Durbar's contribution amounting to Rs. 22,500, the rest being contributed by the subjects of the State.

The officials of the State took an enthusiastic part in helping the cause of the war. All officials of the State drawing Rs. 50 and above made, from the 1st March, 1914, to the close of the war, a monthly contribution of one day's pay towards the Imperial Relief





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF JAIPUR.

I. S. V. [p. 201]

Fund. Whatever the actual contribution resulting from this effort, it will be agreed that it was a commendable example of the spirit of service and sacrifice in the interest of the Empire.

# JAIPUR.

Major-General His Highness Saramad-i-Raja-i-Hindustan Raj Rajendra Sri Maharajadhiraj Sir Sawai Madho Singh Bahadur, K.G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O., G.B.E., LL.D. (Edinburgh) is of very ancient lineage, and is the head of the Kuchhawa clan of Rajputs, tracing descent from Kush, one of the sons of Rama, the celebrated King of Ayodhya, the modern Oudh. His ancestor left Ayodhya and established themselves first in Narwar and Gwalior, where they held sway for eight and a half centuries, and afterwards in Ambar, a stronghold of the Minas, which they made their capital in the year A. D. 1150. Ambar remained the capital of Dhundar, the old name of Jaipur State, until the year 1728, when Maharaja Sawai Jai Singh built the present capital Jaipur and named it after himself. In bygone days the Maharajas of Jaipur were statesmen as well as warriors, and, according to the times in which they lived, enlightened and progressive rulers. Maharaja Sawai Jai Singh, for example, was a learned astronomer, and his instruments and the records of his celestial observations are still carefully preserved in the capital which he founded and other old centres of learning in India. His Highness the present Maharaja, born in 1861, is a son of the Thakur of Isarda, a nobleman of the Rajawat Sept of the Kuchhawa clan, from which Sept the Kings of Jaipur are chosen, and was adopted by the late Maharaja Ram Singh on his death-bed, when he was only 19 years old. He succeeded to the *gaddi* in 1880. Jaipur is one of the nineteen States forming the Province of Rajputana and comprises an area of some 15,579 square miles with a population of about 3,000,000 souls. Its surface is generally plain country, diversified with ranges of hills. The rainfall in the State averages in ordinary seasons about 25 inches, but irrigation is necessary as a famine precaution almost all over the State. The Maharaja exercises

LL. D.: in 1911, during the Coronation Durbar at Delhi, he was made a Major-General; in 1912 he was made a Donat of the Order of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem, and in 1918 a G.B.E. He is entitled to a salute of 21 guns, the highest number allowed to a Prince in India.

His Highness has recently been gazetted an Honorary Lieutenant-General.

In connection with the recent Great War in Europe, his personal services were offered on the 9th August, 1914, but they were not accepted. The Jaipur Imperial Service Transport Corps, consisting of 524 officers and men, 826 ponies and 360 carts proceeded to Mesopotamia on the 3rd November, 1914. Altogether 1,181 officers and men, 1,331 ponies, and 360 carts were sent.

The number of recruits enlisted from the State in 1917-1918 and prior to that is 12,420.

A bonus of Rs. 50 was paid to each recruit on his enlistment in the Jaipur Imperial Service Troops and a recruiting allowance of Rs. 3 was paid to the Recruiting Agent for each recruit brought in. Free ration allowance of Rs. 8 per head for men and Rs. 5-4 per head for followers.

Sixty-five horses worth Rs. 22,707-8 were supplied to the Government free of cost. The Jaipur Government placed their Agra House at the disposal of the Government of India Army Clothing Department. His Highness the Maharaja made an offer to accommodate 25 wounded soldiers returning to India at the Jaipur Mayo Hospital and the offer was accepted.

A list of contributions and subscriptions in connection with the war is given below :—

|  | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|--|----------|----|----|
| H. R. H. the Prince of Wales's War Relief Fund | 1,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| The Imperial Indian Relief Fund                | 1,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| Queen Mary's Needle Work Guild, London         | 1,500    | 0  | 0  |
| Officers' Families' Fund, London               | 1,500    | 0  | 0  |

|   | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|---|----------|----|----|
| The Ladies' Committee of St. John's Ambulance Association, Ajmer  | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |
| The St. John's Ambulance War Fund, India ...  | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |
| To H. I. M. the Queen-Empress as New Year's Gift to the sailors and soldiers fighting for the Empire ...      | 15,207   | 15 | 0  |
| Contributions towards the expenses of the war ...   | 5,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| The St. John's Ambulance Red Cross War Fund. The amount has been allocated to the War Hospital, Dehra Dun ... | 5,000    | 0  | 0  |
| Cost of 10 machine guns as thankoffering for the recovery of H. I. M. the King-Emperor from an accident ...   | 30,000   | 0  | 0  |
| 65 horses for remounts ...  | 10,000   | 0  | 0  |
| The Union Jack Club, London ...   | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |
| Kitchener Memorial Fund ...   | 20,000   | 0  | 0  |
| The Imperial Indian Relief Fund, to commemorate H. E. Lord Chelmsford's first visit to Jaipur ...             | 50,000   | 0  | 0  |
| French Red Cross Fund ...   | 1,500    | 0  | 0  |
| The Indian Memorial at Brighton ..  | 2,000    | 0  | 0  |
| Lady Chelmsford's Red Cross Fête ..   | 524      | 14 | 0  |
| Lucky Bag, Simla ...  | 500      | 0  | 0  |
| Queen Mary's Technical School for Disabled Indian Soldiers, Bombay ...  | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |
| Lucky Bag, Ajmer ..   | 500      | 0  | 0  |
| General "Our-Day" Fund ...  | 25,000   | 0  | 0  |
| "Our-Day" Jaipur, H. H. ...   | 5,000    | 0  | 0  |
| Jaipur Subjects ...   | 8,812    | 0  | 0  |
| Expenses of the War ...   | 5,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| King George's Fund for Soldiers ...   | 2,000    | 0  | 0  |
| St. Dunstan's Home, Indian Fund ...   | 1,000    | 0  | 0  |

|   |     | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|---|-----|----------|----|----|
| Hospital Ship <i>Loyalty</i>  | ... | 1,00,000 | 0  | 0  |
| Recreation Huts   | ... | 5,000    | 0  | 0  |
| Silver Wedding of Their Majesties the King-<br>Emperor and the Queen-Empress, for<br>disposal in connection with war gift | ... | 80,000   | 0  | 0  |
| New Year's gift to H. I. M. the King-<br>Emperor. This amount was utilized for<br>Imperial Indian Relief Fund             | ... | 66,666   | 0  | 0  |
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund   | ... | 25,000   | 0  | 0  |

#### JHALAWAR.

During the outbreak of the Great European War, His Highness the Maharaja Rana Bahadur of Jhalawar helped the Government in the following ways and in appreciation thereof the Government of India was graciously pleased to bestow on His Highness the hereditary title of "Maharaj Rana."

#### WAR LOAN.

His Highness, at great personal discomfort, visited the Tahsils to hold War Loan Meetings and to announce the issue of the War Loan, as notified by the Government of India. The total contributions to the War Loan amounted to Rs. 3,25,375, including Cash Certificates and War Bonds. His Highness also appointed a War Loan Committee with an efficient establishment, which worked energetically and methodically in advertising the loan and collecting subscriptions for the same.

#### RECRUITING.

His Highness appointed in 1917 a Recruiting Committee to secure recruits for the Indian Army, offering liberal terms regarding pay and gratuities to those who might enlist themselves for active service and provisions for their heirs, etc., but in spite of all these inducements the people of Jhalawar, most of whom are cultivators and





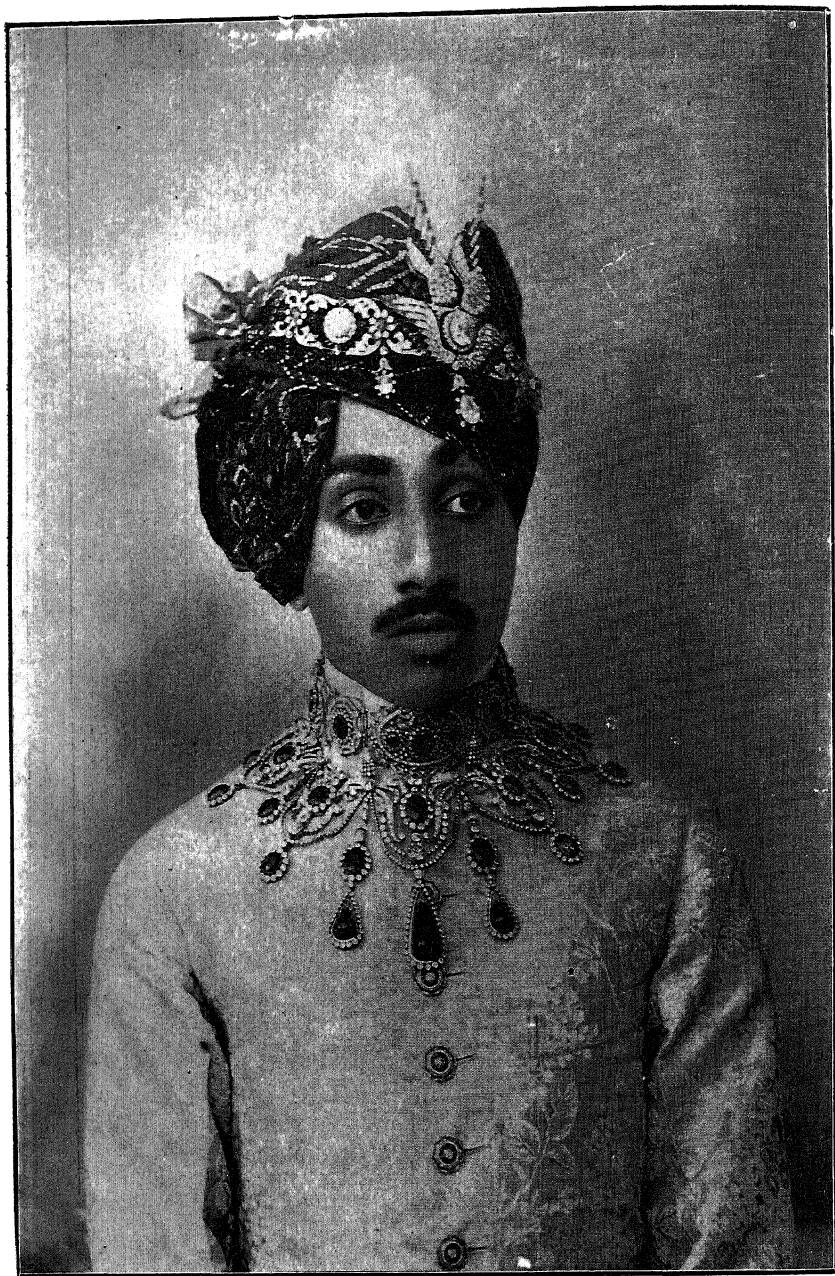
H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF JHALAWAR.

INDIAN STATES VOLUME.



KHAR SUKH SINGH OF POKARAN, JODHPUR STATE. [p. 206]





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF JODHPUR.

are nearly deprived of their martial spirit, owing to the long peace under the ægis of the British Government, failed to respond to any appreciable extent to the urgent call and, consequently, only a limited number of recruits came forward for the purpose.

His Highness contributed in lump sum Rs. 5,000 just at the outbreak of the war, later on in 1917 he announced a contribution of Rs. 1,000 per month towards the general expenses of the war, which was continued throughout the war. The offer was gladly accepted by the Government.

The following contributions have been made by the Darbar in 1918-1919 in connection with the war:—

1. Subscription of Rs. 10,000 towards the Imperial Relief Fund.
2. A subscription of Rs. 10,000 for the Hospital ship *Loyalty*.
3. King George's Fund for Sailors, £5.
4. In aid of the National Library of the Blind. £5.
5. Disabled Soldiers' Fund, Rs. 200.

His Highness the Maharaja also organized a Fête on "Our-Day," which realized a sum of Rs. 5,000 for the fund of that name: assisted greatly the Remount Department in procuring horses for the Army; instituted lectures in order to disseminate correct news concerning the war; made gifts every year whilst the war lasted of garments for the troops, and caused prayers to be offered for the victory of the British arms.

---

#### JODHPUR.

Jodhpur is the largest of the Rajputana States, comprising an area of 34,963 square miles and having a population of 2,636,674 souls. The present ruler of the State is His Highness Maharaja Umed Singhji Saheb Bahadur, who is a minor and is at the Mayo College, Ajmer, the administration being carried on by a Council of Regency presided over by Major-General His Highness Sir Pratap Singhji Bahadur of Idar. The annual revenue of the State is about 80 lakhs of rupees.

The Maharaja of Jodhpur is the head of the Rathor clan of

Rajputs, and claims descent from Rama, the deified King of Ajodhia. About 1212 a community of Brahmans held this city and the extensive lands of Pali, and being greatly harassed by Mers, Bhils, and Minas, invoked the aid of Siahji in dispersing them. This he readily accomplished and when subsequently invited to settle in the place as its protector, celebrated the next *Holi* festivals by putting to death the leading men and adding the district to his conquests. The nine immediate successors of Siahji were engaged in perpetual broils with the people among whom they had settled, and, in 1818, Rao Chanda X took Mandor from the Parihar Chief and made his possession secure by marrying the latter's daughter. This place became the Rathor capital for the next 78 years, and formed a convenient base for adventures farther afield.

Rao Chanda died in 1409, and his son and successor, Ran Mal, appears to have spent most of his time at Chitor, when he interfered in Marwar politics and was assassinated. The next Chief was Rao Jodha, who laid the foundation of Jodhpur City in 1459.

After many vicissitudes the State, in 1818, came under the protection of the British.

The State maintains two Regiments of Imperial Service Lancers and a local force consisting of about 600 Cavalry and 2,400 Infantry. The Artillery numbers 254 of all ranks and there are 121 guns of various kinds.

On the outbreak of the war, the late Maharaja Sumer Singh Bahadur, who was only about nineteen years of age at the time, placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Government and also offered his personal services along with Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh. The young Maharaja saw service at the front in the early stages of the war and returned in 1916 to be invested in full ruling powers. The rank of Honorary Lieutenant in the British Army was conferred on him in recognition of his war services. His Highness unfortunately died in October, 1918, the present ruler being his younger brother.

H. E. Lord Chelmsford, on the occasion of his recent visit to





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF KARAUULI.



Jodhpur complimented the State on its splendid war services in the following words:—

“The ruler and people of Jodhpur, the premier Rathor State, have ever been distinguished for unswerving loyalty and devotion to the Crown, and I am glad to have this opportunity of congratulating the Durbar on the signal services rendered during the war, both in men, money, and other contributions. No appeal, whether to his late Highness Maharaja Sir Sumer Singh, whose untimely death we all deplore, or to the Council of Regency, was made in vain. The Jodhpur Imperial Service Lancers spent no less than five years of distinguished service at the front, and by their exploits at Haifa and in the Jordan Valley recalled the deeds of their ancestors, who fought at Tonag, Merta, and Patan. The reputation which they have gained is well worthy of the glorious annals of Marwar.

“It would be invidious for me to single out individuals for special eulogy, but I may be permitted to pay a tribute to the head and to mention the names of Major Thakur Dalpat Singh, M.O., who met a soldier's death at Haifa while charging at the head of the regiment. As these stirring deeds fade into the past and the horrors of the war grow less, let us not forget the great debt we owe to those who fought and died for the great cause. It is our sacred duty to see that their families are relieved from suffering and distress. I trust that the Marwar Soldiers' Board will continue to see that this duty is well and faithfully discharged. I am confident that the welfare of those who went on active service, whether in the Jodhpur Lancers or in the Indian Army, will ever be an object of care and solicitude to the rulers of Jodhpur.”

Besides investing substantially in the two War Loans, the State also gave generous donations to the various War Funds.

#### KARAULI STATE, RAJPUTANA.

As soon as War was declared by England against Germany, the Karauli Durbar, true to their traditional and unbroken loyalty and unflinching devotion to the British throne and His Most Gracious Majesty

the King-Emperor, spontaneously and promptly placed their personal services as well as all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Government. During the progress of the war they all along showed every readiness to help in bringing the struggle to a successful triumph of the Allies' arms. To answer the supreme call of duty and to share their proper responsibilities towards the Empire they tried their utmost to render the best possible help in the crisis, so far as the limited resources of the State would permit, in various ways, in the shape of supplying recruits for the British Army, liberally contributing towards the various funds raised in connection with the war and collecting money to augment the loans floated at times to help the war expenditure required to achieve victory.

A detail of the activities displayed and the measures adopted by the Karauli Durbar to meet the exigencies which had arisen out of the war is given below :—

*1.—Recruiting.*

The question of the enlistment of the recruits required for the Indian Army, and for which a pressing demand was made from the Army Headquarters, proved a difficult task in a State like Karauli, and all preliminary efforts made towards this end proved abortive. But His Highness the Maharaja Sahib Bahadur took upon himself this tedious task, and during his tour in the district he collected all the prominent Rajput Jagirdars and headmen of other communities and explained to and impressed upon them the utmost need and desirability of lending a helping hand in this respect, and his appeal had a commendable response. In order to ensure success in this direction, His Highness most magnanimously offered most liberal and attractive terms in the form of a generous grant of cash bonuses and free rent holdings and lands to all recruits who would come forward for enlistment and for their families. The result was that nearly 500 recruits, mostly combatants, were enrolled and supplied to the Indian Army and met with the approval of the British Recruiting Officers. The most striking feature of the success was that the Karauli State stood sixth in comparison with the other big States of Rajputana in this

respect. The Durbar had to incur an outlay of nearly Rs. 20,000 over the enlistment of the recruits in addition to the value of the land granted to the recruits.

*II.—Supply of Horses and Ponies.*

Every effort was made by the Durbar to assist the Remount Purchasing Officer in the collection and selection of horses and ponies required for British cavalry regiments and the transport. About 40 horses and ponies were collected and sent to Bayana for the inspection of the Remount Purchasing Officer and a number of them found suitable for transport was selected and purchased by the officer at reasonable prices. Again the Remount Purchasing Officer himself visited the Capital for this purpose and nearly 20 horses were collected for his inspection, of which 10 animals fit for transport were selected by him. With a view to add to their humble quota towards the successful prosecution of the war, the ten ponies selected by the aforesaid officer were presented by the Durbar as a gift to the Government for war purposes on behalf of the State. The offer was gratefully accepted by the Government.

*III.—“ Our-Day ” Celebrations.*

On receipt of information that a great effort was to be made throughout India on the 12th December, 1917, on behalf of the Red Cross and St. John's Ambulance Association, to raise funds and to collect subscriptions in various forms, His Highness the Maharaja was pleased to order that every endeavour should be made in his State to co-operate with the movement, that local Committees be formed at the Capital and in the Mofussil to devise schemes for raising money, and that elaborate programmes be drawn up to celebrate “ Our-Day ” throughout the State, and that no stone should be left unturned to make the movement an unqualified success at Karauli.

In conformity with the above order Executive Committees were formed at the Capital and the districts and detailed programmes with the due approval of His Highness the Maharaja were drawn up to celebrate the occasion in the State.

The proposed celebrations in the Capital as well as in the Tehsil

headquarters occupied nearly a week, and it was highly satisfactory to note that all the functions according to the programme were carried out and performed successfully to the entire satisfaction of the Durbar. The result was that a sum of Rs. 11,364 was realized from all the entertainments and, after deducting the expenses amounting to Rs. 1,664, the balance of Rs. 9,700 was credited towards "Our-Day" Fund in the Bank of Bengal, Agra, on the 28th December, 1917. His Highness was pleased to award medals to the deserving officers.

All these excellent results and the success beyond hopes were the outcome of the lively and personal interest taken by His Highness the Maharaja in looking into the details of every event and presiding over and gracing all the functions at the sacrifice of his personal convenience.

---

#### *IV.—First and Second Indian War Loans.*

In an isolated place like Karauli the question of collecting subscriptions towards the Indian War Loans was most difficult but, in view of the fact that every pie collected for this purpose would help to successfully prosecute and win the war, the Karauli Durbar had adopted many suitable measures to popularize the loans and to achieve as great a success as possible in this connection. The net result of the steps taken by the Durbar was that a sum of rupees one lakh was subscribed towards the First War Loan and a sum of Rs. 90,000 was invested in the Second War Loan on behalf of the Durbar and the people of the State.

The most striking feature of the loan collection was that in a place like Karauli, where only a microscopic section of well-to-do traders carry on banking business, the people, who were otherwise loath to loosen their purse strings, were led to subscribe towards the first loan, and they did not fail to rise to the occasion in gladly coming forward to again open their pockets to liberally subscribe towards the second loan, despite their limited resources. This fact bears an eloquent testimony to the goodwill that exists between the





THE RULER OF KISHENGARH.

ruler and the ruled and shows how eager they were to help the Government at this crisis.

The surprising success was no doubt mainly due to the special interest evinced by His Highness the Maharaja, who had all along been instrumental in encouraging the people to join the movement and in assuring them of the repayment of their money with interest.

---

*F.—Contributions towards the various Funds.*

The Karauli Durbar, as well as their subjects, have not lagged behind in liberally subscribing towards the various funds raised in connection with the Great European War, and a handsome sum was donated by them as detailed below :—

|                         |     |     | Rs.    |
|-------------------------|-----|-----|--------|
| (a) By the Ruling Chief | ... | ... | 55,512 |
| (b) By others           | ... | ... | 29,700 |

---

TOTAL ... 85,212

It will be observed from the facts and figures enumerated above, that the Karauli Durbar strained every nerve to help the Government in every way during the War, as far as their resources would permit them. By his efforts in connection with the Great War, His Highness has given ample proof of his loyalty and devotion towards the British Raj.

---

KISHANGARH.

Lieutenant-Colonel His Highness Maharaja Sir Madan Singh Bahadur Umdai Rajhai Baland Mahan, Maharaja Dhiraj, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E. a Ruling Prince, was born on 1st November, 1884.

The Maharaja belongs to the Rathor clan of Rajputs, and is descended from Raja Udai Singh of Jodhpur. The latter's second son, Kishan Singh, in consequence of a disagreement with his elder brother, Sur Singh, the Raja of Jodhpur, left the country of his birth in 1596 and took up his abode in Ajmer. Obtaining an introduction to Akbar, he received from him the district of Hindaun, now in

Jaipur. Subsequently, Kishan Singh rendered important service in recovering Imperial treasure carried off by the Mers, and he was rewarded with a grant of Setholao and certain other districts. In 1611 he founded the town of Kishangarh, close to Setholao, and from that time the State commenced to be known by its present name. In Akbar's time Kishan Singh was styled Raja, but, according to the State records, Jehangir gave him the title of Maharaja. He died in 1615 and was followed by sixteen successors. Sardul Singh, the father of the present Chief, succeeded in 1879, and continued the enlightened policy of his father. During his rule many valuable reforms were introduced in almost every department and carried to a successful issue. Sardul Singh was created a G. C. I. E., and on his death, 1900, he was succeeded by his only son, the present Chief.

The area of the State is 858 square miles; its population 90,000, and its revenue 5·74 lakhs. His Highness maintains a military force of 220 regulars (84 cavalry and 136 infantry), and 1,739 irregulars (836 cavalry and 903 infantry), 35 artillery men and 65 guns.

The Chief is entitled to a salute of 15 guns.

On the outbreak of the Great War, His Highness offered his personal services, which were accepted, and the Maharaja remained on active service in Northern France from 20th September, 1914, to 20th February, 1915, a period of five months.

His Highness also offered to put the whole resources of the State at the disposal of the Imperial Government.

The State supplied 38 recruits, and, in order to stimulate recruiting, the Durbar sanctioned a grant of not less than Rs. 2 to any one producing a recruit, and concessions in the shape of a remission of State dues, and adequate provision for the families of the recruits were also announced.

The following contributions in money and gifts were made by the State :—

*By the State.*

|                                     | Rs.   | A. | P. |
|-------------------------------------|-------|----|----|
| Aeroplane and Machine-gun Funds ... | 2,935 | 0  | 0  |







H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF KOTAH.

|  |     |     | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|--|-----|-----|--------|----|----|
| Silver Wedding Fund  | ... | ... | 5,000  | 0  | 0  |
| Indian Imperial Relief Fund  | ... | ... | 9,874  | 11 | 3  |
| Other War Relief objects   | ... | ... | 1,018  | 0  | 0  |
| Red Cross Fund   | ... | ... | 2,050  | 0  | 0  |
| <i>From Privy Purse.</i>   |     |     |        |    |    |
| Charities and St. John's Ambulance Association   | ..  | ... | 3,000  | 0  | 0  |
| War Loans by the State :—  |     |     |        |    |    |
| 1917   | ... | ... | 34,200 | 0  | 0  |
| 1918   | ... | ... | 50,000 | 0  | 0  |
| 1919   | ... | ... | 60,000 | 0  | 0  |
| Public subscriptions raised in the State :—  |     |     |        |    |    |
| 1917   | ..  | ... | 26,100 | 0  | 0  |
| 1918   | ... | ... | 500    | 0  | 0  |
| Six horses were supplied to the Remount Purchasing Officer, Rajputana and Central India, on payment of |     |     |        |    |    |
|  | ... | ... | 1,200  | 0  | 0  |
| Proportion of the War Expenditure to Revenue, excluding contributions to War Loan                      |     |     |        |    |    |
|  | ... | ... | 41%    |    |    |
| Proportion of War Expenditure to Revenue including contributions in War Loans                          |     |     |        |    |    |
|  |     |     | 33·9%  |    |    |

KOTAH.

The State of Kotah in Rajputana has an area of 5,684 square miles and a population of 639,089, with an annual income of about 45 lakhs of rupees. The rulers of the State are Chauhan Rajputs and the separate existence of the State dates from the early years of the seventeenth century. The present ruler of the State is H. H. Lieut.-Col. Maharao Sir Umed Singhji Bahadur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., G.B.E., who was born in 1873 and succeeded to the *gaddi* in 1896.

Soon after the outbreak of the war, His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Imperial Government and

also offered his personal services; there was, however, no occasion for the acceptance of the latter. Several Senior Sardars of the State also offered their personal services.

The State maintains no Imperial Service Troops but pays Rs. 2,00,000 annually towards the maintenance of the 42nd Deoli Regiment. There were 337 recruits supplied by the State to the Indian Army. The State encouraged recruitment by offering 51 bighas of land free of rent to the heirs and relatives of those killed in action and 25 bighas free of rent to those disabled in action. On the way to and from the frontiers, all batches of the Deoli Regiment passing through Kotah were entertained by the State. All Military Officers passing through Kotah were treated as State guests.

Among donations paid directly towards war purposes, were a sum of Rs. 1,00,000 towards war expenses and Rs. 40,572-10-0 paid towards the Rajputana Aeroplane and Machine-gun Fund. Contributions to various War Relief Funds amounted to Rs. 1,33,310-12-0, the more important items being:—

|                                   | Rs.      |
|-----------------------------------|----------|
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund . . . | 1,00,000 |
| Officers' Family Funds . . .      | 3,000    |
| Prince of Wales's Fund . . .      | 7,500    |
| Kitchener Memorial Fund . . .     | 3,000    |

The investments in the two Indian War Loans by the State amounted to Rs. 25,22,790, while the people invested the following amounts in the two War Loans:—

|                       | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|-----------------------|----------|----|----|
| First War Loan . . .  | 3,50,511 | 8  | 0  |
| Second War Loan . . . | 90,977   | 12 | 0  |

The figures of financial assistance given above do not include contributions from the Privy Purse of the Ruler, represented by the following figures:—

|                              | Rs.    |
|------------------------------|--------|
| Comforts for Troops . . .    | 25,000 |
| Aeroplane Fund . . .         | 1,500  |
| Belgian Red Cross Fund . . . | 1,500  |





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF SHAHPURA,

|                                  |     |     |     | Rs.      |
|----------------------------------|-----|-----|-----|----------|
| War purposes                     | ... | ... | ... | 1,12,500 |
| "Our-Day" Fund                   | ... | ... | ... | 12,385   |
| St. John's Ambulance Association | ... | ... | ... | 1,600    |

The subjects of the State made the following contributions to the various War Funds:—

|                          |     |     |     | Rs.    | A. | P. |
|--------------------------|-----|-----|-----|--------|----|----|
| Rajputana Aeroplane Fund | ... | ... | ... | 34,601 | 11 | 9  |
| "Our-Day" Fund           | ... | ... | ... | 29,355 | 15 | 9  |
| Silver Wedding Fund      | ... | ... | ... | 3,481  | 0  | 0  |

The State also took part in the supply of material for war purposes, one of the most important items being the supply of a Pontoon bridge costing Rs. 38,000. Tents to the value of Rs. 10,521, a traction engine and 9 wagons costing Rs. 20,000, and an ice-machine costing Rs. 8,715 were among other gifts. Sixteen horses were also supplied on payment.

It is interesting to note that the State spent 7·87 of the average annual revenue during the period of the war for war purposes.

#### SHAPURA.

Shapura is a Chiefship in Rajputana with an area of 705 square miles and a population of 63,499 souls. The present Ruler is Sir Nahar Singhji, K.C.I.E., who is 64 years old and has been carrying on the administration for 46 years. He was knighted in 1903. The Chief has been ever loyal to Government, having assisted the Government in the Mutiny of 1857 and again at the time of the Kabul war, with camel transport for which the Chief's services were appreciated. On the outbreak of the Great War, the Chief was unable to offer his personal services, being over 55. However, the second son, Raj Kumar Sirdar Singh, served for more than three years in France with the rank of Captain.

The investment in Government War Bonds amounted to Rs. 50,000, and the interest accruing thereon is also to be paid to Government for war purposes. This amount will not be repaid before

30 years, so the simple interest at  $5\frac{1}{2}\%$  will amount to Rs. 82,500 and to Rs. 1,99,258 at the rate of compound interest.

Rs. 5,500 were paid yearly towards the expenses of the war and Rs. 13,750 have been paid up to 31st December, 1918. Public subscriptions including those of the Raja's family amount to Rs. 25,710.

Forty-eight approved recruits were supplied for war purposes, to whom Rs. 652 were given by way of reward, in addition to grants of land. The assignments of land have cost the Chief an annual rental of Rs. 2,000.

---

•







H. H., THE NAWAB OF BHAWALPUR.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE PUNJAB.

#### BAHAWALPUR.

THE State of Bahawalpur in the Punjab is now under the management of a Council of Regency, the present Nawab, His Highness Nawab Sadiq Muhammad Khan, who was born in 1904, and succeeded to the *gauldi* in 1907, being still a minor. The State of Bahawalpur has an area of about 12,000 square miles, though the central part of it is only a desert. It is interesting to note that the Nawabs of Bahawalpur claim descent from the Abbaside Khalifs of Egypt. In recognition of the splendid war services of the State, during the first Afghan War, the Nawab of the State was rewarded with an additional territory and a life-pension.

In spite of the Ruler of the State being a minor, it was able to render valuable services during the war. During the war, 361 recruits were raised for the Imperial Troops and 2,904 for the Indian Army. 1,181 men of the State proceeded on active service to Egypt, Mesopotamia, East Africa, and the Frontiers of Afghanistan and Baluchistan. They were accompanied by 2,161 camels, the army of the State consisting mainly of Camel Corps.

The contributions in money for war purposes and to the various funds reached nearly six lakhs of rupees, including contributions from subjects of the State, Rs. 75,000 being the contribution to the Aeroplane Fund, Rs. 77,000 to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund, and Rs. 70,220 to "Our Day" Fund. The expenses incurred on the Imperial Service Troops alone were nearly two lakhs and a half of rupees. The investments in the two War Loans were to the value of

Rs. 72,50,338, besides thirty lakhs worth of government paper converted into War Loan by the Darbar.

The State also made valuable gifts of material to the war in the shape of engines, tents, carpets, etc., besides procuring horses and mules for war purposes. Twenty horses valued at Rs. 5,651 were given to the army free of cost; 30 mules and 104 camels were supplied on payment and 217 camels and 14 ponies were procured at very short notice for use by the Railway authorities in Mesopotamia. Animals which died in service in Mesopotamia were replaced at an expenditure of Rs. 45,000.

The total war contributions of the State are thus represented by the following figures:—

|             |     |     |                    |
|-------------|-----|-----|--------------------|
| Men         | ... | ... | 4,000.             |
| Money       | ... | .   | 6 lakhs of rupees. |
| Investments | ... | ... | 1 crore of rupees. |

#### CHAMBA.

The State of Chamba, also in the Punjab, has an area of 3,216 square miles and a population of 134,251. The history of the State, which was founded by a Rajput Chief of the Solar Dynasty, dates back to the fifth century A. D. Surrounded on almost every side by lofty impassable mountain-ranges, the State maintained its independence for a long time in the earlier periods of Indian History and capitulated only in the times of the final Moghul conquest of India. The State came under British influence in 1846. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Raja Sir Bhure Singh, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E., who was born in 1869 and succeeded as Ruler of the State in 1904.

The State recruited 499 combatants for the Indian Army and there were 27 casualties among them. The cash contributions of the State amounted to Rs. 2,68,641, of which Rs. 1,50,000 were a contribution to the General War Fund. The State invested Rs. 3,83,600 in the two War Loans. Among materials supplied for war purposes was a quantity of two thousand maunds of potatoes



H. H. THE RAJA OF CHAMBA.



H. H. THE RAJA BAHADUR OF FARIDKOT.

worth about Rs. 10,000. The State also supplied 18 horses to the Government worth about Rs. 15,000.

---

#### DUJANA.

Dujana is one of the small States in the Punjab, with an area of 100 square miles and a population of 24,174 according to the census of 1911. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Nawab Muhammad Khurshed Ali Khan, who was born in 1883 and succeeded to the *gaddi* in 1908, on the death of his cousin, Nawab Mumtaz Ali Khan. The Nawab is descended from an old Afghan family and the State dates from the hereditary grant of lands to one of his ancestors, for military services rendered to the British Government under Lord Lake.

On the outbreak of the war the Nawab placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of Government. 955 recruits were supplied to the Indian Army, which with the 311 men from the State already existing in the Indian Army, brought up the number of fighters from the State to 1,266, which works up to 31 per cent. of the population eligible for military service.

The cash contributions of the State amounted to Rs. 8,000, while a sum of nearly Rs. 20,000 was invested in the two War Loans. The State also presented 50 camels valued at Rs. 10,000 for war purposes.

---

#### FARIDKOT.

The State of Faridkot in the Punjab has an area of 642 square miles and a population of 130,974, with an approximate annual revenue of 13½ lakhs of rupees. The history of the State goes back to the times of Akbar. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Farzand-i-Saadat Nishan Hazrat-i-Kaisar-i-Hind Brar Bans Raja Har Inder Singh Bahadur, who was born in 1915, and succeeded to the Rulership in 1919, on the death of his father. Owing to the minority of the Ruler, the State is being administered by a Council of Administration under the orders of the Government of India, consisting of a President and four members.

Soon after the outbreak of the war, a Company of Imperial Service Sappers of the State departed to East Africa in October, 1914, and served there with distinction for more than three years. A second Company of Imperial Service Sappers was also raised in 1918. During the war the State raised 2,368 recruits for the Imperial Service Troops as well as for the Indian Army; the total number of Faridkot men who saw service in the war was 2,759, representing 12 % of the men eligible for military service in the State, the percentage being higher than that of the Province of Punjab.

The contribution in money for war purposes was about six lakhs of rupees, the chief items being, for Aeroplane Fund, Rs. 1,75,000; Imperial Indian Relief Fund, Rs. 73,502; extra expenditure on Imperial Service Troops, Rs. 64,269. The Darbar and the subjects of the State invested Rs. 17,89,060 in the two War Loans. The State also contributed valuable war material in the shape of tents, harness, acacia bark for tanning, etc., besides supplying 42 horses, 27 mules, and 48 camels, valued at Rs. 32,542.

The total contributions of the State to the war are summarized in the following figures:—

|             |     |     |                     |
|-------------|-----|-----|---------------------|
| Men         | ... | ... | 2,750.              |
| Money       | ... | ... | 6½ lakhs of rupees. |
| Investments | ... | ... | 18 lakhs of rupees. |

The total annual income of the State being only 13½ lakhs of rupees, it will be seen that the record is very creditable.

#### JIND.

Jind is one of the three Phulkian States in the Punjab, the other two being Patiala and Nabha. It has an area of 1,268 square miles, a population of 271,728 and a gross annual income of 25 lakhs of rupees. The present Ruler of the State is Lieut.-Colonel His Highness Farzand-i-Dilband, Rasikh-ul-Itikad, Daulat-i-Inglishia, Raja-i-Rajan Maharaja Sir Ranbir Singh, Rajendra Bahadur, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I. His Highness was born in 1879 and succeeded to the





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF JHIND.



State in 1887. During the minority of His Highness, the State was administered by a Council of Regency, His Highness being invested with full power on the 10th November, 1899. Since his assumption of the office, His Highness has been working zealously for the advancement of the State and has introduced many a beneficent reform.

On the outbreak of the war, His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of Government and the Imperial Service Troops were mobilized for service immediately. The Troops entrained for service on the 14th September, 1914, and after reaching the theatre of war in Africa to which they were sent, had the honour of being the first among the Indian Imperial Service Troops to get into action. As the Inspector-General of the Imperial Service Troops telegraphed to His Highness: "Jind has the honour of letting the first blood flow for King and Empire amongst the Imperial Service Troops." The regiment saw service for a period of 3½ years in Africa and received a warm reception on their return to the Capital. The regiment had 175 casualties, 57 being killed in action, 32 dying of disease and 86 being wounded (12 of whom died later). As many as 47 distinctions were conferred on the regiment for gallantry in the field including a Military Cross, 9 Indian Distinguished Service Medals, and 15 Meritorious Service Medals. Several civilians of the State also received titles in recognition of help rendered to the cause of the war.

In addition to the entire Imperial Service Troops of the State, consisting of 4 companies of Infantry, replenished from time to time by 712 new recruits, the State supplied 5,173 recruits to the Indian Army, 28 drivers and followers for general service waggons in Mesopotamia and 305 camel and mule drivers.

The following financial contributions were made to the cause of the war:—

|                                      | Rs.      |
|--------------------------------------|----------|
| Contribution for war expenses ... .. | 3,30,000 |
| For an armoured aeroplane .... .     | 75,000   |

|  | Rs.         |
|--|-------------|
| For a bomb aeroplane ... ..                  | 45,000      |
| For 3 ambulance cars ... ..                  | 25,000      |
| Expenditure on the Imperial Service Regiment | 13,54,452   |
| Cost of keeping up Imperial remounts ...     | 24,408      |
| Cost of recruiting drivers ... ..            | 30,024      |
| Cost of recruiting soldiers ... ..           | 50,221      |
| Extra pay and presents to the Army ...       | 96,151      |
| Subscriptions to the various War Funds ...   | 1,16,921    |
| Investments in the War Loan ...              | 1,15,00,000 |

The following materials were supplied for the cause of the war:—

|  | Rs.   |
|--|-------|
| Two machine guns.                              |       |
| Six tents for hospital use in France ...       | 2,600 |
| Cost of bark supplied for tanning purposes ... | 2,291 |
| 200 pack saddles ... ..                        | 1,029 |
| 5 kitchen tents ... ..                         | 200   |

The following animals were given as a free gift to the British Army:—

|                           | Rs.    |
|---------------------------|--------|
| 121 Cavalry horses ... .. | 48,000 |
| 440 camels ... ..         | 50,114 |
| 56 mules ... ..           | 11,640 |

The total contributions of the State in men, money, and material come to the total value of Rs. 34,18,741, and seeing that the annual revenue of the State is Rs. 25,00,000, it will be noticed that during the war the State made annually a contribution of about one-third of its total gross revenue for war purposes. It is a record of which any State may be proud.

#### KALSIA.

The small State of Kalsia in the Punjab has an area of 168 square miles and a population of about 67,181, the annual gross revenue of the State being about two and three-fourths lakhs of rupees. The





H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF KAPURTHALA.

present Ruler of the State is His Highness Sardar Ravisher Singh, Sardar of Kalsia, who was born on October 30, 1902, and succeeded to the State in 1908, on the death of his father, Sardar Ranjit Singh. During the minority of the Ruler the State is being administered by a Council under the supervision of the Chief Commissioner of Delhi.

The State helped to recruit 1,104 combatants to the Indian Army during the period of the war, the number representing 10% of the total population eligible for military service. The financial contributions of the State amounted to Rs. 1,38,202, the chief items being: The General War Fund, Rs. 50,000; the Punjab Aeroplane Fund, Rs. 25,100; ambulance motors, Rs. 20,000; and the Indian Imperial Relief Fund, Rs. 10,652. The investments of the State in the two War Loans amounted to Rs. 2,48,701. The State also presented 10 horses to the Government at a cost of about Rs 5,000.

---

#### KAPURTHALA.

The State of Kapurthala in the Punjab has an area of 630 square miles and a population of 268,244 souls, the annual revenue of the State being 25 lakhs. The Rulers of the Kapurthala claim descent from Rana Kapur, a member of the Rajput house of Jaisalmer, who migrated northward from Rajputana nearly a thousand years ago and founded this State in the north.

During the Mutiny in 1857, the then Raja of Kapurthala, Sir Randhir Singh, G.C.S.I., volunteered the services of himself and all his followers. He strengthened the hold of Government on the Jullunder Doab and then volunteered to assist in the subjugation of the rebellious Province of Oudh. His offer was accepted and, accompanied by his brother, the brave Sardar Bikrama Singh Bahadur, C.S.I., he marched to Oudh at the head of 2,000 horse and foot and four guns. This force fought no less than six actions with the rebels with conspicuous valour on the part alike of the Chief, his brother, and his followers. They held most important positions, first at Bani, to protect the Lucknow-Cawnpore road, and afterwards at Daryabad, and captured the rebels' guns. The

Kapurchala troops remained in Oudh for a whole year, and the Raja received as a reward for his loyalty and bravery large estates there, confiscated from the rebellious Rajas of Bhitauli, Baundi, and Ikauna, as well as a *khilat* of Rs. 10,000 and many other honours.

The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Maharaja Sir Jagatjit Singh Bahadur, G.C.S.I., who was born in 1872 and succeeded to the *gaddi* in 1877, the title of Maharaja as an hereditary distinction being conferred in 1911. His Highness the Maharaja has travelled extensively in Europe and America and has been able to introduce during his rulership many features of modern progressive administration into his State, including a People's Assembly and the elective system for Municipalities and other Local Bodies in the State. Primary education has been made free in the State and in some areas compulsion has also been introduced in the matter.

On the outbreak of the war, His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Imperial Government, and besides equipping and maintaining his Regiment of Imperial Service Troops at an extra cost of rupees four lakhs, he made liberal donations to the various War Funds. The following are among the important contributions made by His Highness:—

|                        |        | Rs.    |
|------------------------|--------|--------|
| For motor ambulance    | ... .. | 25,000 |
| Indian War Relief Fund | ... .. | 40,000 |

The following sums were invested in War Loans in India and in Europe:—

|                        |        | Rs.      |
|------------------------|--------|----------|
| The English War Loan   | .. ..  | 3,00,000 |
| The French War Loan    | ... .. | 2,50,000 |
| First Indian War Loan  | ... .. | 4,08,000 |
| Second Indian War Loan | ... .. | 5,27,000 |

Besides some more contributions to other funds, the Prince of Wales's War Fund, St. John's Ambulance Fund, and funds for providing comforts for soldiers. The State also contributed







THE RULER OF LOHARU.

war material to Government. There were gifts of horses, mules, and camels for service in the various theatres of war.

---

#### LOHARU.

The Loharu State has an area of 222 square miles with a population of 18,597 souls, of whom 3,060 men are of military age. Its revenues now amount to Rs. 1,00,000. The present Chief is H. H. Fakhar-ud-daulah Nawab Sir Amir-ud-din Ahmad Khan Bahadur, K.C.I.E., and is a Moghul by race. Born in 1860, His Highness was installed as Ruler of the State in October, 1884. During the minority of the present Ruler of Maler Kotla, His Highness was Superintendent of the Maler Kotla State. His Highness has also served as member of the Punjab and Imperial Legislative Councils. His Highness has now assigned the full powers of administration to the heir-apparent, who is styled as Administrator of the State.

When war between Great Britain and Germany was declared on the 4th of August, 1914, the Nawab and his heir-apparent (the then Financial Administrator and now the Administrator of the State) were both at Srinagar, Kashmir. On the very receipt of the news on the 7th of August, they offered to Government a transport corps of their own, consisting of 200 camels fit for military service and 50 *sarrkans* (camel drivers) under the command of the heir-apparent. This offer of the Darbar was graciously appreciated by the Government, and H. E. the Viceroy in his first speech in the Legislative Council regarding the European War said, "From Loharu in the Punjab and Kalat and Lasbela in Baluchistan have come offers of camels with men to be maintained by the States and Sardars." The heir-apparent, Nawabzada Mirza Aizuddin Ahmad Khan, spared no pains in organizing the said transport. During 1914, at first the 200 transport camels with equipment were accepted for active service and were much liked by the military authorities. It is to be regretted that the services of the heir-apparent could not be accepted. In addition to the 200 transport camels mentioned above the Darbar presented to Government 100 more transport camels

with equipment during the course of the war. In all 91 trained *saurians* (camel drivers) were also presented to Government by the State for active service and all possible efforts were made by the heir-apparent.

His Highness has recently had the title of K.C.I.E. conferred on him in recognition of his War Services. State officials and Lambardars supplied as many recruits as possible for the actual fighting force. The result was very satisfactory, the total number of recruits during the war period according to the attestations, received from such British regiments as replied to the Darbar's letters, amounted to 281 men. Bonuses were liberally given by the State to each recruit and sometimes to his relatives too. Nearly a hundred men of the State were also serving in the Army when the war broke out. His Honour Sir Michael O'Dwyer, G.C.I.E., Lieutenant-Governor of the Punjab, kindly said in his speech at the Hissar Darbar of January 1919, "Nor must I omit to mention the efforts made by the Nawab of Loharu and his people to bear their share of the Empire's great burden."

Before mentioning the remaining services of the State, a brief mention must also be made of His Highness the Nawab's personal services in connection with the war. In the beginning of 1915 H. H. composed an ode in Persian on the war and on the duties of all loyal subjects of the Empire. This poem was very much liked by all who read it and was circulated broadcast in India, Afghanistan, Persia, and Mesopotamia, and had great effect in rousing enthusiasm for the war. Not being content with this, His Highness insisted on being sent on some political duty in connection with the war, and was sent to Mesopotamia in the beginning of October, 1915. His Honour the Lieutenant-Governor of the Punjab kindly said of him at the Ambala Darbar of October, 1915, "The Nawab of Loharu would not rest content until he proceeded to Mesopotamia with the ardour of a young recruit." He had unfortunately to return to India after two months owing to ill-health.

Other services of the State in connection with the war, consisted





H. H. THE NAWAB OF MALER KOTLA.

of contributions of Rs. 6,550 to the various War Funds, presenting double poled, double topped tents at a cost of Rs. 4,000 and subscriptions to the War Loans. The heir-apparent managed the financial affairs of the State so ably that in addition to paying off regularly the annual instalments of the loan and bearing the heavy expenditure in connection with the war, the State could find money to the extent of Rs. 20,000 for investment in the two War Loans. The public of the State contributed Rs. 400 towards the Imperial Indian Relief Fund and also subscribed Rs. 15,000 for investment in the two War Loans. The Darbar was very generous in befittingly rewarding such State officials and other persons as had helped the State in rendering war service.

The facts contained in this account speak for themselves and the Nawab and heir-apparent feel gratified at their being able to do their bounden duty to the suzerain power the British Government. The following is a copy of the telegram from H. H. the Lieut.-Governor of the Punjab, dated the 18th of November, 1918, to the Nawab in reply to his telegram conveying congratulations on the final victory of the British arms: "Much grateful for your kind congratulations on final victory and much appreciated loyal assistance rendered by Loharu throughout the war." His Highness the Nawab has recently been gazetted an Honorary Captain in the New Year's Honours list.

---

#### MALER KOTLA.

The State of Maler Kotla in the Punjab has an area of only 167 square miles and a population of 71,144, its approximate annual gross revenue being fifteen lakhs of rupees. The Capital, Maler Kotla, has a population of 30,000 and possesses flour mills and factories for making ice, surveying instruments, paper and for ginning and pressing cotton. It is a flourishing commercial and trade centre.

The present Ruler of the State is Lieutenant-Colonel H. H. Nawab Sir Ahmad Ali Khan Bahadur, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E., who was born in 1881 and succeeded to the rulership in 1908.

Maler Kotla is one of the oldest States in the Punjab. It is a Mahomedan Afghan State in the cis-Sutlej group. The Rulers of Maler Kotla are of Kurd descent, who came originally from the Province of Sherwan, from whence they emigrated to Afghanistan and later to India, when they occupied Maler and the surrounding country.

The founder of the State was Sadr-ud-din Khan, a powerful and influential Sardar of the Sherwani Afghans. He came to India about the middle of the fifteenth century, settled in the Punjab and founded the town of Maler. The Sardar was closely connected with the Lodhis and helped the Lodhi Chief Bahlol in his adventures and conquests. When Bahlol ascended the throne of Delhi he rewarded Sadr-ud-din Khan by giving the latter his daughter in marriage with a dower of 12 big and 56 small villages, thus considerably advancing Sadr-ud-din Khan's territory and prestige.

The latter died in 1515, and within ten years of his death Baber, the Moghul, defeated the Lodhis at Panipat and thus secured the throne of Delhi. This was a set-back to Maler Kotla, but we find that it was but temporary, for Mohammad Bayazid Khan (1604-1659) ingratiated himself at the Court at Delhi. By his great courage and ability he won the favour of the Emperor Aurangzeb Alamgir, and received from the latter in 1658 the two parganas of Qadirabad and Nangaon, with the title of Nawab, Amir-ul-Amra and Saif-ul-Mulk.

Nawab Sher Mohammad Khan (1672-1712) was also successful in increasing his territory. During this Chief's reign Maler Kotla was involved in a war against the Sikhs, which lasted for more than a century.

The death of Aurangzeb led to a rapid disintegration and decay of the Moghul Empire. Maler Kotla remained loyal to the Moghul Emperors until the latter ceded the Punjab to the Durrani Emperor, when the State transferred its allegiance to the latter.

Hereafter the State was involved in a series of wars in conjunction with the Durrani, etc. This eventually led to loss of Maler Kotla territory. Finally in 1809 the establishment of British



suzerainty restored order in the State, and ever since Maler Kotla State has been a staunch Ally of the British Government and has loyally assisted it in every emergency; especially valuable were the services the State rendered to the Government during the Mutiny.

The Nawab attended the Coronation Darbar and attended the various functions in connection with the Coronation of H. I. M. the King-Emperor. In the following years His Highness attended the Viceroy's State Entry into Delhi.

His Highness is well educated and is an energetic ruler, fond of shooting and other manly sports. He takes a keen personal interest in the administration of his State and in the welfare of his subjects. The Nawab has re-organized the State administration and made many important improvements.

The Maler Kotla Sappers and Miners have served the Government in more than one campaign. In the Great War they particularly distinguished themselves in the battle of Neuve Chapelle, etc.

For his services during the war Government appointed H. H. a Major in the Army and he has since been promoted to a Lieutenant-Colonelcy.

The normal strength of the Imperial Service Troops of the State consists of two double companies of Sappers. On the outbreak of the war the troops proceeded on active service to the Western Front and served there till the end of 1915, achieving great distinction to themselves and the State. They took part in the second battle of Neuve Chapelle, Loos, and La Bassée. The troops had the great honour of being mentioned in Lord French's despatches "as having specially distinguished themselves" in the field. At the beginning of 1916, the company was transferred to Mesopotamia and served there till and even after the end of the war. All the losses in the companies were replenished by fresh recruits. In all 532 men were supplied to the first Company in the field. Additional companies were formed in 1918, and the strength of the previously existing ones was also increased. The total number of

recruits raised during the war was 2,619 and the total number of those who saw active service was 3,934, or 31·7 % of those eligible for military service. It is interesting to note that this percentage was surpassed only by two British Districts in the Punjab and by no other State. The total number of casualties was 61 deaths and 367 wounded.

The money and other contributions of the State were as follows:—

During the period of the war His Highness and the Darbar were most anxious to help the Government in every possible way and from time to time made contributions in animals, materials, and money. Contributions were also made towards various War Funds and War Charities and comforts were sent for the soldiers serving on the front. An ambulance motor car was presented to the Government and houses at Simla and Ambala were placed at the disposal of the military authorities to serve as Convalescent Homes for wounded officers. The following lists will show in detail the various contributions made by the Darbar and the public:—

List of contributions in animals, materials, and money.

(i) *Animals.*—

(A) By the Durbar.

22 Equipment mules of 1st Company, Imperial Service Sappers.

84 Transport mules for the same Company.

6 Officers' chargers for the same Company.

Valued at  
Rs. 38,000.

25 Horses.

95 Mules.

100 Camels.

} For the Indian Army, valued at Rs. 80,715.

(B) By the Public—Nil.

(ii) *Materials.*—

(A) By the Darbar:—

(a) One motor car valued at Rs. 10,000, together with the cost of up-keep.

(b) 6,245 maunds of Babul bark, valued at Rs. 6,000.

- (c) Six large double-poled tents for hospital use.
- (d) 100 copies of *Pothi Panjgranthi*, 100 copies of the *Quran*, and 500 comforts, also 5 maunds of tobacco.
- (e) One house "The Crag" at Simla and one house in Ambala were placed at the disposal of Government as Convalescent Homes for Officers and soldiers of the Army.

(B) By the Public—Nil.

(iii) *Cash contributions.*—

(A) By the Darbar. —

- (a) To the Indian Expeditionary Force and for assistance to the Indian Army.

|  | Rs.      |
|--|----------|
| 1. Contribution towards the Indian Expeditionary Force Fund ... ..     | 40,000   |
| 2. Remission of octroi duty on purchase of <i>bhoosa</i> , etc. ... .. | 4,000    |
| 3. Bonus to sarwans and muleteers ... ..                               | 6,500    |
| 4. Bonus to recruits on enlistment ... ..                              | 50,000   |
| 5. Up-keep of sarwans from August, 1917 ... ..                         | 15,966   |
| TOTAL ...  | 1,16,466 |

(b) To the various War Funds and War Charities.—

|   |        |
|---|--------|
| 1. To Imperial Indian Relief Fund ... ..  | 24,000 |
| 2. For comforts of the wounded and H. E. Lady Chelmsford's Convalescent Home ... .. | 14,128 |
| 3. To Lord Kitchener Memorial Fund ... ..   | 1,000  |
| 4. Lady O'Dwyer's Fund for Comforts for Troops ... ..                               | 1,000  |
| 5. "Our-Day" Fund ... ..  | 7,635  |
| 6. Articles for Lady O'Dwyer's Lucky Bag ... ..                                     | 975    |
| 7. Lady Chelmsford's "Our-Day" Fund ... ..  | 3,000  |
| 8. Lady O'Dwyer's "Our-Day" Fund ... ..   | 1,500  |
| 9. Silver Wedding Donation ... ..   | 5,000  |
| 10. St. John's Ambulance Fund ... ..  | 1,000  |

|  | Rs.    |
|--|--------|
| 11. Y. M. C. A. ... ..                     | 500    |
| 12. All-India Hardinge Memorial Fund ...   | 2,000  |
| 13. Red Cross Fund ... ..                  | 1,500  |
| 14. National Relief Fund ... ..            | 1,000  |
| 15. Sweets for Sappers and Miners ...      | 500    |
| 16. Lady Hardinge's Local Charity Fund ... | 200    |
| 17. Lady O'Dwyer's Relief Fund ... ..      | 500    |
|  | <hr/>  |
| TOTAL ... ..                               | 65,438 |

(B) By the Public.—

|  |       |
|--|-------|
| 1. Khan Ihsan Ali Khan's contribution to the War Fund ... .. | 2,500 |
|--|-------|

GRAND TOTAL ... 1,84,404

(iv) *War Loan*.—

|  |          |
|--|----------|
| (A) Contributions by the Darbar ... .. | 3,00,000 |
| (B) Contributions by the public ... .. | 35,750   |

This is exclusive of Rs. 6,58,345 spent in land and cash rewards, the capitalized values of pensions, etc., granted by the State to recruits and deserving officers and men.

Considering the small size of the State and the annual income, which is only about 15 lakhs of rupees, the State must be considered to have rendered splendid War Services to the Imperial Government, worthy of the best traditions of the Punjab.

#### MANDI.

Though one of the smaller States in the Punjab, Mandi has got a very ancient history and its capital can be traced back to such an early date as 1527. The State is eminently mountainous and is situated in the upper regions of the river Beas, one of the tributaries of the Indus. The present Ruler of the State is a minor, His Highness Raja Jogendra Sen, and the administration is therefore carried on by a Superintendent, a British member of the Indian Civil Service



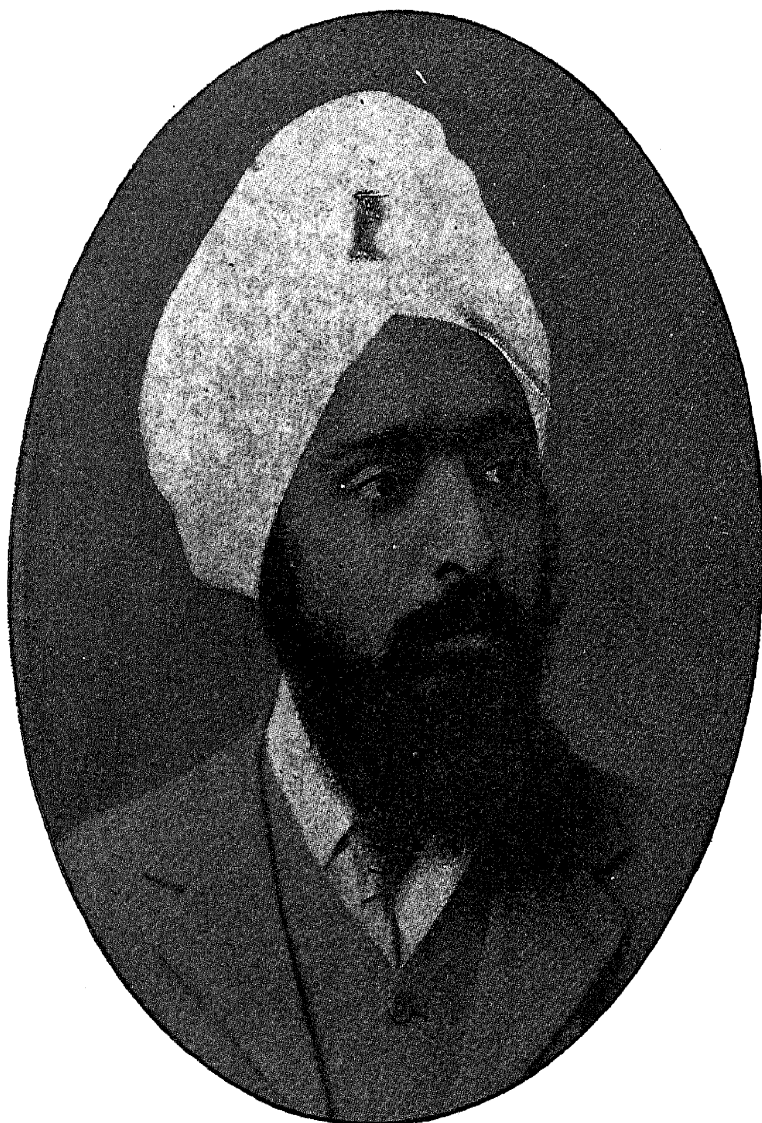
INDIAN STATES VOLUME.



COMMANDANT, NABHA LANCERS. [p. 235].



INDIAN STATES VOLUME 7.



H. H. THE RAJA OF NABHA.

[p. 235]



The State recruited 1,046 men to the Indian Army during the war, which number, with 78 men already in the Army from the State, brought up the figure to 1,124. The contribution in money for war purposes reached the amount of Rs. 56,016, the biggest item being a subscription of forty thousand rupees to the General War Fund. The investments in the two War Loans and in British Exchequer Bonds reached Rs. 5,23,298, including contributions from subjects of the State. Among contributions in material were blankets, shoes, shirts, and socks for those serving in the Army. Another piece of valuable service rendered by the State to the war was the supply of thousands of labourers for the felling of timber in forests for war purposes, to help the Forest Department.

---

#### NABHA.

The Raja of Nabha belongs to the great Sidhu Jat family, known as the Phulkian family from its founder Phul, which has given Ruling families to Patiala, Jind, Nabha, Bhadaur, and other Punjab States. He is descended from Tiloka, the eldest son of Phul, whose great grandson (Hamir Singh) founded the town of Nabha in 1755.

During the Mutiny of 1857 Raja Bharpur Singh of Nabha rendered most valuable services and was rewarded with a large increase of territory. He was succeeded by his brother Raja Bhagwan Singh, who died without issue in 1871. By the *sanad* of May 5th, 1860, it had been provided that if either of the three great Phulkian Princes (Patiala, Jind, and Nabha) died without heirs, a successor to his Raj should be chosen by the other two Chiefs from among the descendants of Phul, consequently on the death of Raja Bhagwan Singh in 1871, Hira Singh (then a Jagirdar of Jind, but a scion of the family of Tiloka) was selected and placed on the *gaddi*.

The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Shri Maharaja Ripudaman Singhji Malavendra Bahadur, F.R.G.S., M.R.A.S., who was born on the 14th March, 1883, and succeeded to the rulership in 1911 on the death of his father. His Highness was member of the Imperial Legislative Council of India from 1906-1908 and had also the honour

of attending the Coronation of His Majesty the Emperor of India with Her Highness the Maharani. His Highness has travelled extensively in India and abroad.

On the outbreak of the war, His Highness placed the entire resources of the State at the disposal of Government. Roughly about 7,000 men of the State saw service in the war in the Indian Army, as well as in the Indian Imperial Service Troops maintained by the State, the latter normally consisting of a battalion of Infantry of 600 men. 5,000 persons were recruited during the period of the war. The State had thus 16% of those eligible for war service engaged in active service.

The State maintained a fully equipped Hospital Ship for war service in Mesopotamia at a cost of more than two lakhs of rupees, including which the total war expenditure of the State came to nearly ten lakhs of rupees. The State invested heavily in the two Indian War Loans. Quite a valuable contribution of the State for war purposes was the presentation of 100 war horses at an estimated cost of Rs. 50,000.

---

#### PATIALA.

Patiala is the Premier State in the Punjab, with an area of 5,951 square miles and a population of 1,407,659. The gross annual revenue of the State is about a crore of rupees.

The family of the Maharaja of Patiala has been established as a ruling power south of the Sutlej since 1752, when the present capital was founded by Sardar Ala Singh, afterwards Raja. He was a Sidhu Jat Sikh, descended from Rama, second son of Phul. Sardar Ala Singh grandson of Phul, was a contemporary of Ahmad Shah, the Durani monarch of Afghanistan. The former joined the Sikh combination against the new Mahomedan power, and a decisive battle was fought at Barnala, the chief town in Patiala, in 1762, and the Sikhs are said to have left 20,000 of their number on the field. Barnala was plundered and Ala Singh was led captive before Ahmad Shah, who granted him his liberty on the payment of a large sum. But the Barnala disaster proved the making of Ala Singh, for Ahmad Shah



H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF PATIALA.



had no desire to push matters to extremities; and, in order to conciliate the Sikhs, presented Ala Singh with a dress of honour and conferred upon him the title of Raja.

Ahmad Shah subsequently conferred the title of "Raja-i-Rajgan" on Ala Singh's grandson (Amar Singh) who succeeded his grandfather. Raja Amar Singh made Patiala a most powerful State, but after his death the administration fell into disorder and in 1812 the British had to authoritatively interfere in the affairs of the State.

The title of "Maharaja" was conferred on the Patiala Chief in 1810 by the Emperor Akbar II, on the recommendation of General Ochterlony.

The Maharaja is entitled to a salute of 17 guns.

The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Farzand-i-Khas Daulat-i-Inglishia Mansur-Zaman Amir-ul-Umara Maharajadhiraj Rajeswar Sri Maharaja-i-Rajgan, Major-General Sir Bhupinder Singh Mahinder Bahadur, G.C.I.E., G.B.E., who was born in the year 1891 and succeeded to the *gaddi* in 1909.

On the outbreak of the war His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of the Government and helped the cause of the war in various directions, the following being a brief statement of the War Services :—

The Imperial Service Troops of the State saw service in Egypt, Gallipoli, and Palestine, and distinguished themselves in many engagements. The normal strength of the Patiala Army and the Imperial Service Troops of the State was kept up during the period of the war, losses being constantly renewed, and the State helped also largely in recruitment to the Indian Army. As many as 37,020 men of the Patiala State served during the war, the number recruited during the war being 28,080, of which 26,688 were combatants and 1,362 were non-combatants, 900 being the strength at the outbreak of the war. This represents 15% of the total population of the State eligible for military service. As many as 780 men of the State were killed on service in the war and the minor casualties numbered 1,112—the figures include Patiala men in the Indian Army also.

The financial contributions of the State to various war purposes reached the figure of Rs. 82,31,845 besides investments in the two War Loans and the lending of silver coin free of interest to Government, to the extent of Rs. 45,00,000. There were also contributions in material made by the State, the chief of them being 13 motor cars and a motor cycle, valued at over two lakhs of rupees, and clothing and other supplies to men serving in the Army to the value of Rs. 70,000. The State also presented for war purposes 405 horses and 247 mules, costing in all more than a lakh and a half of rupees.

The total war contributions of the State thus stand at the following figures and make Patiala the first among the Punjab States in the matter:—

|           |     |     |     |                     |
|-----------|-----|-----|-----|---------------------|
| Men       | ... | ... | ... | 37,000.             |
| Money     | ... | .   | ..  | 87 lakhs of rupees. |
| War Loans | .   | ... | ... | 45 lakhs of rupees. |

Besides making these contributions, His Highness the Maharaja of Patiala had also the high privilege of representing India at some of the sessions of the Imperial War Conference in London.

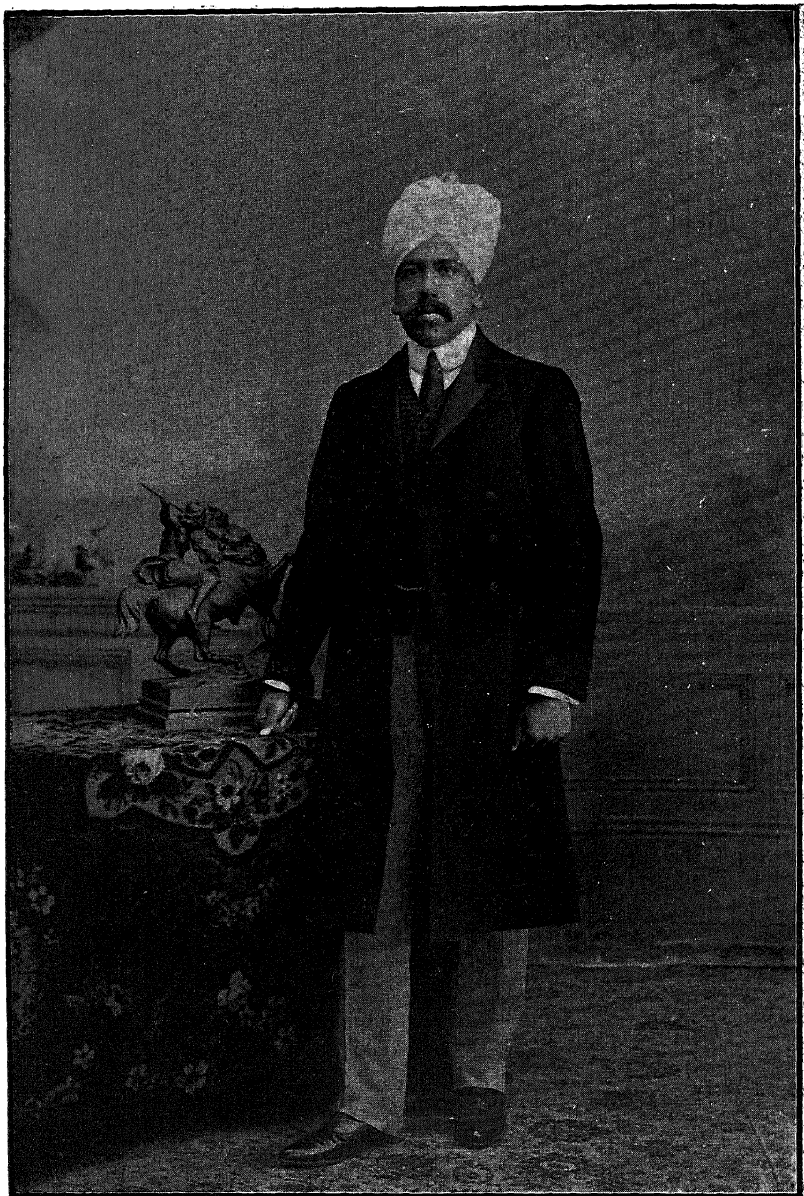
---

#### PATOUDI.

The small State of Patoudi in the Punjab has only an area of 52 square miles and a population of 22,000, the annual income of the State being a little over one lakh of rupees. The Nawabs are of Afghan descent, the ancestor of the present Ruler receiving it as a reward from the Government of India in the campaigns of Lord Lake. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Nawab Muzaffar Ali Khan, who was born in 1887 and succeeded to the Chiefship in 1898.

The State helped to recruit 450 combatants to the ranks of the Indian Army during the period of the war. The financial contribution of the State for war purposes amounted to Rs. 50,247, of which the chief items were: Rs. 22,000 for the General War Funds; Rs. 10,000 for the Punjab Aeroplane Fund; and Rs. 15,640 for the Imperial War Relief Fund. The State invested Rs. 2,23,895 in the two Indian





H. H. THE RAJA OF SRIMOOR (NAHAN).



War Loans and in British War Bonds. Among the presents of the State towards the purposes of the war, were a billiard-table and a motor cycle for the Military Camp at Ambala. The Potoudi Cattle Fair afforded great facilities for the purchase of horses by the British Government.

#### SIRMUR (NAHAN).

Sirmur or Nahan, as it is sometimes called, is one of the Punjab States, situated in the Himalayas. The present Ruler, who traces his descent from the Rawals of Jaisalmer, the founder of the dynasty being Raja, Rasalu, is Lieutenant-Colonel His Highness Maharaja Sir Amar Prakash Bahadur, K.C.S.I., His Highness was born in 1888 and succeeded to the State in 1910 A. D. Soon after the outbreak of the war, His Highness placed all the resources of the State at the disposal of Government and also offered his personal services. The Sirmur Sappers and Miners were sent to Mesopotamia for service and were taken prisoners at Kut, with the regiments of the Indian Army under General Townshend.

The following statement represents the contributions of the State in money and material :—

Statements showing the contributions made by the Sirmur Darbar towards the war, in men, money, and material.

Contributions in money :—

British Ambulance Fund, London, £50.

|  | Rs.    |
|--|--------|
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund  | 10,000 |
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund by State Officials, residents,<br>and Her Highness   | 21,500 |
| Young Men's Christian Association Fund   | 500    |
| Cost of 25 horses (not accepted by Government)                                   | 8,750  |
| Subscription towards maintenance of 2½ unit beds for the<br>wounded at Dehra Dun | 2,000  |
| Prince's Kitchener Memorial Fund   | 500    |
| Lady Monro's "Monster Lucky Bag," Simla  | 100    |

|  | Rs.             |
|--|-----------------|
| War Fund ... ..  | 4,00,000        |
| (Rs. 2,00,000 with due interest accepted by the Government). Upkeep of the 2½ ten bed units for the wounded at Dehra Dun to the end of March, 1918 ... | 1,542           |
| The Ambala Lucky Bag ... ..  | 200             |
| The Lahore Lucky Bag ... ..  | 1,000           |
| "Our-Day" celebrations ... ..  | 2,000           |
| "Our-Day" Fête by Her Highness the Maharani Saheba ...   | 500             |
| Upkeep of 2½ ten bed hospital units for the wounded in India ... ..  | 5,000           |
| Donation towards the Grand Fancy Fair and Fête at Ambala ... ..  | 100             |
| Mlle. A Rousseau, London, for Oeuvre du Vetement des Soldats Belges £10.   |                 |
| Red Cross, Genoa, by Her Highness the Maharani Saheba  | 30              |
| Young Men's Christian Association, Cawnpore, for war work  | 100             |
| <b>TOTAL ...</b>   | <b>4,10,472</b> |

His Highness the Maharaja of Sirmur has intimated that he proposes to waive the recovery of the sum of Rs. 2,18,244-3-9 due to the Sirmur Darbar from Government on account of the expenditure incurred by them during the war on the Sirmur Imperial Service Troops over and above the ordinary peace charges. His Highness desires that this amount may be considered as a contribution in connection with the war. The offer has been gratefully accepted.

Contributions in material :—

25,000 lb. of tea for use of Expeditionary Forces.

Cigarettes to the value of Rs. 1,000 for the use of 1st Battalion, 2nd Gurkha Rifles.

12 tents, 8,560 sq. feet and 4 equal to 912 sq. feet (only 6 of these were delivered at Bombay, measuring 560 sq. feet).

One motor ambulance car of the value of Rs. 9,000.

One Bungalow at Kowlagarh Tea Estate, Dehra Dun, lent for Hospital use.

Five bath tents.

Bantony and Bantony Cottage, Simla, lent for the Military Works Office till end of the war.

Bought 50 copies of the Hindi translation of the book entitled "The Life of Field Marshal Earl Kitchener of Khartoum, K. G.", for Rs. 150, which will go to the War Fund.

---

#### SUKET.

Suket is one of the smaller States of the Punjab with an area of 420 square miles, a population of 54,676, and a gross annual income of less than two lakhs of rupees. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Raja Bhim Sain, who was born on the 26th November, 1885, and succeeded to the *gaddi* on the 11th May, 1908.

On the outbreak of the war His Highness placed the entire resources of the State at the disposal of Government. About 240 men belonging to the State saw service in the Army during the period of the war. H. H. the Raja also raised a Signal Section of 56 men, primarily for Imperial Service in India, but the men did not get the chance of going on active service.

The financial contributions of the State for war purposes amounted to Rs. 1,90,670, the bigger items of which were: Rs. 78,000 for war expenses and Rs. 38,000 for the Signal Section. The State invested nearly a lakh of rupees in the two Indian War Loans. The State encouraged recruitment by grants of lands. The State presented 37 mules for war purposes to Government. It is estimated that they were of the total value of Rs. 4,000.

---



## CHAPTER XVII.

---

### ASSAM.

---

#### MANIPUR.

MANIPUR is the only State of importance in the Chief Commissionership of Assam, comprising an area of 8,456 square miles and population of 346,222. After a very chequered history, it has now settled down to peaceful progress under the protection of the British Government. The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Raja Chura Chand, Raja of Manipur, who was born in 1886 and succeeded to the rulership in 1891. During his minority, the State was administered by the British Government. The Raja is entitled to a salute of eleven guns.

The following statement gives an account of the contributions of the State in men, money, and material:—

1. A double company of Infantry.
2. One Labour Corps consisting of 2,000 men for service in France.
3. Donation for the purchase of an aeroplane, Rs. 22,500.
4. Donation towards the comfort of the Aden Field Force, Rs. 2,000.
5. Four motor ambulances.

---

#### THE KHASI STATES.

The Khasi States in Assam are about twenty-five in number, comprising in all a total area of only 3,900 square miles and a population of only 126,000. Several of them are very small and consist of a few hundreds of people presided over by a Chief or Siem, elected by all the adults in the State.

The contribution of the Khasi States to the war consisted mainly of the supply of two thousand recruits for a Labour Corps for service in the war.



## CHAPTER XVIII.

### NORTH-WEST FRONTIER STATES.

#### DIR, SWAT, AND CHITRAL.\*

HIS HIGHNESS the Mehtar of Chitral and the Nawab of Dir subscribed liberally to various funds raised for the benefit of sufferers from the war.

In addition to the monetary contribution, the Mehtar of Chitral tendered the services of himself, his eldest son, his Scout Levies, and Body Guard, together with the whole resources of his State to Government.

The Levies of the Nawab of Dir took part on behalf of Government in hostilities against tribal askars, in 1915, and were in action more or less continuously for about two months.

---

\* The information has been kindly supplied by the Political Agent of Dir, Swat, and Chitral.





## CHAPTER XIX.

### THE BALUCHISTAN AGENCY.

#### KALAT.

THE following is a statement of the contributions made by the Kalat State in the Baluchistan Agency for the purposes of the war:—

|   | Rs.             |
|---|-----------------|
| Kalat State Camel Corps ... ..  | 3,01,927        |
| Cost of 100 loading camels supplied to the<br>Military Transport Department ... ..            | 14,415          |
| 3 aeroplanes presented to Government ... ..   | 81,750          |
| Special contribution to Government of India for<br>war purposes ... ..                        | 10,000          |
| Vegetables for Indian troops on Mesopotamian front  | 20,000          |
| "Our-Day" Fund ... ..   | 30,000          |
| Baluchistan Red Cross and Comforts Fund ... ..  | 5,000           |
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund, Baluchistan Branch   | 20,000          |
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund, Central Committee  | 5,000           |
| Queen's Silver Wedding Gift Fund ..   | 5,000           |
| Indian Comforts for Troops Fund ... ..  | 3,000           |
| One motor ambulance ... ..  | 3,500           |
| Indian Branch of St. John's Ambulance and British<br>Red Cross Society Joint Committee ... .. | 2,000           |
| Mrs. Wapshare's Lucky Bag ... ..  | 400             |
| Lady Ramsay's Comforts for Troops Fund,<br>Baluchistan ... ..                                 | ...             |
| Indian War Loan, First ... ..   | 3,00,000        |
| Do. Second ... ..   | 1,21,100        |
| <b>GRAND TOTAL</b> ... ..   | <b>9,23,092</b> |

The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Beglar Begi Mir Sir Mahmud, Khan of Kalat, G.C.I.E., born in 1864. The annual revenue of the State is Rs. 12,14,000 and it is under the Political supervision of the Governor-General's Agent, Baluchistan, Quetta.

#### KHARAN.

The State of Kharan, also in the Baluchistan Agency, comprises an area of 18,565 square miles, with a population of 22,663 only and an average annual revenue of about a lakh of rupees. The present Chief is H. H. Sardar Bahadur Habibulla Khan, born in 1897. His Highness succeeded his father in 1911. The personal title of Nawab has recently been conferred on the Sardar Bahadur.

The contributions of the State to the various War Funds were as follows:—

|                                       | Rs.   |
|---------------------------------------|-------|
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund ... ..    | 4,487 |
| Queen's Silver Wedding Fund . . . . . | 500   |
| Indian War Loan . . . . .             | 4,000 |
|                                       | <hr/> |
| TOTAL ....                            | 8,987 |

#### LASBELA.

The small State of Lasbela in the river valley of Purali is in the Baluchistan Agency, having an area of 7,132 square miles, a population of 61,205 and an annual revenue of Rs. 3,85,000. The Jam of Lasbela conducts the administration of his State in accordance with the advice of the British Government. The contributions made by the State to the various War Funds are given in the following statement:—

|  | Rs.    |
|--|--------|
| Towards Camel Corps employed for war purposes ... .. | 48,279 |
| "Our-Day" Fund . . . . .                             | 10,000 |

|  |          |
|--|----------|
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund, Baluchistan | Rs.      |
| Branch ... ..                            | 5,500    |
| Imperial Indian Relief Fund, Central     |          |
| Committee ... ..                         | 12,000   |
| Queen's Silver Wedding Fund ...          | 2,000    |
| Lady Ramsay's Troop Fund ...             | 3,605    |
| First Indian War Loan ...                | 1,50,000 |
| Second Indian War Loan ...               | 11,320   |
|  | <hr/>    |
| TOTAL ...                                | 2,42,704 |
|  | <hr/>    |





INDIAN STATES VOLUME.



H. H. THE MAHARAJA OF BHUTAN.  
[p. 251]

## CHAPTER XX.

---

### BHUTAN.

BHUTAN is a State on the Himalayan slopes, with an area of 18,000 square miles and a population of 300,000 souls. The present Ruler of the State is H. H. the Maharaja of Bhutan, Sir Ugyen Wangchuk, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E. On the occasion of the British Mission to Tibet, the State rendered great service, and since that time a British Agent has been entertained at the capital of the State.

The contribution of the State to the War consists of the investment of a lakh of rupees in the Indian War Loan and a supply of 25 recruits to the Indian Army and 9 recruits to the Indian Military Police.

The title of G.C.I.E. was conferred on the Maharaja on 1st January, 1921.

---





## CHAPTER XXI.

### SIKKIM.

THE following statement represents the war services of the State of Sikkim and its subjects:—

|   | Rs.      | A. | P. |
|---|----------|----|----|
| Contribution to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund | 7,125    | 13 | 0  |
| “Our-Day” Fund                                  | 3,345    | 10 | 9  |
| Red Cross Fund                                  | 2,743    | 0  | 0  |
| Investments in the War Loan                     | 1,97,165 | 0  | 0  |
| Indian Fund of St. Dunstan's.                   |          |    |    |
| 4 boxes of curios.                              |          |    |    |

The State helped actively in the work of recruiting and was responsible for the following number of recruits:—

|                  |              |
|------------------|--------------|
| The Indian Army  | .. 792 men.  |
| Military Police  | ... 329 men. |
| Bearer Companies | ... 8 men.   |

On the outbreak of the war, the State offered all its resources to the Government. The State also offered the new Civil Hospital for Military purposes, but, in view of the heavy expenditure which would be involved in the transhipment of invalided men and officers, the Military authorities could not take advantage of the offer.

The present Ruler of the State is His Highness Maharaja Tashi Namgyal, C.I.E., who was born in 1893 and succeeded in 1914. His Highness was invested with full ruling powers in 1918, and the distinction of C.I.E. was conferred in the New Year's list of the same year. The State has an area of 2,818 square miles, a population of 87,920, and an annual revenue of more than Rs. 2,50,000.

The Government officials of Sikkim and Tibet gave a generous subscription of Rs. 34,080 to the Imperial Indian Relief Fund and invested Rs. 32,097 in the Indian War Loan.



H. E, MAHARAJA CHANDRA SHAMSHER JANG, PRIME MINISTER OF NEPAL.  
[p. 255]

## CHAPTER XXII.

### NEPAL.

ALTHOUGH the independent kingdom of Nepal, situated on India's northern frontier, does not fall within the category of Indian Feudatory States, yet the value of her services in the great struggle of 1914-18 can hardly be over-estimated.

On the outbreak of the war, or even before war was actually declared, Nepal's Great Prime Minister, General Sir Chandra Shumshere Jung Bahadur Rana, heard the call of friendship, and realized that the cause of civilization was at stake, and without hesitation he determined to throw the whole of his country's resources in man power into the struggle. The following brief outline of the part taken by Nepal shows that the deed in no way fell short of the will:—

A force of nearly 8,000 Nepalese troops was despatched to India early in 1915. A second contingent of 5,000 men followed in the beginning of 1916. These troops, which comprised some of the most famous regiments of Nepal's standing army, were under the personal command of the Prime Minister's sons and relations, among whom it suffices to mention the names of Generals Baba Shumshere Jung, Padma Shumshere Jung, Kaiser Shumshere Jung, and Shere Shumshere Jung.

Throughout the war, these contingents were kept at full strength by the despatch of drafts from Nepal. The Nepalese troops did valuable work in replacing Indian Expeditionary troops, and they also took part in the Waziristan campaign of 1917.

Of not less value were Nepal's services in the supply of men for the Indian Army. Before the war there were some 20 battalions of Gurkhas in the Indian Army enlisted under special arrangements

made with the Nepal Government. During the war, this force was enormously expanded by the formation of new battalions. It is estimated that the total number of men taken out of the country exceeded 200,000. It need not be pointed out this constitutes a large proportion of the manhood of the country. Recruitment on this scale needed not only driving power from the Central Government of Nepal, but a complete and sufficient organization and the co-operation and goodwill of officials throughout the country. It is not too much to say that Nepal's achievement in the above matters was due to the unique authority and prestige enjoyed by the Prime Minister.

How the Gurkha troops fought on every front, and the casualties they sustained, is a matter of military history. The hardihood and bravery of Gurkhas is too well known to require repetition here.

Although the supply of fighting men was by far the most important of the services rendered by Nepal to the Allies, mention should not be omitted of the generous contributions made in money, war-like stores, and timber, which were offered to the Indian Government by the Prime Minister and gratefully accepted.

The assistance rendered by Nepal did not cease with the termination of the European war, but has since been continued in connection with the campaigns in Mesopotamia and the Indian Frontier.

The present Ruler of the State is His Majesty Maharajadhiraja Tribubhana Bir Bikram Jang Bahadur Sha Bahadur Shumshere Jung, who ascended the throne in 1911. The real powers of administration in the State are, however, vested in the Prime Minister, who is now His Excellency Maharaja Sir Chandra Shumshere Jung Bahadur Rana, G.C.B., G.C.S.I., G.C.V.O., D.C.L., who is also Honorary General in the British Army.

---

# INDIA'S SERVICES IN THE WAR.

## VOLUME II.

### THE INDIAN STATES.

#### INDEX TO NAMES OF STATES.

*Note.*—With the exception of the first 5 States, the names have been arranged in alphabetical order, *irrespective* of the order of precedence.

|                   | PAGE. |
|-------------------|-------|
| Hyderabad         | 79    |
| Mysore            | 82    |
| Baroda            | 87    |
| Kashmir and Jammu | 92    |
| Gwalior           | 95    |

#### MADRAS PRESIDENCY.

|              |     |
|--------------|-----|
| Banganapalle | 98  |
| Cochin       | 100 |
| Pudkuottah   | 100 |
| Travancore   | 104 |

#### BOMBAY PRESIDENCY.

|        |     |
|--------|-----|
| Cambay | 109 |
| Cutch  | 111 |
| Jath   | 112 |

#### THE KATHIAWAR AGENCY.

|             |     |
|-------------|-----|
| Bajana      | 134 |
| Bhavanagar  | 115 |
| Chuda       | 124 |
| Dhrangadhra | 117 |
| Dhról       | 120 |

|               | PAGE. |
|---------------|-------|
| Gondal        | 121   |
| Jasdan        | 133   |
| Junagadh      | 122   |
| Kotda-Sangani | 134   |
| Lakhtar       | 124   |
| Lathi         | 134   |
| Limbdi        | 125   |
| Malia         | 134   |
| Manawadar     | 133   |
| Morvi         | 124   |
| Muli          | 134   |
| Navanagar     | 125   |
| Palitana      | 129   |
| Porbandar     | 129   |
| Rajkot        | 130   |
| Sayla         | 124   |
| Thana-Devli   | 133   |
| Vala          | 124   |
| Virpur        | 134   |
| Wadhwan       | 131   |
| Wankaner      | 132   |

## THE PALANPUR AGENCY.

|                        |     |
|------------------------|-----|
| Palanpur and Radhanpur | 135 |
|------------------------|-----|

## THE MAHIKANTA AGENCY.

|       |     |
|-------|-----|
| Danta | 142 |
| Idar  | 141 |
| Polo  | 142 |

## BENGAL PRESIDENCY.

|             |     |
|-------------|-----|
| Cooch Behar | 143 |
| Tippera     | 145 |

## PROVINCE OF BEHAR AND ORISSA.

PAGE.

|                      |     |     |     |     |
|----------------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| Altanallik           | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Attigarh             | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Bamra                | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Band                 | ..  | ... | ... | 151 |
| Baramba              | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Bonal                | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Daspalla             | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Dhenleanal           | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Gangpur              | ... | ..  | ... | 151 |
| Hindol               | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Kalahandi            | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Keonjhar             | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Khandpara            | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| <del>Rharsawan</del> | ... | ... | ... | 152 |
| Mayurbhanj           | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Narsinghpur          | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Nayagarh             | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Nilgiri              | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Pal-Lahra            | ... | ... | ... | 151 |
| Patna                | ... | ... | ..  | 152 |
| Ranpur               | ... | ... | ... | 152 |
| Rairakhol            | ... | ... | ... | 152 |
| Seraikela            | ... | ... | ... | 152 |
| Sonpur               | ... | ... | ... | 152 |
| Talcher              | ... | ..  | ... | 152 |
| Tigeria              | ... | ... | ... | 152 |

## THE UNITED PROVINCES OF AGRA AND OUDH.

|               |     |     |     |     |
|---------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| Benares       | ... | ... | ... | 155 |
| Rampur        | ... | ..  | ... | 159 |
| Tehri-Garhwal | ... | ... | ... | 162 |

## THE CENTRAL PROVINCES

|            | PAGE. |
|------------|-------|
| Baster     | 165   |
| Changhakar | 168   |
| Chuikhadan | 167   |
| Jashpur    | 166   |
| Kanker     | 166   |
| Kawardha   | 167   |
| Khairagarh | 167   |
| Korea      | 167   |
| Makrai     | 166   |
| Nandgaon   | 167   |
| Raigarh    | 166   |
| Sakti      | 167   |
| Sarangarh  | 166   |
| Surguja    | 165   |
| Udaipur    | 166   |

## CENTRAL INDIA.

|            |     |
|------------|-----|
| Bhopal     | 169 |
| Chattarpur | 177 |
| Jaora      | 178 |
| Kilchipur  | 179 |
| Orcha      | 180 |
| Piploda    | 182 |
| Rewah      | 183 |
| Rutlam     | 185 |
| Sitamau    | 184 |

## RAJPUTANA.

|           |     |
|-----------|-----|
| Alwar     | 193 |
| Bikaner   | 195 |
| Dholpur   | 198 |
| Dungarpur | 200 |



# INDEX.

v

|            | PAGE. |
|------------|-------|
| Jaipur     | 201   |
| Jhalawar   | 206   |
| Jodhpur    | 207   |
| Karauli    | 209   |
| Kishangarh | 213   |
| Kotah      | 215   |
| Shapura    | 217   |

## THE PUNJAB.

|                |     |
|----------------|-----|
| Bhawalpur      | 219 |
| Chamba         | 220 |
| Dajana         | 221 |
| Faridkot       | 221 |
| Jind           | 222 |
| Kalsia         | 224 |
| Kapurthala     | 225 |
| Laharu         | 227 |
| Maler Kōtla    | 229 |
| Mandi          | 234 |
| Nabha          | 235 |
| Patiala        | 236 |
| Patoudi        | 238 |
| Sirmur (Nahan) | 239 |
| Suket          | 241 |

## ASSAM.

|              |     |
|--------------|-----|
| Manipur      | 243 |
| Khasi States | 243 |

## NORTH WEST FRONTIER PROVINCE.

|         |     |
|---------|-----|
| Chitral | 245 |
| Dir     | 245 |
| Swat    | 245 |

## THE BALUCHISTAN AGENCY.

|         |     |     |     |     |
|---------|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| Kalat   | ... | ... | ... | 247 |
| Kharan  | ... | ... | ... | 248 |
| Lasbela | ... | ... | ... | 248 |

## NORTHERN FRONTIER STATES.

|        |     |     |     |     |
|--------|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| Bhutan | ... | ... | ... | 251 |
| Sikkim | ... | ... | ... | 253 |
| Nepal  | ... | ... | ... | 255 |

---





**PRESIDENT'S  
SECRETARIAT  
LIBRARY**